

3 1761 07491074 6









John Breuer

Samie

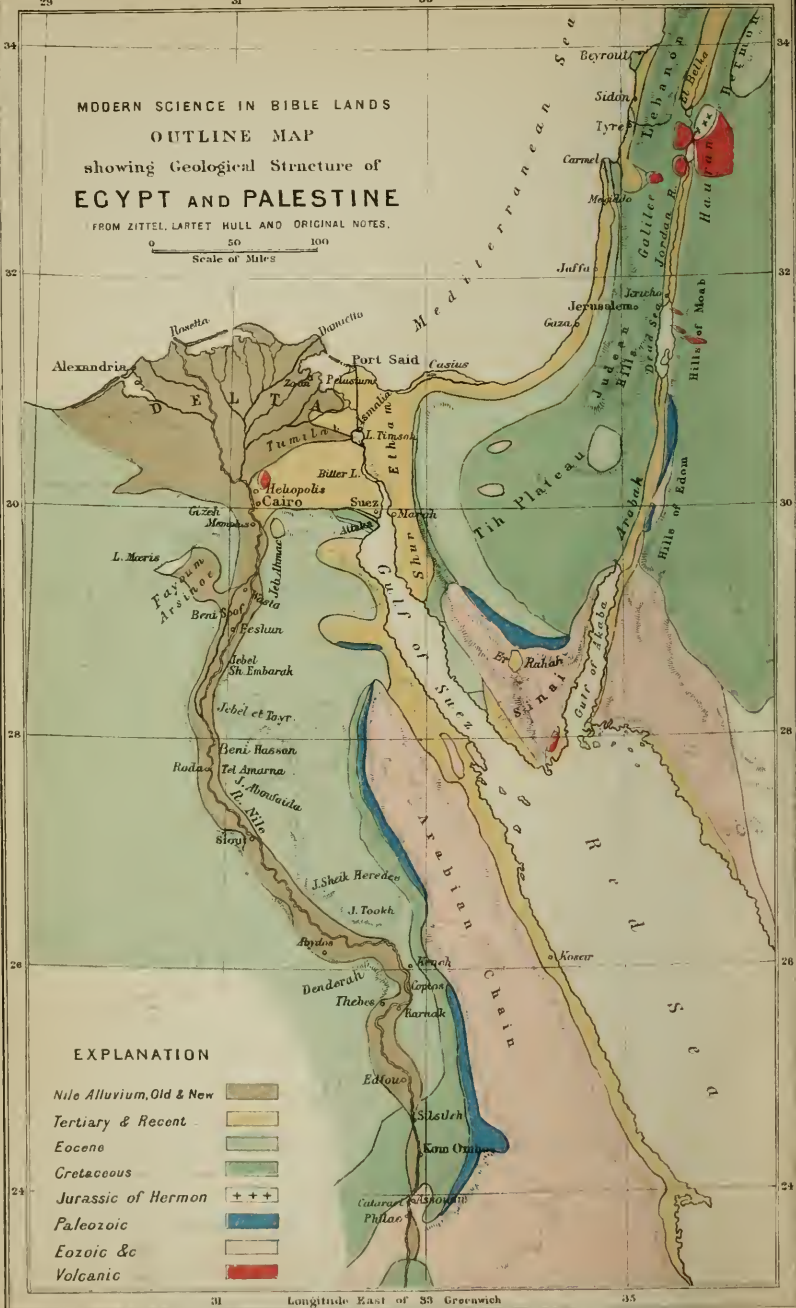
July 1898.

3

MODERN SCIENCE IN BIBLE LANDS  
 OUTLINE MAP  
 showing Geological Structure of  
**EGYPT AND PALESTINE**

FROM ZITTEL, LARTET HULL AND ORIGINAL NOTES.

0 50 100  
 Scale of Miles



**EXPLANATION**

- Nile Alluvium, Old & New
- Tertiary & Recent
- Eocene
- Cretaceous
- Jurassic of Hermon
- Paleozoic
- Eozoic & Volcanic

Bib. Lit  
D

# MODERN SCIENCE IN BIBLE LANDS.

[Faint stamp]

BY  
SIR J.<sup>John</sup> WILLIAM DAWSON,

C.M.G., LL.D., F.R.S., F.G.S., ETC.,

*Author of "The Story of the Earth and Man," "The Origin of the World," etc.*

With Maps and Illustrations.

POPULAR EDITION REVISED.

331843  
10.  
5. 36.

Montreal:

W. DRYSDALE & CO, 232, ST. JAMES STREET.





To  
MY DEAR WIFE,  
THE COMPANION OF MY JOURNEYING,  
AND MY WISE ADVISER AND FAITHFUL HELPER IN EVERY  
GOOD WORK, THIS VOLUME IS  
AFFECTIONATELY  
Dedicated.



## PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

THE motive of this work is the desire of the author to share with others the pleasure and profit of a tour in Italy, Egypt, and Syria, in which it was his special aim to study such points in the geology and physical features of those countries as might throw light on their ancient history, and especially on the history of the sacred Scriptures.

As a geological observer of somewhat wide and varied experience, he hopes that it may be possible for him to elucidate some difficult geological and historical questions, and to present to the reader, whether scientific or not, some intelligible and it may be novel ideas as to the structure and history of the countries referred to.

It was originally intended that the materials collected should assume the form of notes of travel; but unforeseen delays have made this less desirable, and the several subjects discussed have therefore been arranged under the districts examined, beginning with Italy and ending with Palestine, while under each head matters relating to geology and to prehistoric and historic human periods have been grouped together as

---

seemed most likely to render them interesting and intelligible, without any personal narrative, except where notes of this kind appeared to be incidentally valuable. It may however be proper to add, that the collections and observations referred to in Egypt and Palestine were made in the winter of 1883-84. The substance of those on Egypt was first published, in 1884, in the *Leisure Hour* and in the *London Geological Magazine*, and more fully in the first edition of this work in 1888.

The point of view of the author is that of a geological observer, and his conclusions on matters of that kind may be received as those of an expert. Other departments, whether of science, history, or biblical interpretation and criticism, must occupy a subordinate position, as not being specialities of the writer, and as consequently demanding in many cases dependence on the labours of others, verified however by his own reading and study of monuments and objects of art.

It has been a source of much gratification to the author that, in the interval between 1888 and 1892, some of his anticipations have been fulfilled, and many new evidences of his conclusions have been unearthed by explorers. These new facts are introduced in their proper places in the present edition.

The geological appendix to the first edition has been omitted in the present, to make room for other matter, but may be issued in a separate form. I have also omitted, in order to make space for new facts, some of the more general discussions in the introductory chapter; but the substance of these

will be found in my work the "Origin of the World," and in an article in the *Contemporary Review* for June, 1889, while additional information on primitive man, from an American point of view, will be found in another work—"Fossil Men."

The author has to acknowledge much kindness and valuable information received from many friends. He would especially mention with gratitude in this connection, Sir Evelyn Baring, Col. Ardagh, Sir Colin Scott Moncreiff, Dr. Schweinfurth Emil Brugsch Bey, Mr. A. H. Hooker, of Cairo, Rev. Dr. Merrill, of Jerusalem, Rev. Dr. Bliss, Dr. Post and other Professors of the American College, Beyrout.

The Geological Map is to be understood as giving the broadest possible outline of the structure of the regions to which it relates. It has been kept free from unnecessary detail in order to make the general arrangement of the formations as clear as possible, and to show the geological relations of Palestine and Egypt to each other. It will be found especially useful in illustration of Chapters V. to VIII. inclusive.

J. W. D.

MCGILL UNIVERSITY,  
1892.



# CONTENTS

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| CHAPTER I.   |      |
| INTRODUCTORY . . . . .   | I    |
| CHAPTER II.  |      |
| THE FIRE-BELT OF SOUTHERN EUROPE,  |      |
| In connection with Primitive Religion and Bible History and<br>Literature . . . . .                            | 13   |
| CHAPTER III.   |      |
| THE HAUNTS AND HABITS OF PRIMITIVE MAN,  |      |
| In Bible and other Lands . . . . .   | 47   |
| CHAPTER IV.  |      |
| EARLY MAN IN GENESIS,  |      |
| Including Questions as to his Origin and Date, the Site of Eden,<br>Antediluvian Man, and the Deluge . . . . . | 107  |
| CHAPTER V.   |      |
| EGYPTIAN STONES AND THEIR TEACHING,  |      |
| With reference to the Relations of Egyptian Art to Antediluvian<br>Times and to Hebrew History . . . . .       | 171  |

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| CHAPTER VI.  |      |
| EGYPT AND ISRAEL   |      |
| The Physical Structure of Egypt in connection with Bible History<br>and the Residence of Israel in Egypt . . . . . | 209  |
| CHAPTER VII.   |      |
| THE TOPOGRAPHY OF THE EXODUS,  |      |
| As Illustrated by Recent Scientific Work . . . . .   | 257  |
| CHAPTER VIII.  |      |
| PALESTINE, ITS STRUCTURE AND HISTORY,  |      |
| With Reference to Bible Places and Events . . . . .  | 313  |
| CHAPTER IX.  |      |
| RESOURCES AND PROSPECTS OF BIBLE LANDS . . . . .   | 379  |
| APPENDIX   |      |
| 1. Prehistoric Greeks in Egypt . . . . .   | 392  |
| 2. Jerusalem in the Tel-el-Amarna Tablets . . . . .  | 392  |
| 3. Note on Geological Appendix . . . . .   | 394  |
| 4. Miscellaneous New Facts . . . . .   | 394  |



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

GEOLOGICAL MAP (*to face title*).

## CHAPTER I.

## TABLE OF GEOLOGICAL HISTORY.

## CHAPTER II.

ERUPTION OF VESUVIUS IN 1872 (*facing chapter*).

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| 1. Sketch Map of Mediterranean in the Post Glacial Age . . . . . | 15   |
| 2. Volcanoes near Rome . . . . .                                 | 19   |
| 3. Geological Sketch of Site of Rome . . . . .                   | 20   |
| 4. Outline of Vesuvius and Somma from Bay of Naples . . . . .    | 27   |
| 5. Crater of Vesuvius, as seen in December, 1883. . . . .        | 28   |
| 6. Map of Eruption of 1872. . . . .                              | 29   |
| 7. Cast of the Body of a Roman Gentleman, Pompeii . . . . .      | 41   |

## CHAPTER III.

SKULLS OF PRIMITIVE MEN (*facing chapter*).

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| 8. Flint Knife and Saw from Sidon . . . . .                           | 49  |
| 9. Cavern at Nahr-el-Kelb . . . . .                                   | 53  |
| 10 and 11. Flint Implements, Nahr-el-Kelb . . . . .                   | 57  |
| 12. Stone Knife, California; Flint Chips, handled, Tasmania . . . . . | 60  |
| 13. Recession of Niagara Falls . . . . .                              | 99  |
| 14. Map of Niagara . . . . .  | 100 |

## CHAPTER IV.

MAP OF SITE OF EDEN (*facing chapter*).

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 15. Guancho Skulls and Wampum . . . . .            | 145 |
| 16. Pictograph on Piece of Reindeer Horn . . . . . | 153 |

## CHAPTER V.

IHATASU'S OBELISK AT KARNAK (*facing chapter*).

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 17. Statue of Kephren in Boulak Museum . . . . .                   | 180 |
| 18. Drill Core . . . . .   | 184 |
| 19. Alabaster Sarcophagus of Seti I. in the Soane Museum . . . . . | 191 |
| 19A. Sickle, with flint edge . . . . .                             | 198 |

## CHAPTER VI.

VIEW OF KOM OMBOS (*facing chapter*).

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| 20. Section at Jebel Ahmar . . . . .              | 213  |
| 21. Plan of Pleistocene Egypt and Syria . . . . . | 217  |
| 22. Head of Iyxsos . . . . .                      | 243  |
| 23. Red Pheasant (Indian chief) . . . . .         | 244  |
| 24. Head of Mummy of Rameses II. . . . .          | 246  |
| 25. Head of modern Coptic scribe . . . . .        | 247  |
| 26. Mummy, with floral decorations . . . . .      | 249  |

## CHAPTER VII.

VIEW OF JEBEL SUFSAFEH (*facing chapter*).

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 27. Map of Exodus . . . . .                              | 263 |
| 28. Sketch Map of Crossing-place of Israelites . . . . . | 276 |
| 29. Section of Isthmus of Suez . . . . .                 | 280 |

## CHAPTER VIII.

SECTION OF JUDEA AND SECTION OF LEBANON (*facing chapter*).

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 30. Fossils, from Judea . . . . .                            | 323 |
| 31. Map of Northern Syria . . . . .                          | 325 |
| 32. Ancient Dead Sea Deposits . . . . .                      | 339 |
| 33. Section from Jerusalem to Moab across Dead Sea . . . . . | 340 |
| 34. Bituminous Limestone of Neby Musa . . . . .              | 345 |
| 35. Section of Site of Jerusalem . . . . .                   | 354 |
| 36. Plan of Jerusalem . . . . .                              | 358 |
| 37. Sacred Rock of Moriah . . . . .                          | 361 |
| 38. The Skull Hill, from General Gordon's Model . . . . .    | 373 |

## CHAPTER IX.

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| WATER GIRLS, FROM PHOTOGRAPH BY COUNT LYNAR ( <i>facing chapter</i> ) . . . . . | 378 |
|---|-----|



PHYSICAL AND BIBLICAL HISTORY OF THE EARTH.

| <i>Physical and Geological Periods.</i>                                     | <i>Animal Life.</i>   | <i>Vegetable Life.</i>                                    | <i>Biblical History.</i>   |
|---|---|---|--|
| Nebulous State<br>Incandescent State<br>Primitive Crust<br>Universal Ocean  |   |   | FIRST CREATIVE DAY.<br>Formless and Void.<br>SECOND CREATIVE DAY.<br>Division of the Waters. |
|   | Earliest Land<br>(Lower Laurentian)<br>Laurentian<br>Huronian | Protozoa  | Protogens<br>(in Graphite beds)  |
| Cambrian<br>Ordovician<br>Silurian<br>Erian<br>Carboniferous<br>Permian     | Invertebrates<br>Fishes<br>Amphibians                         | Alge and Protogens<br>Acrogens<br>and<br>Gymnosperms      | FIFTH CREATIVE DAY.<br>Invertebrates and Fishes.   |
| Triassic<br>Jurassic<br>Cretaceous  | Reptiles<br>and<br>Birds                                      | Cycads and Pines<br>Palms and<br>Angiosperms <sup>1</sup> | Reptiles and Birds.  |
| Eocene<br>Miocene<br>Pliocene<br>Pleistocene<br>Palanthropic<br>Neanthropic | Mammals<br>Man and Recent<br>Animals                          | Angiosperms<br>Existing<br>Vegetation                     | SIXTH CREATIVE DAY.<br>Mammals.<br>Antediluvian Man,—SEVENTH DAY<br>Post-diluvian Man.       |

## CHAPTER I.

### *INTRODUCTORY.*

TO a student of nature who is also a student of the Bible, many questions arise which can only have their full solution from a consideration of the structure and features of the land of the Hebrew writers. To some of these questions it is impossible to find adequate answers in the current literature on the subject, ample and varied though this is. Conjectural explanations, citations of authorities more or less conflicting, and references to old myths and fanciful stories, are too often made to do duty for more certain data, while actual facts determining the references to nature in the old book are comparatively rare and hard to find. Nor do the greater part of writers on such subjects seem to have availed themselves of the information which is scattered through the memoirs and papers of geologists and naturalists who have visited the Bible lands.

When, therefore, in 1883, the long-desired opportunity presented itself to extend my geological observations into parts of Egypt and Palestine, I found myself in possession of a large mass of notes and queries relating to these countries, and determined to devote my attention to critical questions bearing on Bible history. Being fortunately free from any official engagements or control, I was at liberty to do this as far as time and means might permit.

The plan of my Eastern campaign included first a careful study of the remarkable collections illustrative of prehistoric man in Western Europe ; and to familiarize myself with these, I visited the museums in Paris, St. Germain, Brussels, Lyons, Turin, Florence, Rome, and Naples, and embraced any opportunities to acquaint myself with the sites of such remains, and with geological phenomena connected with them. Thus prepared, I crossed over from Naples to Alexandria, and studied the Nile valley as far as the first cataract, making an excursion to Suez and Jebel Attaka. Passing on to Palestine, I examined two cross sections of that country, one from Jaffa to the Jordan valley and Dead Sea ; the other from Beyrout across Lebanon, with side excursions to important points ; and on my return I visited Smyrna, portions of the Greek Islands, and Athens.

Of course such a tour covered only a few important lines of travel in a great region, but it was sufficient, with the aid of what had been previously done by others, to furnish a large number of essential geological and topographical facts ; and by avoiding waste of time on mere sights of no significance, and on points sufficiently studied, and by availing myself of the aid of many kind friends, who will be found referred to in the work, it was possible to effect a great deal in a limited time.

In presenting the results in this volume, it is my desire to lay before the reader a clear statement of the local facts which have furnished to me the solution of doubtful and disputed questions, and to throw on the Hebrew and apostolic literature such light as may be afforded by the structural features and geological history of the countries of the Bible. Other matters of interest may be referred to, but this is the main object of the book.

It will fortunately not be necessary for us to devote much time to disputed questions of Biblical literature or criticism,

however important in some respects these may be. It need not concern us very much when or by whom the Biblical books were written, or what may be the precise character of their claims to inspiration, or the nature of their spiritual teaching. We shall merely take them as we find them, and ask to what extent their statements, as to matters of natural fact, correspond with what the prying eyes of scientific travellers discover in our time. We cannot, however, altogether escape from the consideration that the antiquity and genuineness of these books, if established, add to their interest, and give importance to their study, and shall find much evidence on these points meeting us as we proceed. We shall also find many incidental corroborations of Biblical statements, many explanations of difficulties, many reasons to respect not merely the integrity but also the accuracy, intelligence, and culture of the writers of the books of the Old and New Testament. These will, however, be incidental to our work, and will afford such corroborations as may proceed from undesigned coincidences, rather than from attempts at reconciliation.

In connection with this, we may note that one of the characteristic excellences of the books of the Bible, which renders their treatment in the manner proposed here very agreeable and interesting, is the eminent truthfulness of the writers in their references to nature, as it existed around them. That this is the case is, I think, the conclusion of all competent students. In this point of view, indeed, the Bible unquestionably stands pre-eminent, even in its poetical portions, over all other literature, ancient and modern. It has no theories to support, except the general doctrine of an almighty Creator. Its notions are not warped by any superstitions born of myth or idolatry. Nature is to it neither a goddess nor a sport of chance, nor a mere field for the excursions of unbridled fancy, but an ordered cosmos working out the designs of its Maker. Hence a reverence for natural truth, a love of nature, a trust

in it and its laws, which one fails to find in other literatures. One can scarcely read a page of any ordinary poem or literary work, ancient or modern, without finding incorrect statements as to natural facts or false hypothetical views, or quaint, imaginative superstitions. The Bible is notably free from such peculiarities; and independently of its claims to inspiration, this property should give to it a high degree of estimation in the eyes of a naturalist who is able to follow accurately its statements as to the world in which its writers moved.

This environment of the writers presents local differences in particular books of the Bible. The book of Genesis, up to the migration of Abraham into Canaan, is cosmopolitan rather than Palestinian. So far as it has local colouring, this belongs to the Euphratean valley and its surroundings, rather than to any other country; and the Chaldean literature which has survived furnishes the best terms of comparison with it. In the time of Abraham and the early patriarchs it becomes primitive Palestinian, referring to Canaan and its people at a time regarding which we have little other information, except that furnished by the remarkable documents preserved in the palaces and temples of Egypt,<sup>1</sup> and by incidental notices in Assyrian and Chaldean Annals.<sup>2</sup> With Jacob and Joseph it goes down into Egypt, and the later books of the Pentateuch have a decided flavour of that wonderful country. Exodus is, in its opening, especially an Egyptian book, but it soon takes us out into the Arabian desert and becomes a journal of wilderness wanderings in which the aspects of desert life prevail, mixed with Egyptian ideas, till the settlement in Canaan. Henceforth the Old Testament is conversant with the geological

<sup>1</sup> Notably the clay tablets of Tel-Amarna, containing despatches from Palestine before the Exodus, and which were discovered after the first edition of this work was published.

<sup>2</sup> For example, the remarkable confirmations and illustrations of the roads of Elamites and others in the time of Abraham.



structure, the climate, the animals and plants of Palestine. The New Testament opens with a later phase of Palestinian life, and then launches forth into the wider area of the eastern Mediterranean, from which much of its local colouring is taken.

In treating, then, of the Bible lands, we have to attend to these special characteristics of different books, belonging to different times and places ; and we shall find a great variety of questions arising from these, which relate to various regions, from the original home of man and the conditions of antediluvian times and of the deluge, down to the local relations of the early Christians, and the symbols derived from natural facts by means of which the apocalyptic seer of the first Christian century pictures the final destinies of the world. It will not be possible, however, for us to consider these in any very definite chronological or topographical order ; but rather in the arrangement deduced from their general natural connection with one another, adhering, however, as closely as possible to a geographical sequence.

The necessity throughout all this of careful attention to facts, sometimes apparently unimportant, will strike us everywhere, and we shall find the observation of every relevant local circumstance of the utmost value. Examples of the necessity of this from modern literature might be given in profusion, and will occur to us as we proceed.

The earlier parts of Genesis are undoubtedly intensely archaic in their style and manner, even in comparison with most of the other Hebrew books. They have no references to subsequent facts or events, except a few notes probably added at later dates, to render intelligible records which were ancient even in early Hebrew times. They are not especially Palestinian and local, but have features in common with the earliest fragments of Chaldean and Egyptian literature. They have no special reference to the institutions of the Hebrew commonwealth, and have a simplicity in their subjects, and the

mode of treating them, which speaks of the dawn of civilization. There is nothing in their texture to prevent them from being portions of documents even more ancient than the time of Moses, and belonging to a period before the Hebrew race had separated from the main Turanian and Semitic stocks. The probability of this is strengthened by their connection as to the matter of their statements, with the primitive Chaldean documents recently discovered, and even with the remnants of the creation myths of American races. To a scientific mind these are *primâ facie* evidences of their antiquity and genuineness, and of themselves more than sufficient to counterbalance the critical objections of modern German scholars.

At one time it was objected to the antiquity of the Mosaic books, that they could not have been committed to writing at so early a date. Now this difficulty can no longer be urged. Egyptian papyri of much greater age than the time of Moses are abundant. Petrie infers from the marks on pottery found at Gurob, in Lower Egypt, that the Phœnician letters were used as early as the age of the Exodus. The tablets of Tel Amarna inform us that before the Exodus there were scribes in all the Canaanite towns who could write in the Babylonian characters; and if the recently found inscriptions of South Arabia are as old as supposed, the Midianites, among whom Moses dwelt in his exile, must have been acquainted with the Phœnician alphabet.

The following judicious remarks of Professor Sayce, *apropos* of the Tel-el-Amarna tablets, deserve quotation here :—<sup>1</sup>

“How highly educated this old world was we are but just beginning to learn. But we have already learnt enough to discover how important a bearing it has on the criticism of the Old Testament. It has long been tacitly assumed by the critical school that writing was not only a rare art in Palestine before the age of David, but was practically unknown. Little

<sup>1</sup> *Trans. Vict. Institute*, 1889.

historical credence can be placed, it has been urged, on the earlier records of the Hebrew people, because they could not have been committed to writing until a period when the history of the past had become traditional and mythical. But this assumption can no longer be maintained. Long before the Exodus, Canaan had its libraries and its scribes, its schools and literary men.<sup>1</sup> The annals of the country, it is true, were not inscribed in the letters of the Phœnician alphabet on perishable papyrus; the writing material was the imperishable clays, the characters those of the cuneiform syllabary."

We have also good reason to believe that the form of the four last books of the Pentateuch is that of a contemporary journal, or record kept by scribes in the camp of Israel, a theory which will best account for their peculiarities of style and arrangement, and which accords with that remarkable topographical accuracy in their details which has been so clearly established by the labours of the Ordnance Survey of Sinai.<sup>2</sup>

The above remarks would not have been necessary but for the fact that much of the matter of the following pages relates to those earlier parts of human history which form the subject of the Pentateuch, and that so much has recently been written to discredit these books as genuine and true historical documents, and this by a treatment of them which I cannot but regard as most unfair and unscientific.

The remarkable discoveries in Southern Arabia recently announced by Dr. Glaser, and referred to above, are among the latest developments in this direction, and are known to me as yet only through a summary by Professor Sayce.<sup>3</sup> They

<sup>1</sup> The Hebrews were not behind in this, since Deborah could refer to scribes of Zebulon who could "handle the pen of the writer," and thus enrol the army, or record its achievements. (Judges v. 14.)

<sup>2</sup> Cave, *Contemporary Review*, 1890. Also first edition of this work.

<sup>3</sup> *Contemporary Review*, December, 1890.

indicate the existence of a civilized and powerful Semitic kingdom in that region long before the time of Moses, and we may well suppose that its culture had extended itself to the Midianite peoples of the Gulf of Akaba, with whom the Hebrew lawgiver sojourned so long. The inscriptions of these Minæan people, as they are called, are in an alphabetical character, which seems to be the prototype of that of Phœnicia. Moses must have been acquainted with this literature, and there may have been scribes in his camp able to write in Minæan characters, not essentially distinct from those which the Hebrews and Phœnicians afterwards used in Palestine. We knew before from the Tel-Amarna tablets that the Chaldean script was used throughout Canaan before the time of Moses, and also that Egyptian writings on papyrus were produced ages before his time ; but it is something more to be now informed that he may have written with the aid of an alphabet not essentially different from that of the Hebrew. These new facts illustrate the alliance of the Israelites with Jethro and his people, and the important part which this priest of Midian seems to have taken in organizing the Hebrew institutions, as stated in the book of Exodus. They also throw a side-light on the mystery which has enshrouded the origin of the book of Job. This book, essentially patriarchal, archaic, and pre-Mosaic in its matter and references, and exhibiting at the same time a marvellous comprehension of nature and wide range of geographical knowledge, has been attributed to various dates and authors, on account not merely of its contents, but its language.<sup>1</sup> May it not have been a portion of the Minæan literature adopted by the Hebrew lawgiver, and may not the affinity of religion shown by the alliance with Jethro and the long subsequent visit of the Queen of Sheba to Solomon have had some connection with this ancient book ?

<sup>1</sup> Similar peculiarities of language are, however, now found in some of the Tel-el-Amarna tablets.

On these discoveries in Southern Arabia Sayce well remarks that "they cannot fail to influence the views that have been current in regard to the earlier history of the Old Testament," more especially in regard to the antiquity of writing and literature among the Hebrews. Abraham migrated from Chaldea, the birthplace of letters. In Canaan he consorted with people who were carrying on correspondence in the Chaldean script. His descendants were educated in the learning of Egypt, and in Arabia were brought into contact with the Semitic literature of the Minæans. If, after passing through these different schools, they were still illiterate at the date of the Exodus they must have been vastly less capable than the modern Jews, who so easily assimilate the languages and literature of the peoples with whom they are brought into contact, while retaining their own.

Mr. Petrie's excavations on the site of ancient Lachish<sup>1</sup> have awakened great hopes of important discoveries awaiting exploration of the mounds of Southern Judea. His conclusion that the strong Canaanite city overthrown in the time of Joshua was succeeded by a village of mean huts does not, however, militate against the civilization of the Hebrews at the time of the conquest. In their early settlement in Canaan they do not at first seem to have adopted a city life, but to have remained in their tribal encampments, or to have settled as landed proprietors in groups over the country. In these circumstances the ruins of Lachish may have been occupied by a remnant of the Canaanites, or by camp followers or shepherds, the city being walled again, and rebuilt at a later date, when the inroads of the Philistines and other enemies rendered this necessary. We may hope, however, to know much more on this and allied subjects from the results of future excavations.

The writers of the Bible lived in a limited district of Wes

<sup>1</sup> Petrie's "Lachish," Pal. Exploration Fund.

tern Asia, and in an ancient and primitive period. But they were destined, perhaps without knowing or intending this, to write for all time, and for all the world; and the miraculous manner in which they have succeeded in this great cosmopolitan mission is at once the evidence of their prophetic gifts, and the reason why the incredulous world distrusts and disbelieves them. There is no book which so much at this day influences the minds of men, none around which centre so many vital and controverted questions, none which has been translated into so many languages, or has constituted the beginning of learning to so many peoples. Its influence, direct and indirect, is daily widening, and it is fast becoming the book of the whole world. These great facts throw entirely into the shade the efforts of certain coteries, critical and philosophical, to undermine its influence, and they give special importance to such investigations as those recorded in the following pages, which, however imperfect, I hope will be regarded as a well-intentioned contribution of scientific inquiry toward the comprehension of the greatest of books, that which is accepted so generally as the revelation to man of the highest good offered to him by his heavenly Father, the Creator of the heavens and the earth.





Eruption of Mount Vesuvius, April, 1872.  
(From a photograph.)



## CHAPTER II.

### *THE FIRE-BELT OF SOUTHERN EUROPE, AND ITS RELATION TO THE BIBLE.*

THE basin of the Mediterranean, though so familiar historically, and the cradle of the oldest European nations, is in a physical point of view one of the most singular and exceptional features of the surface of the earth. Running nearly east and west, it constitutes a depression with corresponding elevations transverse to the dominant structures of our continents. To the north it is bounded by the intensely crumpled and folded tracts of hard crystalline rocks constituting the Alps and other mountain ranges of Southern Europe. In connection with these there are transverse folds, but really in the normal lines of the continents, forming the nuclei of Greece, Italy, Sardinia, Corsica, and Spain, while the great transverse ridge of Syria, reaching from north to south, closes the end of the basin on the east. Along the southern frontage of the whole runs one of those fractures of the earth's crust which give vent to its hidden fires ; and while the mountains on the north descend abruptly into this great fracture, the southern side of the sea slopes gently downward from the flat plains and table-lands of Northern Africa. These arrangements are geologically of recent date, at least in their final completion. While the central Alpine ridges consist of very old rocks, that must have been folded and upheaved at an early period ; and while there is evidence of a Mediterranean of different form from the present, far back in geological time,

beds which must in Eocene and Miocene times have been in the bottom of the sea, now rise to great heights in the mountains. On the other hand, there is evidence that even so late as the appearance of man in these regions, the Mediterranean was smaller than at present, and divided into two seas, and that it has since undergone important movements of submergence ; while all through the later geological ages eruptions of molten matter and seismic disturbance have been going on everywhere along the great line of Mediterranean uplift and depression, and have extended themselves as far as the Himalayas on the one side and across the Atlantic to the Gulf of Mexico on the other.

The volcanic and seismic belt of Southern Europe can thus be traced into connection, on the one hand, with the similar region of earthquake and igneous action extending eastward to the Bay of Bengal, and thence till it crosses in Java the great north and south volcanic belt of Eastern Asia, and running through the Pacific Archipelago, perhaps unites itself with the long Cordilleran belt of Western America. Traced westward by the Azores, it may join the volcanic region of the West Indies, and thus become confluent on the other side with the American volcanoes. The volcanic belt of Southern Europe is thus part of a great band which seems to girdle the earth ; but in no part of its extent has it shown greater earth movements and ejections, or so closely connected itself with man and his interests, as in the Mediterranean region.

It is a remarkable fact, and not without historical significance, that the earlier migrations of primitive man must have been along this belt of disturbance, and that his westward march along the Mediterranean was lighted by the beacons of volcanic fire, and disturbed by the throes of the unquiet earth.

When palæocosmic or antediluvian man first looked on the Mediterranean, its boundaries were very different from those at present. We are indebted to Professor Boyd Dawkins for

a conjectural restoration of the Mediterranean of that time. It was divided into two basins by an isthmus connecting Southern Italy with Africa, or, if not altogether divided, there was only a very narrow connecting strait, allowing primitive man to pass by this route to Africa<sup>1</sup> (Fig. 1). The Adriatic and the Ægean were dry land, Crete and Cyprus were connected by broad plains with the continent. At the same time the upper parts of the Persian Gulf<sup>2</sup> and the Red Sea were dry land, and there was a broad connection between Asia and Africa, including a great lake or inland basin, into which the waters of the Nile were poured, so that the outlet of the Nile approached to that of the Jordan. The volcanoes of the Greek Islands were then probably active. So was Ætna; and though Vesuvius was not, early volcanoes of South Italy, and those of Central Italy now extinct, were probably in action. The plains along the northern and eastern sides of the Mediter-



FIG. 1.—The Mediterranean in the second continental or Palanthropic Period, when it constituted two detached basins with wide margins of low land.

<sup>1</sup> Collequon, "Matériaux pour l'histoire."

<sup>2</sup> The significance of this in relation to recent discussions as to the site of Eden we shall see in the sequel.

ranean, wide and sparsely wooded, were tenanted by herds of the mammoth and of the tichorhine rhinoceros. Along these plains, now submerged, early man may have made his way from the East ; and while his more civilized communities may have settled in the plains permanently, more active and rude tribes penetrated inland till he occupied the western plains, and inhabited the limestone caves of France and Belgium. We shall have to discuss these primitive men more fully in the sequel. In the meantime we notice them merely in preparation for what is to follow.

When, after that great physical catastrophe which we know as the deluge, or the post-glacial flood, men returned to the Mediterranean basin, it must have presented much the same appearance as at present. If at that time the tradition of the antediluvian world survived among the new colonists, they must have mourned the loss of the great alluvial plains that still remained under the waters, and must have thought with awe of the teeming multitudes of the antediluvian nations whom those waters had overwhelmed, while, unless they carried with them the Divine promise made to Noah,<sup>1</sup> they may have advanced in fear lest a new deluge should overwhelm them.

It is also far from unlikely that movements of depression and elevation, connected with this catastrophe, had intensified for the time the volcanic phenomena of the region. We can well understand the impression produced by these facts on the first tribes that pushed their way into this region, perhaps Turanian or Accadian peoples, far in advance of the later Phœnician and Hellenic communities,—ancestors probably of the Pelasgian, Etruscan, and Iberian nations, which seem to have preceded the Aryan races in the occupation of the Isles of the Gentiles. We can well understand how different would

<sup>1</sup> Gen. ix. 11. A very important assurance, to give confidence to the early movements of man.

be the position of the neocosmic men from that of their antediluvian ancestors with reference to the diminished extent of the land, the want of its great fringing plains, the disappearance of its gigantic fauna. We can also appreciate the new stimulus to maritime enterprise given by the now broken and rugged character of the coast and its multitude of islands.

We can further understand, that if these early colonists brought with them that animistic religion which we find evidence of in the early Accadian records of Chaldea, while they would recognise in the physical changes which had occurred the vengeance of the great spirit Hea, or rather of the trinity Anu, Hea, and Bel, which together constituted their Elohim, they would also see in the volcanic fires and shaking earth the visible evidence of those powers of the abyss, the *Gi*, or underworld, who were believed to be in antagonism to God, and groaning and trembling in their agony below the inhabited earth. It would be unprofitable to enter into details as to these obscure and disputed theologies of the old world; but the relation above sketched between them and the Mediterranean fire-belt, under its new post-diluvian aspect, is, I think, unquestionable.

While such influences may be traced everywhere in the Northern Mediterranean from Asia Minor to Iberia, the most obvious illustrations may be found in Italy, a country so well known historically and geologically. Italy was indeed the pioneer in modern geology; and the study of its formations, by early native inquirers, and afterwards by Lyell and others, first threw light on the succession of the more modern formations of Europe, and on the physical changes to which the Mediterranean area had been subjected.

Italy has a nucleus of old rocks, perhaps as old as the Eozoic age; and against these mantles a series of deposits reaching upward on the flanks of the Apennines to various heights, and certifying to the successive depressions and eleva-

tions of the peninsula throughout the Tertiary period and up to historic times. The aqueous deposits and movements, as well as the volcanic phenomena, seem to be oldest in the north and newest in the south. The volcanoes of Northern Italy, as well as those of Germany and France, are probably long since extinct, some of them perhaps even before the beginning of the human period.<sup>1</sup> Those of Central Italy are now extinct, though some of them must have been active within the time of human history. Those of Southern Italy and Sicily still maintain their vitality, and are and have been important factors in the daily life of the people.

The old Etruscans, the fathers and founders of Italian and European civilization, and the disseminators throughout Europe of the bronze which replaced the stone of the Neolithic age, and whose short, broad heads are those of the noblest and most influential families of ancient Rome, apparently avoided the seats of modern igneous action, and built their towns on the solid crags of the older aqueous rocks, as at Fiesoli and elsewhere in Tuscany, or on volcanoes extinct long before the dawn of history. Still, they were in time to witness some of the volcanic outbursts of Central Italy, for I saw in the Lateran Museum at Rome, pottery and sculptured stones, one of the latter bearing that antique symbol, the cross with bent arms, which had been taken from beds probably of early Etruscan age<sup>2</sup> under lava streams at Albano and Marino.

The Etruscans are now justly regarded as the southern and more civilized branch of the Turanian population which, before the Greek and Celtic and Germanic races had invaded Europe, occupied its whole area between the Mediterranean and the Baltic, and westward to the Atlantic. The recent re-discovery of the tin mines of Tuscany has solved the pro

<sup>1</sup> I am reminded by a correspondent, Ven. Archdeacon Stock, that some historical evidence has been adduced in favour of eruptions of the Auvergne volcanoes as late as 460 A.D.

<sup>2</sup> See Lanciani, "Ancient Rome," ch. ii.

blem of the bronze age in Europe,<sup>1</sup> and has shown that it belongs to the period of Etrusco-Iberian supremacy, before the rise of Rome and the inroads of the Celts. The obligations of Rome to Etruria are now very well recognised. Its early religion, arts, science, and brains came mainly from this source, just as those of the early nations of Asia came from



FIG. 2.—Map showing the position of Rome between two Volcanic Centres.

the old Turanian Accadians of the Euphrates, the Cushites of the Bible. In the museums of Italy we look with wonder on the remains of an early Etruscan art, not Greek, nor Assyrian, nor Phœnician, nor Egyptian, but combining parts of all, and which shows the existence of an old and advanced civilization in Italy, long before the rise of the Greek colonies or of the Roman power.

<sup>1</sup> Dawkins, "Pre-historic Man in Europe.

Rome itself, destined so long to be the mistress of the world, took her place on the marginal débris of two old volcanoes, that of the Ciminian Hills with the old crater of Lake Bracciano on the north, and that of the Alban Hills on the south (Fig. 2). The débris thrown down from these volcanoes meets on the plain of Tiber; and on this Rome was built. To a geologist, the first question as to any ancient

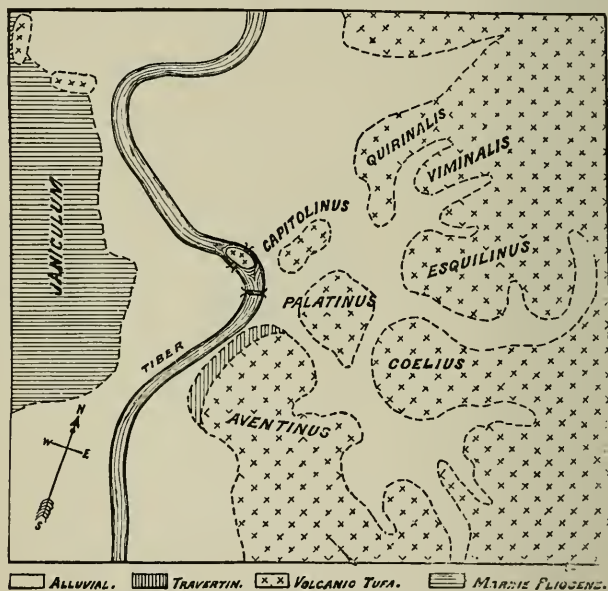


FIG. 3.—Sketch-Map of the site of Rome.

site is,—“What were its original condition and the causes of it?” and these facts I have endeavoured to represent in the rough sketch-map (Fig. 3). The Janiculan hill west of the Tiber, which is the oldest part of the site of Rome, is composed of beds of marl, clay, sand, and conglomerate, not volcanic, but holding marine shells, and belonging to a time



when that part of Italy was in the bed of the Mediterranean. The rising grounds on the eastern side of the river, the historic seven hills of Rome, are composed of volcanic ashes spread out upon, and filling up the pliocene sea. They are now partly consolidated into a volcanic sandstone or tufa, hard enough to be used as a building stone, but sufficiently soft to be readily excavated into the galleries of the Catacombs. They once formed a continuous surface, reaching quite across the valley, but have been cut by the streams and the action of the sea in later submergences into their present irregular forms. On the flanks of these hills, and especially of the Aventine, are still later beds of fresh-water travertin or recent limestone, a river deposit, showing that in early historic times the Tiber reached to a greater height than at present, to the extent, perhaps, of 130 or 140 feet. These belong to the post-glacial or earliest human period, when the mammoth was one of the wild animals of Italy.

The muddy Tiber, an unmanageable and ill-conditioned river, liable to sudden floods, and leaving when it recedes ugly banks of sand and shingle, had originally cut its way, at the site of Rome, along the junction of the tufa beds on the east with the Janiculan marine beds on the west, and in doing so had made a broad bend, so as to run nearly north and south, or at right angles to its usual course westward to the sea. Where the city was afterwards built there remained in the middle of the river a little island of volcanic sandstone, affording facilities for a bridge to connect the territories of the Etruscans with those of the Sabines and Latins, and other tribes of the south of Italy; and which must have been, from the first colonization of the country, an important crossing place. But on the south-east side, near the end of the bridge, were two little rugged knolls, the Palatine and Capitoline hills, well suited in unsettled times to form the nests of bandits who might rob unprotected travellers, or, under better government,

to furnish sites for forts to protect or defend the passage. The seven hills of Rome are these two isolated eminences, and five spurs of the table-land on the south, which run out toward them. The intervening low ground was originally marshy, and liable to be inundated by the river. At present much of it is raised by accumulated rubbish to a height of thirty or forty feet above its original level. It was on the tufa knoll of the Palatine that the original square fort of Romulus was built. The Capitoline became a second citadel and a holy place, and the intervening flat was drained to form a Forum, or market and meeting place of the tribes. The other elevations, originally in the possession of other clans or bands, were seized and added to the city, as its population and importance increased.

But the Palatine continued to the end to be the seat of imperial power, and it is at this present day the strangest possible mixture of wild nature and the magnificent erections of the greatest of the world's monarchs. Old Rome lay mainly on the hills, out of reach of floods and malaria. Modern Rome has gone down into the hollows partly filled with rubbish shot from the hills, and incapable of good drainage, because so porous and saturated with the filth of ages. Modern Rome was until lately an unhealthy, malarious place; but under the new Italian government many important sanitary improvements have been made, and others are in rapid progress. It would be a good project—now indeed in process of realization—to transfer the city bodily to the table-land to the south, where there has already been much building, and leave the old site altogether to the excavators and the archæologists. At present the Palatine and the Forum are actually in this condition, and present a strange spectacle of ancient and grand ruins in the midst of a modern town.

The Jewish, and probably the Christian, quarter of Imperial Rome was that along the foot of the Janiculum, on the western

side of the river, directly opposite to the Palatine hill. Looking from this to the Palatine, and restoring in imagination its magnificent palaces, one can imagine how it looked to the persecuted Christians of the first century. On that hill reigned the master of the world, to whom all lives and fortunes were subject; whose word could consign to death or banishment the helpless Christians. The imperial court on the Palatine was the terrible impersonation of that great world-power which tyrannized over the Church of God. It was the lineal and legitimate successor of those ancient conquering heathen empires which had from of old persecuted God's people, and whose fated dominance constituted those "times of the Gentiles" which were to be fulfilled and finished by the coming of Christ Himself. Standing on the Palatine, one can fully realize this, and can reconcile those crude applications of the apocalyptic prophecies to heathen Rome, which are favoured by some modern German theologians and their followers, with those wider views which can see in the Vatican the predestined successor of the Palatine.

One is struck in the Catacombs, and in the collections in the Lateran Museum taken from them, with the frequency of reference to such Old Testament stories as those of Daniel in the lions' den, and of the three Hebrew youths in the fiery furnace. It is impossible not to connect these with the idea in the minds of the early Christians that Rome was Babylon revived, and the emperor who reigned in the Palatine the counterpart of Nebuchadnezzar. These representations are in fact the same identification of Rome and Babylon which one sees in the Apocalypse of St. John, though there is no direct connection between the two, nor apparently much direct reference to the Apocalypse<sup>1</sup> in the figures in the catacombs. Thus we can connect the identification of Rome with Babylon

<sup>1</sup> The frequent use of the letters Alpha and Omega, as an emblem of Christ, is probably a case of this kind.

on the part of the early Christians with that designation of the new spiritual power which was to rise on its ruins by the same term in the Revelation of St. John. At a later time the removal of the new Christian empire of Constantine to Constantinople, while it really contributed to the development of the Papal power, may have seemed to some devout minds to be a mode of avoiding the fated connection of the old city with the rise and dominion of Antichrist.

In this connection it is also of interest to note, that while the Old Testament prophets make comparatively few references to volcanic phenomena, and the classical writers seem to have little idea of the volcanic character of Central Italy,<sup>1</sup> volcanic phenomena are prominent in the prophetic literature of the New Testament.

Peter takes the lead in this at the day of Pentecost, when he quotes one of the few volcanic references of the prophets in that sublime passage of Joel :—

——“ Wonders in the heaven above,  
And signs in the earth beneath ;  
Blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke :  
The sun shall be turned into darkness,  
And the moon into blood.”<sup>2</sup>

But in the Apocalypse this kind of imagery receives its full development. In the opening of the sixth seal, referring probably to the final overthrow of the imperial heathen power reigning on the Palatine, “there was a great earthquake ; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood ; and the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind, and the heavens were removed as a scroll rolled up, and every mountain and island were moved out of their places.”<sup>3</sup> One would suppose that the prophet had before

<sup>1</sup> Strabo recognises the volcanic origin of old craters in Southern Italy.

<sup>2</sup> Acts ii. 19.      <sup>3</sup> Rev. vi. 12.

him an eruption of Vesuvius—the preceding earthquakes, the black pall of ashes darkening the sun, the red glow of volcanic dust tinging the moon; the showers of hot volcanic stones, the disappearance of the heavenly bodies, the shaking of the mountains and islands out of their places. To his view it is evidently as if a new volcano had burst forth between the Alban and Ciminian Hills, and overwhelmed and engulfed the imperial city. Again, under the second trumpet,<sup>1</sup> he sees a burning mountain cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea reddened like blood with its ferruginous ashes, and the living creatures that were in the sea floating dead upon the surface. The phenomena here are those of a new submarine volcano, like that which burst forth in the Mediterranean in 1831, and which was known as Graham's Island. A little later<sup>2</sup> he sees the pit of the abyss opened, and smoke issuing therefrom, darkening the air and the sun. Still later he pictures a great earthquake,<sup>3</sup> "such as was not since men were upon the earth," which shakes to pieces the nations that had taken the place of Rome. Finally, after defining the apostate Church that is to succeed heathen Rome, he pictures her destruction under the emblem of a burning whose smoke shall ascend for ever and ever, and under that of a great volcanic crater, "a lake of fire" into which she and her abettors shall be cast.

That these figures are not at all Palestinian, but are borrowed from the volcanic phenomena of the Mediterranean basin, no one can doubt. In connection with this, it may be noted that Patmos, to which John was banished, is in sight of the volcanic island of Santorin, which, according to Pliny, was in eruption in A.D. 19, and was again active in A.D. 46 and A.D. 60. We have unfortunately no information as to its condition at the time of the great Vesuvian eruption of A.D. 79. If active at or shortly after that time, it would bring volcanic phenomena

<sup>1</sup> Rev. viii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. ix. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. xvi. 18.

very near to the abode of the prophet, and he may not only have heard the current reports of the great Italian eruptions, but may have been an eye-witness of similar cataclysms. But did the prophet actually believe that the great world-powers reigning and to reign in Italy, were to be destroyed literally in this way? The answer, I think, should be, that he merely employs phenomena characteristic of the site to depict a destruction of another kind, but to point out its terrible and total character as a retributive Divine judgment. Nevertheless, we need not forget that Italy is a volcanic region, subject to such phenomena as he has described, and that within the first century of the Christian era, and in the time of John the Apostle, disturbances occurred in Southern Italy which locally vindicate his descriptions, and which show that it is not impossible that even the extinct volcanoes of the central part of the peninsula may yet break forth in destructive eruptions.<sup>1</sup> It may be well in this connection to glance at these modern phenomena, as picturing to us what was before the mind of the apocalyptic writer, as well as giving an idea of the appearances of the fire-belt, manifest more or less to successive generations of men in Southern Europe from the

<sup>1</sup> This has some bearing on the questions that have been agitated respecting the date of the Apocalypse. The external testimony of the oldest authorities is to the effect that John was banished to Patmos in the reign of Domitian; and in that case his apocalyptic visions will date about A. D. 96. It has, however, been maintained on supposed internal evidence, that the book must have been written much earlier, in the reign of Nero, and some time before the great volcanic outburst in Southern Italy. The earlier date would oblige us to suppose some prophetic intimation to John of the approaching cataclysm. The later date would enable us to suppose that writing at a time when this great disaster, and possibly accompanying disturbances in the Greek islands, were fresh in men's minds, he availed himself of these well-known facts to illustrate the Divine judgments. The question is important, as the interpretation of the book has been made to depend on its date; and in this case the old Church historians and the more orthodox commentators favour the later date, and are more in accordance with the physical probabilities.

Pleistocene age to the present day, when destructive earthquakes are still reminding us of the instability of the lands lying above this great line of fracture.

It is farther south than Rome, on the fair Bay of Naples, that we shall find our best modern illustrations; and perhaps no volcanic region is more instructive to the geologist and historian than that which centres around Mount Vesuvius (Fig. 4). In ascending this mountain and noting its vast proportions, and the magnificent views from the winding road that leads from Resina to the summit, or to the station of the steeply inclined railway that facilitates the ascent, the geologist is deeply impressed with the fact that all he sees is absolutely modern. The road is cut through bands of black lava, marked on his map as belonging to the eruptions of 1854 and 1872. The former has already acquired the aspect of an old rock. The latter has a comparatively fresh appearance, and shows a strangely gnarled and contorted surface, as if a troubled sea of viscous matter had been suddenly cooled. It is dark, highly vesicular lava, often scoriaceous on top.

About half-way up, a spur of older material projects through the lavas which have flowed on both sides of it, and exhibits, among other things, a conglomerate of rounded volcanic and



FIG. 4.—Vesuvius and Somma from the Bay of Naples. Just over the boat is the observatory, and a little to the right the railway.

other stones, ejectamenta of the volcano, but which in another locality might be attributed to the action of ice. Here is placed the observatory in which Signor Palmieri and his assistants keep watch over the fitful and dangerous monster. The crater itself, the rim of which is about 4,000 feet above the bay, varies in form and dimension (Fig. 5). When I visited it in the winter of 1883, it was a nearly circular depression, or deep hollow in the mountain top, less than a quarter of a mile in diameter, and with a miniature mountain, or interior cone, from which issued clouds of white steam, smelling strongly of hydrochloric and

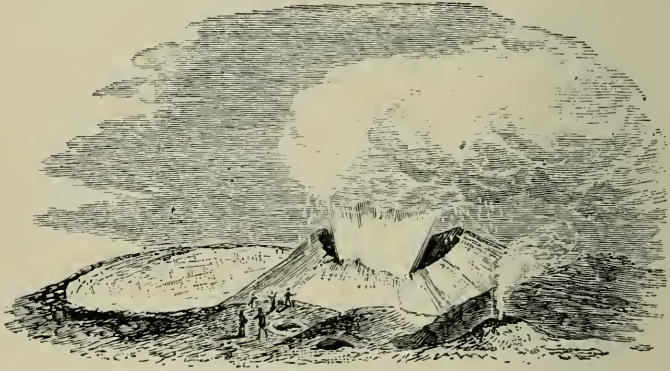


FIG. 5.—The Crater of Vesuvius, as seen in December, 1883.

sulphurous acids, and at short intervals emitting sudden puffs which carried up with them into the air masses of red-hot and semi-fluid lava, which fell around with a soft thud, and flattened themselves on the ground. For a few moments they were soft enough to allow the guides to insert coins into them as memorials of our visit. Standing on the rim, one could see the more recent lava currents radiating from the centre, some of them running westward to the sea, others toward the Atrio de Cavallo, which lies between the mountain and the old cliff or escarpment of Mount Somma, the predecessor of Vesuvius.



Conspicuous among these are the currents of the great eruption of 1872.

I was not so fortunate as to witness any more extensive eruption than the series of puffs to which I have referred, and which constitute the ordinary action of the volcano, but I give

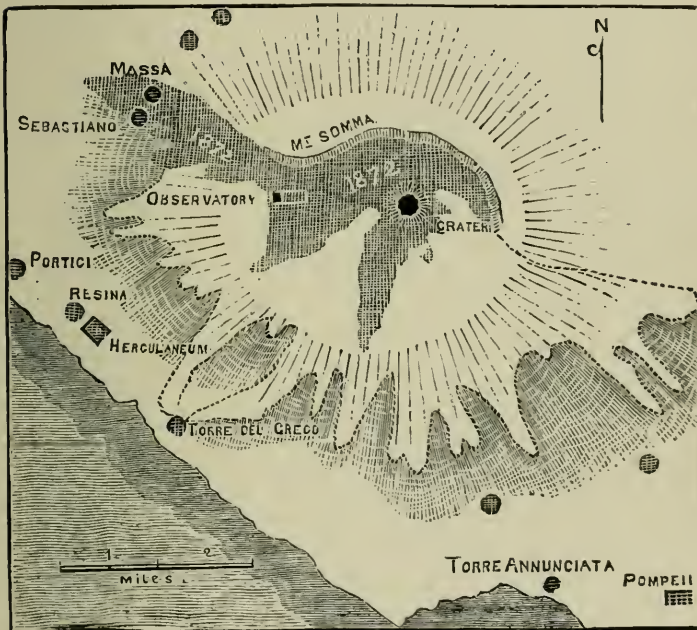


FIG. 6.—Map of the Lava Currents of Mount Vesuvius in the Eruption<sup>1</sup> of 1872 (after Black). Lava of 1872 shaded with cross lines.

a copy of a photograph of the eruption of 1872, with a plan taken from an interesting paper by J. M. Black, F.G.S.,<sup>1</sup> from whose description the following summary is mainly taken (Fig. 6, and cut facing chapter).

On Tuesday, April 23rd, 1872, the volume of vapour from

<sup>1</sup> Proc. Geol. Association, 1874.

the mountain gradually increased, and until the 26th continued to increase until it assumed stupendous proportions, rising to four or five times the height of the mountain, or about 17,000 to 20,000 feet, and consisting of successive rolls or masses of vapour, representing the almost continuous explosions taking place from the crater. At night the vapour was invisible, but gave place to what seemed great tongues of fire, rising up many hundreds of feet above the summit of the volcano, and consisting of the red-hot stones and other ejectamenta cast out in the explosions. At the same time the lava poured out from the crater and flowed down the sides, appearing as fiery streams by night, and covered with thick clouds of vapour by day. All this was accompanied by rumbling sounds resembling distant thunder, and by continual trembling of the whole mountain to its base. Early in the morning of the 26th, a rent or fissure opened from the top of the cone towards the Atrio de Cavallo, and from this a great volume of lava poured forth. At the same time a similar rent took place at the southern side, and from this also a stream of lava issued toward the Bay of Naples. The formation of these fissures was accompanied by an explosion of unusual violence, throwing great blocks or bombs of lava to a great height in the air, and with a vast evolution of vapour. Two great streams of lava were thus poured forth, one filling up the Atrio de Cavallo and pouring out westward in two branches on both sides of the observatory ridge, to a distance of four miles from the crater, the other running south half-way to the shore of the bay. The northern part of the first stream overwhelmed and destroyed a party of spectators who had taken up their position in the Atrio, and ran west to the village of Sebastiano, part of which it destroyed. This was the culmination of the eruption, but it continued on following days to the end of the month of April, and more especially discharged great showers of ashes, which darkened the sky and covered

the ground as far as Naples, the wind having changed to the eastward. The loss of life in this eruption was not great, being estimated at between fifty and sixty persons, but there was great destruction of property, more especially in the farms and vineyards on the slopes of the mountain.

Black notes that the people were to be seen making processions, each bearing a picture or image of San Genuaro or Januarius, the patron saint of the mountain, to whom fervent prayers for protection were addressed—a strange example of another apocalyptic statement, that no exhibition of Divine power in nature can make the idolatrous repent of their idolatries, and a remarkable illustration of the permanence of old superstitions; for there can be no doubt that the same thing would have been done by their ancestors, four thousand years earlier; only that their processions would have borne images of now forgotten divinities, and their petitions would have been addressed either to the demons of the abyss, who might be supposed to be unusually active, or to the heavenly gods, who might be imagined to have the power of confining these evil spirits again in their underground prison. In both cases offerings would be made to appease or propitiate the evil or the good powers. Thus the effect of these grand natural phenomena has been the same on the uninstructed and debased human mind for thousands of years.

A few words may be pardoned here as to what we know of the nature and causes of these tremendous phenomena, and the light which they throw on the interior structure and genesis of the earth.

Perhaps the most striking fact to an observer on the top of Vesuvius, is the evidence that in the pipe or shaft terminating in the crater there is a column of molten rock extending from the summit not merely to the base of the cone, but for an unknown depth into the stratified rocks below, which, in the case of Vesuvius, are known to be composed of volcanic ash

rocks, silts and marls of Tertiary dates, and below these, cretaceous limestones to a depth of 2,250 feet. But far below this, the well of fiery rock must reach through older stratified rocks, down to where the earth's under-crust consists of intensely heated and soft or pasty material, forced upward by some enormous pressure into the volcanic orifice.

What is this pressure? It can surely be nothing else than the weight of the overlying crust itself. Let us suppose a fissure or crack formed in the earth's solid crust down to the molten layer, and sediment deposited on one side, so as to weigh it down, or let us suppose a lateral movement set up by the shrinkage of the interior and the settlement of the crust. In either case an enormous pressure may be put on the liquid or pasty matter below, and it may be caused to well up through any crack or opening accessible to it. Thus the molten lava is really a portion of the inner or underlying heated matter of the earth squeezed out by pressure. But this might produce merely a quiet flow of lava. Whence is the explosion or violent action? Here another force comes into play, that of steam. The heated column is forced up through water-soaked rocks, and as it passes porous beds, quantities of water are injected into it, and as they ascend and are relieved from pressure, these successively flash into steam, producing reports or explosions. In addition to this, when any fissure is formed sufficiently extensive to admit sea-water, still more violent explosive action may occur, and as the water will be forced back at each explosion, and return after an interval, these explosions may take place in rapid succession and with tremendous violence.<sup>1</sup> In short, in volcanic phenomena the actual power of ejection resides in the pressure of the crust; the noise and explosion in the steam produced by the heat of the ascending lava.

<sup>1</sup> See papers by Prof. Prestwich, Proc. R. S., and by Dr. Johnston Lavis, Proc. R. Dublin Soc., 1886, Journal Geological Society, 1884.

Vesuvius is a modern volcano. All this mass of solid rock and consolidated ash and scoria, 4,000 feet high and about three miles in diameter, has been extracted from the bowels of the earth and piled up since the year 79 of the Christian era, or say, in about eighteen centuries. According to Dr. Johnston Lavis, one of our best authorities on Vesuvius, we should add to this the filling of a vast conical cavity left by the great eruption of the year 79. We should also add those thick beds of ashes and lapilli with which a large area in Southern Italy was covered at the time of this eruption.

As seen from Naples or from the bay, Vesuvius appears to be a regular cone, with a second mountain about three-fourths as high at its north side. This second mountain slopes away to the north, and presents a steep front towards Vesuvius, as if it was a remnant of a similar but larger cone, of which the greater part had been removed. When we get a panoramic view of the mountain from the rim of the crater, this conclusion is confirmed by our perceiving that the accessory mountain, known as Monte Somma, is of a crescent shape, enclosing in its curve nearly one-half of Vesuvius; and the Observatory Mount, and portions of the Piedemontana or Foot-hill on the other side are evidently continuations of the same great curve. Besides, we can see that the escarpment of Monte Somma consists of bedded volcanic matters of the same nature with those of Vesuvius, except in some particulars well noted by Dr. Johnston Lavis, and which show its older date. On tracing the margin of this outer curve, we find that it is about six miles in diameter, corresponding to the foundation of a hill twice as large as Vesuvius. (See Fig. 4, p. 27, dotted line.)

Let us suppose, then, the present cone removed and the old circle of Somma raised to its pristine elevation. It would then form, according to my friend Dr. Lavis, a cone 7,000 feet in height. Such a mountain, though probably broader at top and not so high in proportion as the modern Vesuvius,

we know from history existed here from the first colonization of Italy till the year 79 of the Christian era, and showed no signs of volcanic activity; though, had there been geologists in those days, they would have concluded that it had once been a volcano.

By studying the series of deposits presented by the wreck of this old mountain, we can learn more of its history than was known to the ancients. The cliff which bounds the *Atrio de Cavallo* is seen to consist of regular volcanic beds. These rest on marine sediments, with sea-shells of Pleistocene date, and including layers of volcanic ashes, which show that *Somma* began its eruptions as a submarine volcano in a shallow sea, at the time of the Pleistocene submergence, when the Mediterranean was wider than at present; though at a later date, in the continental Post-glacial period, it must have stood far within the limits of the land. The underlying beds are seen in wells in its vicinity, and fragments holding fossils have been found by *Guiscardi* in the blocks mixed with the old volcanic ejections. Below these Pleistocene beds the ejected blocks show that there are Eocene beds and thick limestones of the age of the English chalk, and below these still there would seem to be old crystalline rocks.

What was the condition of *Somma* in the antediluvian period we do not certainly know, since no remains of that age have yet been found in its beds; but it is not impossible that the first palæocosmic colonists who found their way to the greater Italy of those days may have seen it as still an active volcano. Those grand old men of great stature, whose bones and stone implements are found in the caves at *Mentone*, and in whose days the volcanoes of Central Italy were certainly still alive, may, if they extended their travels so far south, have seen *Somma* still smoking above the forests which clothed its base. However this may be, when the first post-diluvian colonists of whom we have any record landed in Italy, the

mountain showed no signs of activity, and was clothed to its summit with the rich verdure which in that climate luxuriates on the fertile volcanic soils; though at that time there were active volcanoes in Ischia and the Phlegrean fields. Somma remained a beautiful and symmetrical feature in the landscape through all the periods of Greek and Roman history, till the fated year 79, when it burst forth in that frightful eruption which destroyed Pompeii and Herculaneum, and brought death and desolation to all the country around the Bay of Naples, but which had the effect of preserving to our time, in the buried cities, treasures of art which have better illustrated the social life of ancient Italy, and have afforded more available models to modern designers than have been furnished by any other ancient sites. Pliny the Younger, as an eye-witness, well described this great eruption, whence it is sometimes known as the Plinian eruption. In modern times Poulett Scrope, Lyell, Mallet, Phillips, and many Italian geologists have studied its geological features. I shall here refer merely to some points of more general interest.

The Plinian eruption, representing pent-up forces which had been accumulating for ages, was preceded by violent earthquakes, after which one mighty effort literally blew into the air the whole mass of Somma, and scattered its fragments over all parts of the surrounding country. Its principal force was expended a little to the south of the axis of Somma, and it is for this reason that the north side of the old volcano is the best preserved. According to Lavis, the first effect of this eruption must have been to leave a great gulf or conical cavity, which, if its bottom was filled with molten lava, probably gave to men the earliest realization of a "lake of fire," now made familiar to us by the still grander crater of Kilauea in the Sandwich Islands. Out of this abyss rose, by the accumulations of successive eruptions, the modern cone of Vesuvius, which has never since been entirely quiescent.

The rise of this mighty mountain in modern times furnishes an apt illustration of igneous forces, and of the rapid rate at which they can effect changes ; and we should bear in mind that, besides Vesuvius, Southern Italy and Sicily are full of examples of somewhat abrupt geological change, and in this respect are quite in contrast to our staid and settled northern regions of old and stable rocks. It is also a marked illustration of sudden and cataclysmic action, proceeding from the slow and continued accumulation of forces during long ages of apparent quiescence. All earthquakes belong to the same category with reference to their causes ; and in this same region the recent destructive shocks at the old volcanic island of Ischia, whose active volcanic phenomena belong to the early historic period, show the same cumulative tendency, the evidence going to prove that the seismic shocks were a residual effect of the old volcanic action.

Another interesting thought in connection with Vesuvius relates to what may be termed mountain-making. Vesuvius itself is an example of a mountain built up, like a mole-hill, of matter taken out from below and piled on the surface. In the Apennines and sub-Apennine hills, on the other hand, there are mountain masses built up of nearly horizontal beds of limestone and sandstone, which have been elevated bodily, as parts of very flat curves of the crust, and have afterward been sculptured by the sea, or by atmospheric waters eating away their softer parts. Lastly, the great peaks of the Alps and certain central parts of the Apennines show vast crumplings and foldings of the rocks which have been thrust upward by the lateral pressure of the contracting crust. All of these processes have been going on from the beginning of geological time, but it is to the last that the greatest and most extensive mountain ranges are mainly due. Still, we see that while all mountains have histories, these may differ in different cases, and in the greater mountain chains are variously combined. In con-



nection with all this we must take into consideration the fact that most mountains, and especially the older ones, have been more than once wholly or partially submerged and re-elevated, and that these dips and emergences have contributed by sea agency to their moulding into their present forms.

The explosion of Somma and the origin of Vesuvius are the latest of the grander volcanic phenomena of the Mediterranean. There has been nothing so tremendous since ; but there is evidence of earlier catastrophes of equal extent. Similar eruptions probably produced the old craters of *Avernus* and *Albano* in Central Italy, and the still more magnificent ruined crater of *Santorin* in the Greek Archipelago, though new mountains have not succeeded these, except in the case of the little volcano of *Neo-Kaimena*, in the latter case. The greatest eruptions of *Santorin* may, like that of *Somma*, and the modern catastrophe of *Krakatoa*, have reddened the skies of the whole world by the fine ashes cast up into the upper atmosphere ; and though these eruptions were prehistoric, there are some reasons to believe that antediluvian men may have witnessed them, and may have derived impressions never forgotten by their descendants.

I have referred to one of the most strange and beautiful accompaniments of volcanic phenomena—that of the brilliant afterglow which was so apparent in all parts of the Northern Hemisphere in the autumn and winter of 1883-4, and which we saw in its full perfection in Egypt, when, in the cloudless atmosphere of the Upper Nile, its beauty and duration were remarkable, and an ever-attractive evening spectacle of transcendent loveliness. One evening, in returning over the desert to *Suez*, the setting sun was filling the western sky with this roseate light, tinging with a red illumination one side of every rock and building, while the nearly full moon was rising in the east, whitening with silver light the opposite side. The effect was magical, the whole landscape being refined, as

if it had put on a new and spiritual beauty ; and this, with the deep blue of the sea and warm tints of the limestone cliffs, produced altogether the most unearthly and beautiful evening spectacle I ever witnessed. The sun-glows are now relegated by unpoetical science to the domain of dust, and it seems that the uniform diffusion of fine particles in the upper atmosphere is all that is required to produce them. In Egypt the dust of the desert in windy weather rises high in the air, and gives it a ruddy tint, and the same effect is produced by the smoke of the forest fires in America. The brilliant sun-glows of the winter of 1883-4 were attributed to the great eruption of Krakatoa, which threw up to a vast height in the atmosphere volumes of the finest dust ; and this, floating for a long time in the upper air, acted on the solar light. Thus the effects of the eruption were world-wide.

It is believed that since the great eruption of the year 79, the Italian volcanoes have done little in this way, except at the time of the eruption of Graham Island, in the Mediterranean, when similar phenomena are said to have manifested themselves locally. Such things impressed the imaginations of men in early times, and while they terrified the ignorant and superstitious, and were interwoven with their idolatries and myths, served to intensify the warnings of prophets, and to supply them with emblems illustrative of the terrible nature of God's judgments on human wickedness—emblems which, to those acquainted with their reality as natural facts, possessed a commanding force and significance.

These considerations lead us to see something of the discipline afforded by physical surroundings to the early tribes of men, who, migrating slowly westward along the Mediterranean shore, were witnesses to some of the more striking natural processes by which the continents are fashioned, who learned to think of these great processes as the results of superhuman agencies, and whose imaginations were stimulated and their

minds quickened by the energies of nature around them. We can scarcely estimate the extent to which art and literature are indebted to the subterranean energies of the fire-belt ; and we can at least better appreciate the use made of these energies as symbols of the judgments of God in the concluding book of the New Testament.

But the great Plinian eruption has a further human interest in the desolation which it wrought in Southern Italy, and in the evidences of this which have been exhumed from the two buried towns which, probably, along with several others, were suddenly destroyed. They were not cast into the lake of fire, nor did the smoke of their burning ascend up for ever. That would have happened had they been built on the summit or southern slope of Somma ; but they were on the margin of the area of volcanic action, and so were merely buried out of sight till dug up by the spade of the excavator. The extent of the destruction which they shared may be estimated in this way. A line joining Pompeii and Herculaneum is about seven miles in length, and about three miles from the crater of Vesuvius. Even supposing that, owing to the direction of the wind, the destructive effects were confined to the country lying to the southward of the mountain, we shall thus have an area of, say, thirty square miles of a very thickly peopled country entirely devastated, and a large proportion of its people destroyed.

The description of the eruption by Pliny in his letters to Tacitus corresponds very well with the deposits now exposed at Pompeii and Herculaneum. It would seem that, in the first paroxysms of the eruption, great quantities of pumiceous lapelli were thrown out, mostly small, but sometimes weighing more than five pounds. As the discharge proceeded, the material became finer and of the nature of volcanic ash. All these materials were projected into the air at a great height, and mixed with a cloud of steam, the explosion of which wa

the cause of their ejection. As seen in the excavations at Pompeii, the resulting deposit is twelve to fifteen feet in thickness. The lower part consists of grey lapelli, with their interstices filled in with volcanic ash, which is similar material in a comminuted state. The upper part is finer and of a darker colour, with small concretions. It would seem that most of this material must have fallen in a dry state, but in the sequel of the eruption torrents of rain fell, converting the ashes into mud, and it is to this circumstance that we owe the formation of hollow moulds of the bodies of some of the victims of the catastrophe, which have enabled Signor Fiorelli to reproduce, in startling reality, the forms and features of several of the old Pompeians as they lay in the agonies of death. At Herculaneum this volcanic mud was hardened above into a stony bed of considerable thickness—a “lava d’acqua,” as it is called by the Italians, which causes the excavation of that city to be a species of mining, but which has better protected its remains than those of Pompeii.

In Pompeii and Herculaneum we have fossil cities, and their state of preservation is very impressive, as an illustration of the possibility of such fossilization. We see in their streets and houses the remains of an ancient town, just as it was left by its inhabitants, who might have fled from it yesterday. In some of the better-preserved rooms and shops we would scarcely be surprised to be greeted by one of the old inhabitants with a hospitable *Salve!* But in most there is a peculiarly mournful aspect of dilapidation, not like that of an old ruin, but like that of a house which has been on fire yesterday. The actual state of preservation is, that the roofs and all combustible parts were burned and fell in, the walls and all incombustible objects were packed full of lapilli and ashes, and buried out of sight. The style of art in utensils and decorations speaks of a high civilization, far superior to that of Europe in the Middle Ages, and which has af-

forded the models of a remarkable number of modern ornamental objects. The Pompeian Museum at Naples, in fact, would make one believe that three-fourths of our modern artistic decoration had come from Pompeii, or from the same sources with the art of that fossil city. Among exceptional fossils we note the charred rolls of parchment from Herculaneum, which can still be opened by careful manipulation and rendered legible. One of these, on exhibition when we were there, was a Latin encyclopædia of philosophy and literature in many volumes, by an author little known to modern scholars, but which seems to have formed a main part of the library of some gentleman of Herculaneum. Still more wonderful as fossils are the plaster casts secured from the moulds of the bodies of men and animals buried in the semi-fluid volcanic mud. One of these is peculiarly striking. It represents a Roman gentleman, who, perhaps ill and deserted by his attendants, perished in his bed.

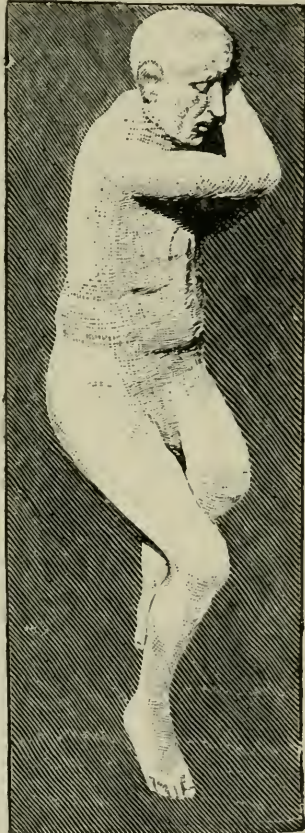


FIG. 7.

Cast of the body of a Roman Gentleman who perished in Pompeii.  
(From a photograph.)

His fine Roman features and aspect of calm resignation are in strong contrast to most of the other figures of this kind (Fig. 7).

He has no name, but as we wandered through the town, we came to a house called that of Cornelius, and saw facing us in the atrium a marble bust, inscribed, C. Cornelius Rufus, which we recognised as the face of our friend of the Pompeian Museum. We were told that it was in this house that the mould of the body was found; and if so, we have here an unusual opportunity of realizing, both in marble and in an actual cast, the aspect of a Pompeian of the first century. He was certainly a good representative of that noble Cornelian gens to which the Roman centurion, Peter's first Gentile convert, belonged. We may accept him as a relative and representative of that eminent man. We know not if he was a Christian or a heathen, and cannot certainly divine whether the calm on his countenance is that of Christian hope or stoical resignation. In either case, he probably died with the thought in his mind that earth's final day, as well as his own, had come, and that the world and all things therein were being destroyed. After all, the age of this Roman was modern, compared with those of Seti and Rameses of Egypt, whose faces we can now see in the flesh in the museum at Gizeh; and such facts give us the hope that even yet some fortunate discoverer may bring before us the very form and lineaments of the earliest palæo-cosmic men, the ancestors of humanity, of whom we already know something from their skulls and the remains of their weapons and implements.

These thoughts remind us of something we have left behind at Rome. The catacombs, excavated in the tufa mounds around the city, represent a new mode of burial, introduced with Christianity, which abhorred the old cremation, and believed in the more ancient Eastern idea of the decent preservation of the body until the resurrection. Further, as the mode of burial in catacombs was abandoned after the fourth century, these remarkable underground tombs belong to the earlier three centuries of Christianity. The bodies placed in

them have perished, all except the bones, and even they are often poorly preserved ; but the simple Christian faith of the inscriptions remains as a legacy to all time, testifying that there is something more important in the preservation of the thoughts of men than merely of their bodies, impressing us with the intense earnestness and simplicity of the faith of the early Christians, and their implicit belief in the Bible ; and also, by the vast number of interments, estimated at four millions, with the marvellously rapid progress of the Gospel in the metropolis of the Roman Empire in the early centuries of the Christian era. This great host of witnesses lies encamped around Rome, and will arise in the latter day to testify to the essential truths of Christianity, and to bear witness against its more modern apostasy.

In visiting the catacombs and studying the sculptures and inscriptions found in them, one cannot fail to be impressed not only with the simple Christian faith of these early disciples, but with the extent to which their minds were saturated with the Old Testament histories. The frequency of references to Noah and the ark, to the history of Jonah, to Daniel in the den of lions, to the three Hebrew youths in the fiery furnace, and similar subjects is most striking ; and shows how fully the Old Testament had entered into the beliefs of converted Gentiles, and how precious it was to them in time of trial. All this is remarkably in accordance with the teaching of Paul as recorded in the Acts of the Apostles, with the tone of the Pauline epistles, and especially with the Epistle to the Hebrews, the writer of which, whether Paul or not, must have been a Christian of the mental type of those who prepared the epitaphs and sculptures of the catacombs.

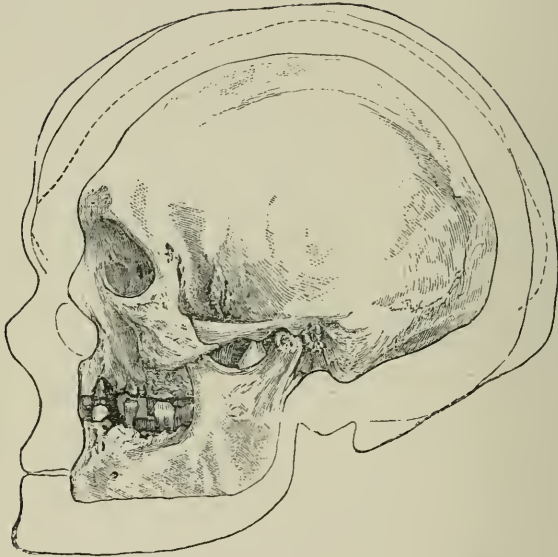
Lastly, we may note the fact that the deposits in which the Roman catacombs are excavated are essentially of the same nature with those which bury Pompeii and Herculaneum, but of older date, and thrown down in shallow water, rather than

on dry land. If, in the future, the volcanoes of Central Italy should, like old Somma, renew their activity and absorb the Tiber and the imperial city in their central lake of fire, these old Christian tombs will experience a new and deeper burial. Perhaps the existence of these Christian sepulchres, and the fact that the Italian capital contains many more than ten righteous men, constitute the surest guarantees against the literal realization of the volcanic symbols of the Apocalypse.

The Waldensian Church of to day is the true and uninterrupted successor of the Church of the Catacombs; and its evangelical congregations and schools, scattered over Italy and daily growing in numbers, constitute the true Italian Church, and, without detraction from other Christian missions, the best guarantee for the exemption of Italy from Divine judgment, and for its advance in true religion and Christian civilization.







Outlines of three Palæocosmic skulls. Outer, Cro-magnon ; second, Engis ; third, Neanderthal (Canstadt type), compared with the skull of a village Indian from the site of Hochelaga, Canada. The latter within, and on a smaller scale.

### CHAPTER III.

#### *HAUNTS AND HABITS OF PRIMITIVE MAN.*

ONE of the oldest and most interesting regions of the world is that narrow strip of recent formations extending from Mount Carmel along the east end of the Mediterranean, northward to the ancient Aradus, and limited by the Lebanon mountains on the east, and the sea on the west. At some time, even before the migration of Abraham, the Phenicians are said to have emigrated from the shores of the Persian Gulf and occupied this strip of territory. The statement harmonizes quite well with the distribution of men recorded in the 10th and 11th chapters of Genesis; for the primitive abode of post-diluvian men in the land of Shinar skirted the Persian Gulf, then more extensive northward than now. This wandering tribe, hemmed in by trackless mountains, but backed by the rich agricultural lands of Caele-Syria and Northern Canaan, and amply supplied with wood from the forest-clad hills, very naturally took to the sea, and that sea was the Mediterranean, with all the natural riches of Europe, Asia, and Africa lying around it, and affording what at that time must have seemed boundless scope for trade and colonization. Thus Phenicia became the first great maritime power, and led the way in that long succession of sea-faring and trading nations of which our own English race is no unworthy representative.

But who were on this coast before the Phenicians? When Abraham entered Palestine, more than 2000 B.C., the Canaan-

ite was already "in the land"; but we are told of a still older race, the Rephaim, including the Horim, Emim, Anakim, and the like, who were apparently there before the Canaanites, and of whom no genealogy is given.<sup>1</sup> So it was also in Phenicia. Professor West, of the American College, Beyrout, has given me an illustration of this from the site of ancient Sidon. In digging foundations for new mission buildings, just outside the modern city wall, the following section was exposed:—

|  |              |
|--|--------------|
| City <i>débris</i> . . . . .   | 6'80 mètres. |
| Sea sand . . . . .   | '50 "        |
| Earth, 40 to 80, say . . . . .   | '60 "        |
| Burnt earth . . . . .  | '30 "        |
| Dark earth with flint knives, marine and land shells of recent species still found on this coast, coarse pottery in unworn fragments, streaks of burnt earth . . . . . | 1'20 "       |
| Sandy loam, a few rounded pieces of pottery, fragments of sea shells . . . . .   | 1'10 "       |
| Red Sandstone rock, probably pleistocene, and about three mètres above the sea . . . . .   | 3'0 "        |
| Total—13'50 mètres.  |              |

Thus the rubbish of old Sidon had been cast forth on a bed of sand, probably blown sand, such as occurs in many places on the coast. Under this are indications of a fire, and below this the *débris* of a primitive station of Stone men. Putting into historical form the details given me by Professor West, we have here the indications of a pre-Phenician settlement, probably of wooden huts, inhabited by people who used beautifully chipped flint knives, long and slender, of which Professor West sent me an interesting specimen<sup>2</sup> (Fig. 8),

<sup>1</sup> Deuteronomy, chap. ii.

<sup>2</sup> This knife is  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inches long, and has probably lost an inch of the upper end. It is about an inch wide in the middle, and very thin. One edge has been sharp and even; the other is flaked into little teeth, fitting it for use as a saw. The fresh fracture is grey, the old surface of a rich brown colour.

feeding on the wild animals of the country, and on the large land snails and a variety of marine molluscs. The village of these poor people was burned, probably in a struggle with the colonists, and the vegetation which may originally have sheltered it from the sea being removed, it was covered with blown sand, and subsequently with rubbish from the town. This is not a solitary instance on this coast; but it is sufficient for our present purpose.<sup>1</sup> The primitive inhabitants, driven by the Phenicians from the coast, took to the hills, and dwelt in the caverns which abound in the limestone cliffs of Lebanon. Perhaps the rude population still living in the Northern Lebanon, and known as Nusairiyeh, may be their descendants. I had an opportunity of visiting one of their old caves of residence in the ravine of the stream known as Ant Elias, a little north of Beyrout. It is not a mere shelter, but a long tunnel penetrating far into the hill, and formerly excavated by a stream, but now, like many other river caverns in these hills, left dry by the water

<sup>1</sup> I have described (Trans. Vict. Inst., 1884) a similar deposit of flint implements under blown sand on the rising ground above Beyrout, and which may indicate an aboriginal station occupying that commanding position before the foundation of the Phenician Berytus.

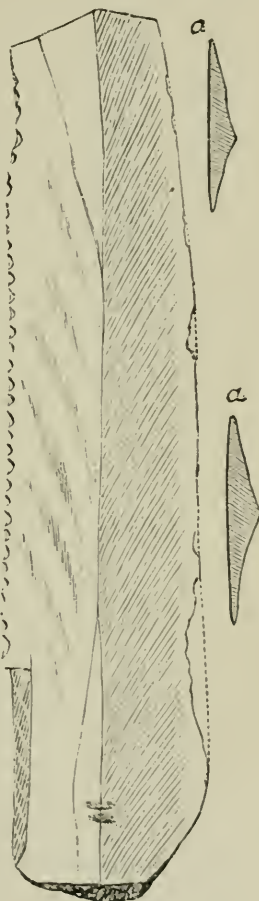


FIG. 8.  
Flint Knife and Saw.  
Site of Sidon.  
(a, a) Sections.

finding a lower level. Near the mouth of the cavern a tribe of aborigines must have lived for a long time, for, on digging into the floor, we found to the depth of two feet a congeries of flint knives and broken bones with helix shells,<sup>1</sup> and shells of a species of Turbo still living on the coast, and fragments of charcoal, the *débris* of their cookery and feasts. The earth in this cave was loose, without any hard stalagmite, except at the sides. The bones which we collected showed that these people had hunted the deer, the wild goat, and other animals still living in the Lebanon hills, and collected molluscs on the land and on the coast. The material for their knives and weapons was supplied to them by the abundant flints in the cretaceous limestone of the vicinity. These remains belong to times anterior to the early migrations of the Semitic and Canaanite peoples; but they are all post-diluvian.<sup>2</sup>

The cliffs of the same coast of the Eastern Mediterranean carry us back to a still earlier population. The town of Beyrout, the ancient Berytus, is built on a little ridge of limestone rock, separated by a plain from the range of Lebanon. North of the Ras, or head of Beyrout, the coast sweeps inward in the beautiful Bay of St. George, and beyond this a strong spur of cretaceous limestone stretches out to the sea, near the Nahr-el-Kelb or Dog River, the ancient Lycus. This spur here blocks the way along the coast, and forms a maritime pass, which in ancient times was most difficult and dangerous to invading armies. Hence the successive conquering kings,

<sup>1</sup> *Helix pomatia*, a large variety still abundant in the vicinity of the cavern.

<sup>2</sup> Lartet has noticed the occurrence of flint knives and chips at a number of places in Palestine; but they were all superficial and of uncertain age. I noticed numerous flint chips in the mound which covers the site of ancient Jericho. Careful digging will be necessary to distinguish remains really prehistoric from those which belong to the recent people, who we know used flint knives, up to the time of Joshua at least.

from Rameses II. of Egypt down to the Roman emperors, have laboured to form a practicable road around the projecting point, and have inscribed on tablets at the mouth of the pass their names and titles. Even the French army of occupation of 1860, careless of the rights of earlier workers, erased the inscription from one of these ancient tablets, and replaced it by one in its own honour. But in excavating the cretaceous limestone to form the road, a bed of different character was cut away, a stalagmite or calcareous deposit which had filled certain coast caverns, and had become as hard as the rock itself. Geological travellers, examining this material, found it to be full of flint knives and fragments of bones, the deposits of men who in some far back time had inhabited these sea-side caverns. Canon Tristram was the first English traveller to notice these interesting remains. I had an opportunity in 1884 to visit the place in company with Dr. Bliss of the Beyrout College, and the following description will enable the reader to understand the character of the formation exposed.

The Lebanon Mountains, composed as they are principally of horizontal or slightly inclined beds of limestone of different degrees of hardness, and traversed by many faults and fissures, are eminently suited for the production of caverns and rock shelters available for human residence, or for sheltering animals; and such caverns accordingly abound in most parts of the range, and have from the earliest periods been employed for these purposes. These caverns are, with respect to their origin, of two kinds—river caverns and sea-cliff caverns.

The former have been excavated by streams running underground, along lines of fissure which they have enlarged into tunnels. A remarkable example of this kind is the grotto of the Nahr-el-Kelb, which was explored in 1873 by Messrs. Maxwell, Bliss, Brigstoke, and Huxley, and found to extend for 1,256 yards, and to expand into large halls with magnificent stalactites. Another is that from which the neighbouring

mountain stream of Ant Elias issues like a gigantic fountain. These water-caves may ultimately become dry, by the streams finding a lower level, either in the rock itself or in some adjacent ravine, this being, perhaps, sometimes determined by the partial falling-in or choking of the original cavern. In the ravine of Ant Elias, as already stated, in addition to the present water-cave, there is one which has become perfectly dry, and there are remains of others which have been cut into and unroofed by the further excavation of the ravine.

The second class of caverns,—those excavated by the sea,—may be seen in process of formation at many places on the coast, where the waves have cut into fissures, or have undercut the harder beds. They are usually not very deep, and are often mere shelters or overhanging ledges. Such caverns are frequent on the old inland cliffs which have been subjected to erosion when the land stood at a lower level. The caverns now under consideration at the maritime pass belong to this latter class. The stalagmite contained in one of them was thus described by Canon Tristram, who explored it in 1864 :—

“The position of this mass of bone was several feet above the height of the present roadway, but below the level of the ancient Egyptian track, and it has formed the flooring of an ancient cavern, the roof of which must have been cut away by Rameses to form his road, or to obtain a surface for his tablet. From the position of the deposit, it would seem as though the floor of the cave had once extended to the sea-face of the cliff, and that the remaining portion was excavated by Antonine for his road, leaving only the small portion which we examined.” (He then notices the fallen masses of breccia which have been thrown down on the talus formed in making the road.) “The bones are all in fragments, the remains, in all probability, of the feasts of the makers of the rude implements. Four of the teeth have belonged to an ox somewhat resembling the ox of our peat-mosses, and one of them probably to a bison. Of



the others, some may probably be assigned to the red-deer or reindeer, and to a species of elk."

Lartet has described the caves of this district in his geological report of the expedition of the Duc de Luynes, and Fraas has devoted some space to them in *Aus dem Orient*. The latter specifies, as found in these caverns, *Ursus arctos*, *Felis spelæa*, *Rhinoceros tichorhinus*, *Bos priscus*, *Sus priscus*, and remains of *Equus*, *Cervus*, and *Capra*, an assemblage which may well be called prehistoric, even in a country whose history extends so far back as that of Syria. Lartet, who probably

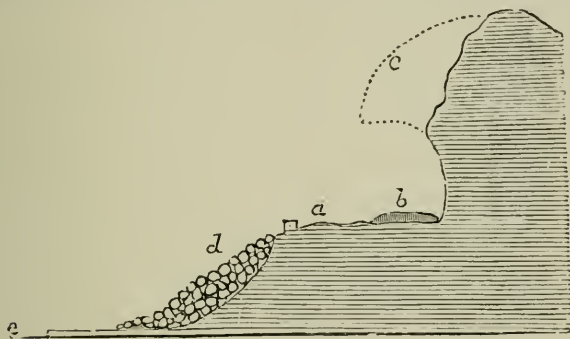


FIG. 9.—Section of ruined Cavern at the Pass of the Nahr-el-Kelb. (a) Bed of Road. (b) Breccia of Floor of Cave. (c) Probable roof of ancient Cave. (d) Debris thrown down in cutting the Road. (e) Level of Sea.

had explored only caverns of the age of that at Ant Elias, mentions only species of stag, goat, antelope, etc., all of them believed to have been found in the Lebanon in early historic times.

The evidently great age of the deposit at Nahr-el-Kelb pass induced me to give much attention to it, more especially with reference to points not investigated by previous explorers, and I was fortunate in being able to compare its contents with those of the more recent though still very ancient caverns at Ant Elias (Fig. 9).

At the point in question, the present road, which is probably nearly identical with that cut by the Romans, is about 100 feet above the sea-level, from which the bank rises in a steep slope, composed of fallen blocks of stone. The road bends inward into the cliff, which here recedes in a little cove facing the north-west, at the bottom of which was the cave. The remains of this consist of a stalagmite floor, about eighteen inches in its general thickness, extending inward from the road towards the cliff about six paces, and in breadth along the road about nine paces. The roof and sides of the cave are gone, but at the back the vertical cliff presents a sort of niche with the top slightly arched, and corresponding to the back of the cave, which must have been nine yards broad and of considerable height, with an arched roof. It has evidently been a sea-cave, excavated at the bottom of a small cove or indentation in the cliff, and at a time when the sea was about a hundred feet above its present level. Near the cave the cliff rises in a series of little terraces, on which grain had been sown and was growing up at the time of our visit; and over the top runs an old road or track, which seems to have been that in use when the early Assyrian and Egyptian tablets were cut on the rock, as they are evidently related to the level of this, and not to that of the present road.

Whether the roof of the cavern had fallen in before the Roman road was made is uncertain; but it is clear that the floor of the cave was cut into in making the road, and at least the *débris* of its sides and roof used in forming the bank, as large masses both of the stalagmite and of the limestone rock lie on the slope, some of the latter holding characteristic cretaceous corals, which belong to the soft bed in which the cave was originally excavated. A large slab of the bone-breccia, eight feet in length, now forms part of the parapet of the road, and would make a magnificent museum specimen. The exposed surfaces of the stalagmite, and the pieces on the

bank, were carefully searched for teeth and bones and flint knives, and the specimens found will be described in the sequel. Search was also made on the little terraces near the cave, and a few flint flakes were found, but no other signs of human occupancy. On the flat top of the cliff, over which the old track runs, nothing was seen. The cretaceous limestone has an anticlinal undulation at the locality of the caves, dipping west-south-west at one end, and north-east at the other.

In the same cove with Tristram's cave, a little to the south and thirty feet higher in the bank, another, though smaller, cave exists, with its roof still entire. The floor of this cave is of soft earth, and in digging in it nothing was found. Near the mouth, however, was an oval bed made of stones, lined with green rushes, on which some one had slept within a few days, furnishing an example of the recent use of this cavern.

In the next adjoining cove to the south-west of Tristram's cave, Dr. Bliss was so fortunate as to find the floor of a second cavern still richer in remains than that of Tristram's cave, from which it is distant two hundred and ten paces along the road. Its roof is entirely gone, the material having apparently been for the most part removed to form the road, though some large blocks remain. The stalagmite floor is ten paces broad, and in some places as much as four feet thick. It is somewhat softer, and of a more yellow colour, than that in the other cave; but its contents in bones and flint knives appear to be similar.

Between the two caves the road passes round a point of rock concealing the one from the other, and commanding an extensive view of the coast from Beyrout to Tripoli. At this point are the remains of a foundation of hard concrete, and near it a plain shaft of grey granite projecting from the parapet of the road, as if some monument had been erected, probably in Roman times, at this point.

It is to be observed that when these caverns were entire,

and before any road was cut around the cliff, their occupants would enjoy a position difficult of approach by enemies, and commanding an extensive view along the coast. There would also be easy access to the foot and to the top of the cliff, and small terraces of ground capable of occupation and even of culture, and in any case, of sustaining trees available for shelter and fuel. No running water is known nearer than the river, but there are cavities in the rock which retain rain-water ; and if, at the time of the occupancy of the caverns, the land was higher than now, the flat country found at other parts of the coast may have extended around this promontory, and there may have been springs at the foot of the cliff. The ledges of rock at the foot of these cliffs abound in limpets and other shell-fish, and at the time of my visit I saw boys engaged in collecting these. If the sea had been as near at the time of the occupation of the prehistoric caves, we should have expected that their inhabitants would have availed themselves of this sort of food, and that numbers of shells would have been found in their kitchen-middens. As this is not the case, we have an additional reason to suppose that the sea was then distant. If, at the period in question, the maritime plain of this coast was much wider than at present, this would have enabled herds of horses and deer to migrate from north to south, and to find suitable pasturage, and would also have afforded fit haunts for the rhinoceros. It is evident, however, that any such condition of the coast must have been anterior to the times of Phenician history.

It is also probable that the caves may have been occupied occasionally, or at certain seasons, rather than continuously. The bones and knives are not merely covered with stalagmitic matter, but mixed with it, indicating that the deposit was in progress when these remains were being accumulated. This would also give evidence of a more moist climate than that prevailing at present, and probably a wooded condition of the

country, such as that referred to in the descriptions of Lebanon in the Old Testament, and which must have continued from the earliest times till the hills were finally denuded of their trees by the agency of man.

Though it is possible that these caves may have remained intact until the cutting of the Roman road, it seems more probable that their roofs were removed previously; and the appearance of the rock, along with the absence of any evidence of late residence, agrees with the character of the animal remains in indicating that their occupancy by man had been

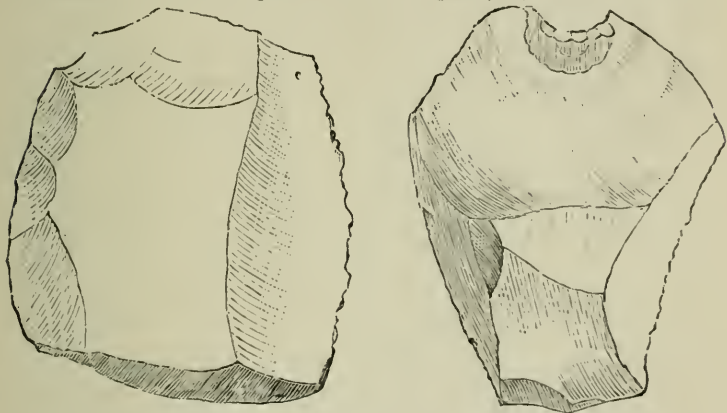


FIG. 10.—Flint Scraper and fragment of Knife (Nahr-el-Kelb).

brought to a close anterior to the times of history, and possibly in the great submergence which closed the second continental or antediluvian period. There is, in any case, no evidence of any later occupancy than that by the early people whose *débris* is enclosed in the stalagmite.

I may remark here that the knives in these caves are made of the flint found in the immediate vicinity, and that they differ in no respect from those of the later caves and rock shelters of this region, except in being a little broader and more massive (Fig. 10). They may be compared with those

of the so-called "Mourterian" age of Mortillet, to which reference will be made in the sequel, and which in Western Europe was also an antediluvian age, in which the hairy rhinoceros and its contemporaries still survived.

On the border of St. George's Bay, between the caves and Ant Elias, I observed, near the shore, and at no great elevation, a band of red loam and stones in which were a few similar flint flakes. The red earth in question is a *remanié* deposit derived from an older red earth of Pleistocene date,<sup>1</sup> and which contains no stones or flints. The flakes contained in this *remanié* earth may have been washed out of old caverns, or from the surface of the ground at higher levels; but probably at a period historically very ancient.

The breccia of these caves is a somewhat hard and obdurate material, from which it is difficult to extract the remains which it contains; and the bones, and sometimes the flint knives, break across more easily than the matrix. We obtained teeth which Professor Boyd Dawkins assures me are those of *Rhinoceros tichorhinus*, the so-called woolly or hairy rhinoceros, and teeth of a species of deer, and a wild ox.<sup>2</sup> We saw no shells or remains of marine animals; and the bones, which had all been broken, probably to extract their marrow, seemed to indicate, by their large sizes, that the cave men had subsisted principally on the rhinoceros and the wild ox. It was also observable that all the bones were those of the head and limbs, indicating that the hunters had dismembered their game where it was killed, and had carried the best pieces to their cave. The

<sup>1</sup> See Chap. VIII.

<sup>2</sup> The species recorded by Tristram, Lartet, and others, as found in the more ancient breccia of the Nahr-el-Kelb pass, are, in addition to *Rhinoceros tichorhinus*, the aurochs (*Bos primigenius*), the bison (*Bos priscus*), the reindeer (*Cervus taraudus*), and the fallow-deer (*Cervus dama*). Of these, teeth referable to the rhinoceros, aurochs, and fallow-deer are in my own collection; the others I have not seen. So far as I observed, the teeth of the rhinoceros are the most abundant.

flint knives are of the usual form, flat on one side, and with two or three faces on the other. They are sometimes pointed, and in that case may have been used as daggers or spears. A few specimens have rounded or hollow ends, chipped to serve as scrapers (Figs. 10, 11). There are also remains of cores, and many small chips, showing that the implements were made on the spot. A fragment of a stone hammer of diorite was also found, very much decayed, through decomposition of its fel-



FIG. 11.—Dart or pointed Knife (Nahr-el-Kelb).—(a) section.

spar, and it is observable that some of the flint flakes are quite white and opaque, while others are perfectly fresh. This may depend on the quality of the stone, or the degree of exposure to which it has been subjected. As an illustration of the manner of using the ruder forms of these flints as weapons, I figure, after Putnam, two specimens handled in wood (Fig. 12). They are modern, and from California and Tasmania.

Most of the bones in the breccia at Nahr-el-Kelb are white, and destitute of organic matter; only a few small pieces

are blackened, as if by the action of fire. No charcoal or remains of hearths were observed.

It will be observed that the great antiquity of these deposits does not depend on the mere hardness or amount of the containing stalagmite. This material is hard when first deposited, and, as Dawkins has shown in the case of the Ingleborough cave, may, in favourable circumstances, be formed quite rapidly. The evidence of antiquity depends on the character

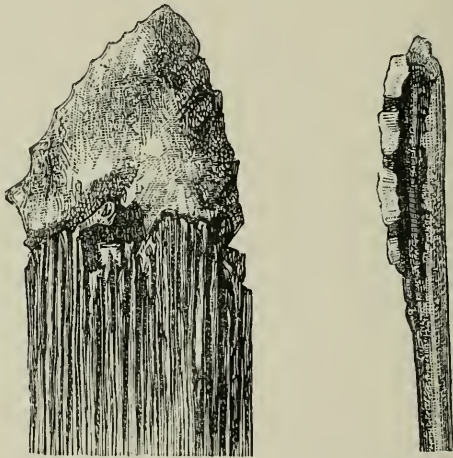


FIG. 12.—Rude Flints handled in wood (after Putnam). The larger from California ; the smaller ( $\frac{1}{3}$  nat. size) from Tasmania.

of the animal remains and of the implements, and on the geographical inferences deducible from these. The implements are of a somewhat different style from those of Ant Elias and other deposits of that age. They are larger, bolder, and of more massive character, as if the work of a stronger and ruder race. Then the bones are not those of the modern animals. They are largely those of a species of rhinoceros, now extinct, which inhabited Europe and Western Asia in the Post-glacial period.



This is the hairy or woolly rhinoceros,<sup>1</sup> so called from a specimen found in the frozen soil of Siberia, and showing that this species, unlike its modern representatives, was clothed with hair, fitting it for a cold climate. This animal makes its first appearance in Europe in the Pleistocene age, and became extinct before the historic period, along with the mammoth and several other animals, the cause of whose disappearance we shall have to consider in the sequel. Now, at the time when the woolly rhinoceros lived in the Mediterranean area, it was in the condition of continental elevation and division into two basins, referred to in the last chapter (Fig. 1). At that time, consequently, the caves of Nahr-el-Kelb were not on the edge of the sea, but looked out on a broad wooded plain, through which the Nahr-el-Kelb and other Lebanon rivers ran sluggishly westward, and probably coalesced into larger streams. Our cave-dwellers, therefore, lived near the river valley, but remote from the sea, and could hunt the rhinoceros over a wide and fertile plain, suited to that animal, extending, perhaps, as far as Cyprus, but now submerged. A species of deer and a bovine animal were also among those which they used as food, and probably other creatures as yet unrecognised in the fragmentary material they have left. The plains which supported the woolly rhinoceros were no doubt inhabited by many other quadrupeds, some of them living, others now extinct; but the hunters of the Nahr-el-Kelb caves may have preferred the rhinoceros, or may have found it more abundant or more easily killed than other animals, just as in the western plains of America the bison was the prevalent food, or as, farther north, the reindeer or cariboo is the principal animal hunted.

The facts above referred to are not confined to the Lebanon. I have merely selected the Nahr-el-Kelb caves because they occur in a region in which human history extends very far back. All over Southern and Western Europe are found simi-

<sup>1</sup> *Rhinoceros tichorhinus*.

lar deposits in caves and river gravels. In the Cresswell caves, for example, explored by Dawkins and Millo, flint implements are associated with teeth and bones of *Rhinoceros tichorhinus*, and with those of the hare, bison, and deer. I may add that at Tyre old Phenician tombs are said to have been excavated in breccia, with flint knives similar to those of Nahr-el-Kelb, and that in many other places in Syria remains probably of prehistoric man have been found, though often in circumstances which render their date uncertain. In all these localities there is evidence of man in the same state of barbarism, and existing under geographical conditions different in some degree from those prevailing at present, and earlier than the earliest post-diluvian colonization of the country. In the case of our Nahr-el-Kelb caves we have the proof that man existed in the Lebanon at an earlier period than the Phenicians or the Flint folk who immediately preceded them, and under a different condition of the country; and as the Phenician colonization occurred not very long after the Biblical deluge, these more ancient men must at least have been antediluvian, and the antediluvian period in their case must have coincided with that more elevated condition of the continents to which I have already referred. In other words, the men of the mammoth age, the palæocosmic men, or men of the Palanthropic age, were antediluvians.

Unfortunately I have been able to obtain no skulls or bones of the Lebanon antediluvians; but we may safely infer that they resembled those found in deposits of similar age in Europe. We may also infer that they were bold and skilful hunters, clothed in dresses of skin, knowing the use of fire and probably the art of carving in bone, the art of sewing garments, and other primitive arts; but otherwise rude and barbarous. These palæocosmic men bring geological and archæological science into direct contact with the lands of the Bible; and that we may understand the significance of this contact, it will

be necessary to glance at what is known of the men of caves and river gravels elsewhere.

The question here naturally occurs—Is there any definite separation between the Palanthropic and Neanthropic ages corresponding to a diluvial cataclysm? This subject has been discussed by Dupont, Quatrefages, Dawkins, and others, and the evidence has recently been summed up by Howorth in his work, “The Mammoth and the Flood.” Without anticipating here facts to be noted in the sequel, I may say—(1) That there is evidence that great physical and geographical changes occurred at the close of the Palanthropic age; (2) That these were accompanied by the disappearance of many of the larger and more important species, included in the animal population of the older period; (3) That in many parts of the northern hemisphere an earthy deposit of great extent and of considerable thickness intervenes between the deposits of the Palanthropic and Neanthropic ages; (4) That the cases in which these seem to pass into each other are usually explicable by local accidents.

Very different opinions have been held by geologists and archæologists respecting the nature of the transition from the Palæocosmic to the Neocosmic age, whether abrupt or gradual. The great mass of evidence accumulated by Howorth<sup>1</sup> tells very strongly in favour of the former view; and he has shown that a preponderating amount of testimony of those best informed as to the details, tends in this direction, though the strong prejudice in favour of an excessive application of the law of uniformity has held back geologists from its candid acceptance. On the whole, the thoroughness of the change, as evidenced by the disappearance of many animal forms, and by great changes of physical geography and climate, as well as, in some regions at least, the replacement of one race of men by another differing in physique, and to some extent in arts and

<sup>1</sup> “The Mammoth and the Flood.”

customs, cannot be denied. It may further be affirmed that the great submergence by which these changes were effected was locally so sudden, that it took full effect within the lifetime of one generation of animals. This is the necessary deduction from the entombment of so great quantities of mammalian remains of all ages in Siberia and elsewhere, as the last traces of the greater Pleistocene species.

It is, however, to be observed that, as in other instances of change and extinction of species, the circumstances would be locally different. Wherever men or animals survived the catastrophe, there would be no absolute break between the ante- and post-diluvian times. Wherever all were destroyed, and especially where some interval of time elapsed before the population was renewed, the evidences of change would be more striking. Further, in places where the denuding agency of water had removed the old surface, or where, on the other hand, the local circumstances led to great deposition of sediment, with or without animal remains, there would be greater evidence of physical change than in places where the inundation was more quiet. Such local differences may in part account for the discordant conclusions arrived at by observers of the phenomena.

One of the best opportunities to obtain in an easy manner an acquaintance with the earliest known races of men, is to be had by a visit to the old *château* of St. Germain, one hour by rail from the modern city of Paris, contrasting perhaps as strongly as any place in the world with the old prehistoric times, yet influenced by inheritance from them more than itself knows. This ancient royal residence, which, among other uses, has served as a place of abode for our exiled Stuart kings, has been converted into a museum of prehistoric and antiquarian objects, illustrating more particularly the antiquities of France from the Roman period back to the earliest known races of men, whose remains in some districts of France are specially abundant. The prehistoric collections include those of Boucher

de Perthes, Lartet, and many other well-known French archæologists, and are arranged to illustrate the several types of primitive art distinguished by Professor Mortillet, and supposed by him to indicate distinct and successive periods.

The objects regarded as the oldest are those of the so-called "Achulian type," first discovered by M. de Perthes in the gravel of the Somme valley, near Amiens. The pits at this place, which I visited several years ago, are in beds of river gravel, but at such an elevation as to show that the river, when in flood, extended to a height of 150 feet above the present level. They belong to that pluvial or rainy period which succeeded the glacial age and connected it with the modern time, when the *débris* deposited by the ice age had not yet been fully swept out of the river channel, and when the climate was colder than at present, as evidenced by heavy ice-borne stones imbedded in the gravel. Let us mark this time as a geological date, for it is near to the beginning of that same antediluvian age which we have indicated as the time of our early Lebanon men.

The most characteristic implements of this age are those which antiquaries now call by the appropriate French word "haches," an ancient onomatopoetic word common to most languages, and very likely radically the same with that which the palæocosmic men themselves used. These *haches* are fragments of flint from the nodules found in the chalk and chalk gravels, which have been roughly trimmed into oval, or flattened ovoid, or pointed forms by blows on their edges. In some cases such a *hache* may have been merely a roughly hewn block to be afterwards trimmed into a more perfect instrument; but in its ordinary form it was a most useful tool or weapon. Held in the hand, it could be used as an axe or digger; handled in wood or bone, or, as in some specimens of later date in this museum, fitted first into a bone socket, and this into a wooden handle, it was a battle-axe, a hatchet, or a hoe, as necessity

might require. In the Cambridge Museum there is a skull of a fossil ox, with one of these *haches* deeply sunk into the bone, doubtless in deadly combat between the furious wild bull and some mighty hunter of the olden time. The best material for implements of this kind is flint; but in districts where flint does not occur, they have been made of quartzite and other hard stones, and of the harder slates. The *hache* is world-wide in its use, and to this day flints of similar form are used to arm the rude threshing implements and graters used in some countries.<sup>1</sup>

With the *haches* are found flint flakes representing another palæocosmic implement. The flake is a narrow splinter of flint, flat on one side, and angular or with three faces on the other, and sharp at the edges, sometimes square at each end, sometimes coming to a point at one end. It is produced by breaking a large flint into a prismatic core or nucleus, and then detaching flakes from the angles of this core by sharp blows. The process is simple, and similar to that by which gun-flints and flints for strike-lights are still made, but it requires good material and dexterity to produce long, thin, sharp-edged flakes of the best quality. Such flakes, used in the hand or fitted into a handle, are most efficient instruments for skinning animals and cutting up their flesh, and by working teeth on one or both edges, they may be used as saws. The pointed ones fitted into the end of a shaft are arrows, javelins, or spears. They were used in historic times by the Egyptians and other early peoples to arm the edges of sickles, and as knives, arrow-heads, scrapers, or piercers. Quatrefages figures a human vertebra from a prehistoric interment, in which one of these flakes is firmly fixed on the inner side, having evidently been driven through the body of the man with a force almost equal to that of a rifle bullet. Such flakes have been

<sup>1</sup> Mason describes a modern threshing sledge from Tunis and a modern grater from Honduras as so armed.—*Science*, Dec. 10, 1886.

used in every country from the earliest times. They have been made wherever flint occurs, and have been articles of trade to other districts. They were used in modern times by Mexican barbers to shave their customers, and by the Hebrews and Egyptians to perform surgical operations. They are to be found in all the sites of early human habitations in the East, and appear for the latest time in the Bible in the circumcision of the children of Israel after crossing the Jordan under Joshua.<sup>1</sup>

Near to these Acheul remains in our museum are specimens from the districts of France where the chalk flints do not occur, and where the flint folk made their *haches*, with greater difficulty no doubt, but in the same form, of quartzite from the older rocks. Dawkins has ascertained a similar fact in the Cresswell caves in England, whose inhabitants at first used quartzite, but later, either by trade or extended exploration, obtained flint from the south of England. In the Cresswell caves and in the French caves of the Ardèche, the people who used these rude implements fed, like our Lebanon men, on the woolly rhinoceros and his contemporaries.

Next we have cases filled with flint implements from the caves of the Dordogne, supposed to be a little later in date. Here we have, along with the rude flint implements of the previous age, others worked by minute chipping on the edges into regular arrow-heads, similar to those used in modern times by the American Indians. We have also implements, or handles of implements, of reindeer antler elaborately carved, sometimes with admirably designed figures of animals. These constitute what De Mortillet calls the "type Soloutrienne," and there is an intermediate type—"Moustierienne,"—which, however, differs but little, except in the coarser work of its arrow-heads. These arrow-heads evidence a new style of stone-chipping. The flake is broken off at a single blow, but

<sup>1</sup> Joshua v. 3.

if it is to be worked into an arrow-head, it is subjected to an elaborate chipping of the edges, not by blows, but by pressure of a bone or metal implement, so as to detach minute flakelets from the edges, and thus gradually work it into shape. This is an art requiring skill and practice as well as patience. It has been practised by all the nations which have used spears and arrows of stone. A few examples of flakes, modified to be used as scrapers, show that it was known to the oldest men, but it was brought to perfection in France by the early men of Soloutre and the Dordogne.

Lastly, we have the type "Magdalenienne" of Mortillet, from the cavern of that name, in the collections from which we find mortars for grinding, flat stone hammers, beautiful bone harpoons, and neatly made bone needles. These implements are on a level with those of the modern Esquimaux and the agricultural village Indians of pre-Columbian America.

All these remains are believed to belong to the earliest prehistoric period of France; and since they refer to a time when the mammoth and tichorhine rhinoceros and their companions were still extant, they are properly antediluvian. They show only the more durable objects left by these people, and prove some progress in the arts of life. The needles, and the marks carved on the arms of some of the figures executed in bone or ivory, would seem to indicate clothing and even embroidery. The numerous and well-made harpoons show the capture of large fish, and consequently the possession of canoes. Pieces of ivory, marked with lines at different distances, perhaps indicate gambling-sticks like those of the modern Haidas of the west coast of America, or some attempts at numeration and records of events. The great station of Soloutre seems to have been a fortified village, whose inhabitants were buried in stone-walled graves; and the abundance of skeletons of horses has been supposed to indicate that this animal has been domesticated. Lastly, there would seem to



be no doubt that the art of the potter was invented during this Palanthropic age. We shall find that all these arts were practised as far west as France before the great flood which so much reduced the habitable earth and its inhabitants.

The St. Germain Museum goes on to exhibit admirable series of remains of the ages of polished stone, of bronze and of iron, in France; but we must pause here for the present.

Mortillet has argued very forcibly in favour of a succession of periods of palæocosmic man in France, as indicated by a gradual progress in the arts; and his views are embodied in the arrangement of this museum. It must be admitted, however, that all belong to one fauna and one set of geographical conditions; and that, though in certain localities a gradual progress in art is indicated by the remains in lower and upper beds, yet there is no evidence of distinct successive epochs. It is not improbable that the local differences observed may belong, not so much to successive time as to distinct tribes, differing somewhat in their arts. An interesting map of France, exhibited in one of the rooms, and showing the localities of the various finds, lends countenance to this view. The map seems to show a local grouping of the several types. There would seem to have been (1) a Pyrenean tribe along the slopes of the Pyrenees—a hill tribe, within whose district the celebrated station of Aurignac occurs; (2) a Rhone and Loire tribe, inhabiting the lower part of the former river, and part of the valley of the Loire; (3) a small sub-Alpine tribe near the Lake of Geneva, and especially at its southern end; (4) a Jura tribe from Soloutre, along the mountains to the head of the Somme; (5) a Seine and Somme tribe, extending from near Paris to the Atlantic; (6) a Meuse tribe, inhabiting the Meuse above Maestricht. These several patches of human habitation, separated by hills and forests, may have been occupied by tribes having little intercourse with each other; perhaps often hostile, and differing in the resources of their districts and their mode

of using them. This is an interpretation of these French remains, based on what is observed in the case of American tribes in modern times.

We naturally look in such a museum for some remains of the men themselves, as well as their works. Specimens of this kind are fortunately not wanting in France and Belgium, and they indicate two races, or perhaps more properly varieties of one race, as contemporaneous or locally successive in France. These have been called respectively the "Canstadt," or Neanderthal race, and the "Cro-magnon," or Engis race.

The best-known examples of the first are the two human skeletons described by Fraipont and Lohest, from the floor of the Grotto of Spy, on the river Orneau, near Namur, Belgium.<sup>1</sup> They were found associated with flint implements, referred by the discoverers to the Mousterian type, as indicated above, and with a single splinter of bone shaped into a point. With these were abundant bones of *Rhinoceros tichorhinus*, and bones of the horse, stag, reindeer, fossil ox, mammoth, bear, badger, and hyena. Immediately above the skeletons was a layer in which, with similar stone implements, there occurred numerous well-made ornaments and implements in ivory, bone, and antler. That these belonged to the same or the immediately succeeding period, is shown by their association with the bones of the same animals found below, though they show a continued progress in art, or an increasing wealth and prosperity of the people inhabiting the cave. With respect to this last consideration, which is often overlooked, it is to be observed that a first settlement of a rude people in a new locality is necessarily a time of poverty and comparative scarcity of utensils; and as the tribe establishes itself, and becomes more numerous and better acquainted with the resources within reach, or perhaps connected with other tribes by commerce, its wealth and property increase. It is further to be noticed,

<sup>1</sup> L'Homme Contemporain du Mammouth, à Spy, Namur, 1887.

that should a tribe be exterminated by accident, disease, or war, or obliged suddenly to emigrate, the last deposit left by it will necessarily be richer in objects of art than any previous one.

The men of the cave of Spy were of the Canstadt type. They constitute a peculiar race, not precisely similar to any modern one, though all of their peculiarities may be found in certain races, and in occasional individuals. The stature was short, or not tall, the body thick-set and muscular, with a somewhat bandy-legged gait, such as is seen in savages frequenting forests. The head is long but low, with projecting eyebrows and receding forehead, but with a somewhat large brain case, large orbits, high and wide cheek bones, giving a broad face; jaws massive, the lower jaw receding abruptly, so as to produce a receding chin. These are not prepossessing characters for early European man; but they are entirely human and not simian, and exist to-day in certain tribes of American Indians, Negroes, and Australians, though in these with a less full development of brain. It is to be observed, however, that in some individuals the characters are less extreme, and pass into those of the type next to be noticed — a fact observed in the skulls of some American tribes, and in individuals of higher races. It is said, for example, that Robert Bruce had a Canstadt skull, and so had St. Mansuy, Bishop of Toul, and a modern Danish statesman, Kai-Likké, according to Quatrefages.<sup>1</sup> The figure facing this chapter, which is reproduced from my work, "Fossil Men," will show the type of head referred to.

If one were to infer anything as to the qualities of the Canstadt or Neanderthal man, we should say that he was active, energetic, observant, cunning, not unlikely bold and adventurous, prompt to action rather than to thought, keenly observant, but rude, possibly cruel, and disposed to deeds of violence.

<sup>1</sup> Quatrefages, "Homme fossile."

His contemporary, and locally his successor, the Engis, or Cro-magnon man, was of superior style—tall, powerfully built, with a less repulsive countenance and good forehead;<sup>1</sup> his brain-case was larger than that of European men of to-day, and he was much on a par with the larger and better developed races of interior and Northern Asia and North America—a man fit to make his way in a world larger than the present, and full of great and formidable beasts. These men were probably better artists and more highly advanced in culture, though still, so far as known, rude and low in civilization. It is to be observed, however, that since we know that the lower and probably more fertile tracts of the antediluvian world are still under water, we may be ignorant of the most advanced of the men of the mammoth age.

A fine example of the skeleton of this race of men exists in the museum of the Jardin des Plantes, where I had the pleasure of examining it in 1883. This is the celebrated Mentone man, found in a cave at that place, under at least eight feet of culinary *débris* and other accumulations, and associated with chipped flint implements, and bones of animals extinct as well as living. At one time doubts were thrown on the age of this skeleton, but a recent discovery of another interment in these caves, to be noticed immediately, removes these doubts. The bones of the Mentone man lie as they were found, imbedded in a hardened, almost stony mass of earthy *débris*, and are those of a tall, strong, well-formed man, with a remarkably well-developed head. Some shells of the pearly *Nerita* of the Mediterranean attached to the skull, show that he wore a head-dress or helmet ornamented with these shells. A bone pin was placed in front of this head-dress as if to support a plume or other ornament, which has perished. Around the edge of the cap were shell pendants ground into ovate shapes, and at the back are a few flint flakes, well formed

<sup>1</sup> Cut facing p. 47.

and pointed, possibly the points of small arrows stuck in the hair. In front of the face is a little rectangular space, possibly the mark of a perished box or casket, filled with specular iron ore, which lies around, and was, no doubt, intended for war paint. The head and bones of the face remind one of those of our Iroquois or Huron Indians. The teeth are very perfect, but much worn, especially the incisors, indicating age and coarse food, or dried meat containing sand. The skeleton does not lie on a level surface, but somewhat inclined, with the head and shoulders higher than the feet, and in an easy and natural position, giving the impression that the man had laid down to rest when near death, and had passed away quietly without pain, and that his body had been left as it lay, and perhaps merely covered with earth retained by a few stones at the sides, so as to conceal and protect it.

A second skeleton was discovered in one of the Mentone caverns in March, 1884, under circumstances which seem to remove the doubts that have been suggested as to the date of the first skeleton.<sup>1</sup>

Next in interest to the Museum of St. Germain is the Royal Museum in Brussels, where the great collections, principally from the caves of the valley of the Lesse, are admirably arranged, though in a space too confined, considering their great interest and importance. The caverns in the picturesque limestone cliffs of the valley of the Lesse were apparently favourite places of resort to prehistoric men, and by Schmerling and his successors have been explored with great care. More especially the researches of Dupont in these deposits are worthy of much praise, as having been conducted in a most careful and scientific manner.

Dupont does not precisely follow the French archæologists in his arrangement, but contents himself with a threefold division of his prehistoric treasures. First, there are the remains of

<sup>1</sup> Wilson, "Proceedings Anthropol. Society," Oct., 1885.

the "mammoth age," found with the bones of that and other extinct creatures. Secondly, we have the *débris* of the "reindeer age," in which that species becomes prominent or dominant, instead of its gigantic predecessors. Lastly, there is the age of polished stone, gradually passing into those of bronze and iron. In accordance with this order the specimens are placed in cases, and large diagrams exposed on the walls show the arrangements and sequence of the deposits in which they were found.

The mammoth age of Dupont corresponds to the older Lebanon caves, and to the older cavern deposits of France and England; and the men of that age were the Canstadt and Cro-magnon men—palæocosmic or antediluvian men. In their time Belgium was a densely wooded country, inhabited by the mammoth and the hairy rhinoceros; and what is now the bed of the German Ocean was a great plain, over which the herds of these animals could migrate freely from north to south. At this time also the streams of the limestone districts had not cut their channels so deeply as at present, and they were much larger, especially in seasons of flood, so that caverns in the cliffs, now ninety feet above the river, were in times of great occasional floods inundated, and their floors covered with mud. This circumstance has preserved the sequence of deposits, since in some of these caves there are as many as six layers of inundation-mud covering successive layers of *débris*.

The remains of the reindeer age lie above those of the mammoth age, and in the style of their implements correspond rather with the newer Lebanon caves, and the later bone caves of France. The human bones associated with these deposits represent a small short-headed race, resembling the modern Lapps, and distinct from that of the mammoth age in Belgium. In their time the mammoth and its companions had disappeared locally, and the climate may have been colder, while the animals of Belgium seem to have resembled those

at present found in it, except that the reindeer and some other species now more northern were abundant ; but this may merely indicate a more wooded state of the country. It is likely, however, that in this period the climate was severe, and the limits of the land had probably contracted to smaller dimensions. These men are usually relegated by archæologists to the later part of the Palæocosmic age. The deposits containing their remains are stated by Dupont to be overlaid by the superficial clay which corresponds to the clay of the plains, and which separates them from the Neolithic deposits. They constitute, according to him, a transition group, marking changed conditions and probably migration of tribes from the North at the close of the Palanthropic or antediluvian age.<sup>1</sup>

The men who succeeded these and established the later stone and bronze ages, were the ancestors of the Iberians or Basques and other Turanian tribes which occupied Europe in post-diluvian times, and were the immediate predecessors of the Celts and other modern races. Their descendants yet locally survive, as in the Pyrenees, in Wales, and in the South of Ireland.

In our present inquiry we are chiefly concerned with the earlier palæocosmic men, and may notice what the Belgian collections tell us of them ; bearing in mind that they were probably the contemporaries of the people of the Nahr-el-Kelb caves, and of the antediluvians of the Bible history.

Perhaps the easiest way to understand these primitive men will be to follow Dupont in the exploration of some of the caverns, and we may select as specially instructive those of

<sup>1</sup> A remarkable skull from La Seille, in Southern France, now in the Lyons Museum, and said to belong to the mammoth age, resembles the later form of short-headed skull above referred to, though of somewhat higher type.

Goyet, situated on the Lesse, a little tributary of the river Meuse. These caverns are evidently portions of galleries excavated by subterranean waters, before the river had cut its present channel, and are of some extent and complexity. Their height above the present river is about fifteen mètres. In one of these caverns six distinct layers of fluvatile silt were observed, indicating as many inundations, all of these having apparently occurred in the mammoth age. The lowest bed seems to have afforded no remains. The next had skeletons of the cave lion and the cave bear. A specimen of the former was so perfect that it is now mounted in the museum. The next bed introduces traces of man, but in a peculiar relation. This bed is full of remains of hyenas and of bones of mammoth, rhinoceros, and other animals which have been gnawed by these carnivorous beasts. Among these are human bones, showing that one human body at least had been devoured by the hyenas. Thus these early remains indicate that the cave was at first a den of lions, bears, and hyenas, which may have inhabited the country before the advent of man, and which occupied the cave in the intervals of the river inundations. In the three remaining layers there is evidence that man himself occupied the cave, and left there quantities of bones broken for extraction of the marrow, *débris* of cooking, and various implements and ornaments. As now arranged in the museum, these objects may be summarized as follows, and constitute an interesting inventory of the household goods of an antediluvian tribe or family, or of such of these as could resist decay.

First, we have bones of twenty-three species of mammals, broken to extract their brain and marrow, and including the mammoth, rhinoceros, wild horse, reindeer, and cave bear. It is further observable that the bones of the larger animals are only those of the head and limbs, showing that these ancient hunters dismembered their game when it was killed, and



carried to their home only the choicer pieces. The head they valued for the brain, the tongue, and other rich morsels, and possibly also for the teeth ; the limbs, for their flesh and marrow-bones. Like other savage hunters, they no doubt extracted also the heart and liver ; but of these of course no trace remains. They were sufficiently strong and well-armed to slay the elephant, rhinoceros, lion, and bear, and could also capture the deer, chamois, wild goat, and fox—evidence that they could use darts, arrows, or lassos, or could contrive pitfalls and traps. They could even kill some species of birds. It may be noted here, that though the successive beds containing these remains may mark a considerable lapse of time, there is no evidence of any change in the physical condition of the country, or its animal population. Here, as in the Lebanon, there is no indication of the use of fish or shell-fish ; but the sea was far away, and the river fish were perhaps no more to the taste of these people than to that of the buffalo hunters of the western prairies. It is also interesting to observe that the deposits of this cave show the co-existence, in this vicinity, of animals now so remote from each other as the lion and hyena and the reindeer ; but it is to be borne in mind that the period was one of great continental plains, favouring migrations from north to south, like those of the bison and cariboo in the great plains of North America, and a period also of abundant forest shelter, and of a continental climate, warm and dry in summer, though cold in winter. As Dawkins has well maintained in the case of the English caves, and Howorth in that of the great deposits of this age in Siberia, these considerations explain the otherwise strange mixture of animals.<sup>1</sup> It is further of interest

<sup>1</sup> The movements of such animals as the bison, the reindeer, and the lemming, in modern times, show that some portion of the remarkable intermixture of forms of animal life, now restricted to different climates, may be accounted for by such migrations. On the other hand, as Howorth has well shown, the testimony of fossil plants and of land snails shows that

that of the great animals known to have existed in Europe in the Palæocosmic age, the only one not represented in these deposits is the hippopotamus. It is not impossible that this powerful and amphibious animal, if within reach of the primitive Belgian hunters, may have been able to defy their assaults. At a much later period the Book of Job represents it as invincible by man; and the early Egyptians evidently regarded its chase as one of the greatest possible achievements.

A collection of bones of small animals heaped at one side of the cave, referred to by Dupont, would, according to American analogies, represent a time at which it was occupied by women and children alone, when the men were absent on some expedition, or had been destroyed in war, and when the occupants, without able-bodied hunters, were obliged to subsist on such small animals as they could ensnare.

Secondly, the flint implements and weapons of the cave of Goyet are similar to those already referred to as found in the earlier French caves. It is to be observed, however, that the Belgian peoples of this district must have obtained their flint

the climatal conditions of the arctic and temperate regions were more uniform than at present, while the facilities for the dispersion of species over the land were much greater. Thus the palæocosmic or antediluvian world, though its climate was not so warm as in some previous periods, presented great facilities for the accommodation of an abundant and varied fauna and flora, and correspondingly great resources to those rude tribes of men which at this time spread themselves so widely.

As many as 135 species of mammals have been catalogued as contemporaries in Europe and Northern Asia of the mammoth and of palæocosmic man. They include nearly all the species now inhabiting those countries, with some, like the mammoth, now extinct, and others locally extinct, that is, existing beyond the European territory. Of the latter, some, like the musk-ox, have retired to the extreme north, while others, like the hippopotamus and the hyena, have retreated southward. It is this great richness and variety of the palanthropic fauna that has seemed so puzzling to naturalists and geologists.

by excursions or by trade, from the chalk districts at some distance from their homes. This material would therefore be valuable, and consequently native quartzite was used for the rougher kinds of implements. It is curious to note here that these antediluvian peoples were sometimes dependent on foreign countries for the knives used to cut the flesh for their daily meals, as well as for their most effective weapons. Thus far, at least, they were free traders; but, as was natural, they used bone and ivory for as many purposes as possible. Their piercers, dart-points, needles, and sometimes elaborately carved skull-crackers of antler (called "*bâtons de commandement*" by the French antiquaries), were similar to those in universal use in primitive times in North America.

Thirdly, ornament was not neglected by this ancient people. To what extent they used feathers, colouring, or embroidery on their head-dresses and robes, we cannot know; but they made collars and necklaces of pierced canines of the wolf, the fox, and the deer, and of the incisors of the horse and ox; and these may, as in the case of the American Indians, have been at once ornaments and trophies of the chase. One collar or necklace in the Brussels Museum is deserving of special notice. In some of the calcareous tertiary beds of Champagne, there are long spiral shells, *Turrielle*, about an inch in length, replaced by a beautiful white and translucent agate or chalcodony; and it is curious that similar *Turritelle*, preserved in the same way, occur in the cretaceous limestone of Palestine. One hundred and eighty of these beautiful shells have been collected and cleaned, and strung into a collar which any modern lady might regard as an elegant ornament. The only colouring matter found in these deposits is that universal one, red oxide of iron, which they may have used as war-paint, or to ornament their skin robes. Lastly, in this connection, there are phalanges of deer pierced so as to form a sharp-sounding whistle, which might be used as a call, or as a simple instru-

ment of music. It is stated, I do not know whether on good grounds, that whistles of this kind have been found in French caves, which give four musical notes corresponding to the tetrachord of primitive European music.

Fourthly, and this is a most important note, Dupont records in caves of the mammoth age, charcoal and the ashes of fires, and fragments of rude earthen vessels. It has been confidently asserted that the palæocosmic men were ignorant of the potters' art, but this is now known to be an error. It is to be observed, however, that local circumstances might determine whether certain tribes would make pottery or use closely woven baskets, gourds, wooden vessels, etc., for holding and cooking their food. Modern tribes which do not make pottery can boil meat by placing it in water and heating this with hot stones.

In the cave of Goyet there were no interments of human skeletons, but, as already stated, skulls of the Canstadt and Engis types are found in the Belgian caves of the same date, and associated with similar remains.

Before leaving this cave, it may be well to observe that, as it was occasionally inundated, it would scarcely be a safe or comfortable place of continuous residence. It may therefore have been only an occasional haunt of hunting parties, whose ordinary abodes may have been at some distance, and perhaps of very different character from caverns. This supposition also accords with the fact that so few indications of sepulture occur in connection with these earlier cave deposits, though sepulchral caves of the reindeer age are known. In these last, deposits of useful and ornamental articles were made with the dead, and this seems also to have been the case in the interments of the mammoth age, as, for example, in those of Mentone. This gives us the one religious idea which we can collect from the remains of these primitive people, that of immortality and of the persistence in some way of the spirit of

man beyond the grave. The whole of the known creed of palæocosmic man is that summed up by Lyell in his quotation of the lines,—

“Bring here the last gifts, and with these  
The last lament be said ;  
Let all that pleased and yet may please  
Be buried with the dead.”

One remark of the Belgian geologists must be noticed here. The deposits of the mammoth age, and it would seem of the reindeer age as well, are covered with beds of yellow earth, brick earth, and earth with angular stones, which antedate the later stone age and bronze age. These deposits constitute the ordinary soil of the country, and at all levels, and they are evidently of the same nature with the superficial gravels, soils, and loess to be found resting on the Pleistocene deposits everywhere in the northern hemisphere, and which have poured into all the old caverns of the Palæocosmic age. They are not to be confounded with the ordinary glacial deposits which in northern districts underlie them. They are not river deposits, because no possible extension of the river beds could overflow the places where they lie, or bring the stones from very distant localities which the gravels often contain. They prove, as Howorth, the Duke of Argyll, and the writer have argued, that at the close of the Palæocosmic age a deluge of water swept over our continents and caused the physical break between the earlier and later human ages. This great cataclysm was preceded in Europe at least by a gradual refrigeration and a progressive extinction of the larger animals, and was followed by a diminished size of the continents, and by the advent over the depopulated surface of a more limited fauna and a new race of men. That it must have been this great cataclysm which has fixed itself in the traditions of all races of men as the historical deluge we can scarcely doubt.

To complete our review of palæocosmic man in Europe, I

may mention the interesting collection of Abbé Daoust from Soloutre, now in the Museum of Lyons, and which the director kindly permitted me to examine with care. Soloutre is a station in the east of France, where a large tribe of the Palæo-cosmic age seems to have lived, and which gives an illustration of a village community of that age, as distinguished from a mere cavern shelter or river-side station. The Soloutre station, though founded and primarily occupied by antediluvian man, has been tenanted by later men down to the present time. I shall refer only to the objects apparently of most ancient date. The older skulls of Soloutre are of the Cro-magnon type—the sockets of the eyes perhaps not so long as in the more typical skulls of the race. The horse, whose remains are found so abundantly here, is a large-headed and short-limbed variety. The abundance of remains of this animal, and the fact that entire skeletons are found, have been variously explained. Some have supposed that the Soloutrians had tame horses; others, —and I believe Abbé Daoust is of this opinion,—that they took advantage of a crag in the vicinity to form a corral, by means of which herds of wild horses were driven over the crag and destroyed. The bones of the reindeer are very numerous also, and there are teeth and tusks of the mammoth. The flint implements are very varied. Some are as rude as those of St. Acheul. Others are finely worked into lances six inches long, and the French archæologists believe that this indicates a long time of occupation and improvement in art. There are also flint arrow-heads, but these are supposed to be superficial, as are certain rounded stone hammers and rudely polished axes. There are many well-made bone piercers and spears, also bone handles with the figure of the reindeer carved on them, teeth of cave bear, shells of *Purpura*, *Cerithium*, and *Cardium*, and flat stones perforated for suspension.

These Soloutrian remains, though they show the difficulty in such circumstances of separating modern from more ancient

objects, are of special interest in many respects. If the Soloutrians entrapped horses by fences or corrals, they probably preserved the flesh as dried meat or pemmican for future use, a habit which would also serve to account for the great quantities of broken bones of the reindeer found in some French caves, and for the numerous bone needles, which may have been used in stringing strips of meat to dry, or in making pemmican bags of the skin. If they had actually tamed the horse, they could use this in hunting other animals, and might also, like the Kirghis of Northern Asia, slaughter horses for food.

The special value of the Soloutre station is, that it shows that the palæocosmic men were not all cave-dwellers, but that they had also villages; and it may well be that even the Soloutre station does not give an adequate idea of their better "cities" or fortified towns.

I have dwelt at some length on geological and archæological collections representing the antediluvian age, as introductory to any correct appreciation of the Biblical account of it, and its relation to Bible lands. Similar illustrations could also have been obtained from the great British collections, like those of the British Museum and the Universities, and from the remarkable private collection accumulated by that accomplished student of the ages of stone, Dr. John Evans, at his residence at Hemel-Hempstead, and which I had the pleasure of examining under his guidance. In this collection also, as well as in the great collections of the National Museum at Washington, there are perhaps the best opportunities of studying the similarity of the stone and bone implements of all countries and periods—similarities with minute yet well-marked differences, which Evans has perhaps done more than any other person to define and illustrate.

It now becomes necessary to make some excursions into the domains of biology and geology, in order to familiarize

ourselves with the conclusions or speculations as to the origin and date of primitive man which have been based on such facts as those above stated, and which may serve to aid us in connecting them with Bible lands and Bible chronology.

It may have been expected that the cave-hunting and other researches noticed in the previous pages would have thrown some light on the absolute origin of man as a denizen of the earth ; but the result in this respect is somewhat disappointing. In the bones and implements of the caves and gravels man appears before us as man, and tells us nothing as to how he first appeared upon the earth. The speculations as to the derivation of man from lower animals often obtruded by popular writers on a too credulous public, and sometimes even confidently stated as if established results of science, have as yet no basis in archæology or geology, since no transitional form between man and beast has been discovered. Even Haeckel, the great German apostle of the evolution of man, has to admit in his imaginary table of derivation two missing links still unknown to science. That man, with his physical peculiarities and high spiritual endowments, could have originated spontaneously or accidentally from any inferior animal known to us, is simply incredible. As to the manner in which it pleased the Divine Maker to produce the bodily frame of the first man, we have as yet no information further than the fact that the human organism is in a general way on the same plan with that of the higher animals, and the materials thereof the same dust of the earth of which they are made. It is well for scientific inquiry to look for intermediate links between man and lower animals ; but they must be discovered before we can discuss their relations, or the question whether they were suddenly or gradually produced.

In point of fact it cannot be disguised that, though it is possible to pick out some series of animal forms, like the horses and camels referred to by some palæontologists, which



simulate a genetic order, the general testimony of palæontology is on the whole adverse to the ordinary theories of evolution, whether applied to the vegetable or to the animal kingdom. This the writer has elsewhere endeavoured to show; but he may refer here to the labours of Barrande, perhaps unrivalled in extent and accuracy, which show that in the leading forms of life in the older geological formations the succession is not such as to correspond with any of the received theories of derivation.<sup>1</sup> Even evolutionists, when sufficiently candid, admit their case not proven by geological evidence. Gaudry, one of the best authorities on the Tertiary mammalia, admits the impossibility of suggesting any possible derivation for some of the leading groups, and Saporta, Mivart, Parker, and Le Conte fall back on periods of rapid or paroxysmal evolution, or of "metamorphosis" as it has been called, scarcely differing from the idea of creation under law, or mediate creation.

Thus the utmost value which can be attached to argument from analogy would be, that it suggests a possibility that the processes which we see carried on in the evolution of the individual may, in the laws which regulate them, be connected in some way, more or less close, with those creative processes which, on the wider field of geological time, have been concerned in the production of the multitudinous forms of animal life. But this philosophy goes but a very little way toward any understanding of such relations, and in so far as man is concerned, we have absolutely no means of affiliating him with any lower ancestry. On the other hand, the earliest known men are not specifically distinct from their modern successors, so that there is no need to assume any diversity of origin for the races of men.

In so far, therefore, as biological analogy is concerned, and

<sup>1</sup> Those who wish to understand the real bearings of palæontology on evolution should study Barrande's "Memoirs on the Silurian Trilobites, Cephalopods, and Brachiopods."

as it is presented to us by its ablest advocates, we have no further light than that given in the statement of Genesis, that man is made of the dust of the ground as to his bodily frame, but possesses an in-breathing of the Almighty in his spiritual nature; and that wherever and however he came into existence, we have as yet no clue to the nature of the process. We may turn now to the light afforded by geology.

No one in the English-speaking world has done more to elucidate the history of primitive man in Europe than my friend, Professor Boyd Dawkins, of Manchester, whose rich collections in the Museum of Owen's College admirably illustrate his success as a "cave-hunter," in bringing to light the remains of other and more primitive cave-hunters. In one of his recent books, "Early Man in Britain," he gives an excellent summary of the facts relating to the geological position of the earliest men; and though I must differ from him somewhat in the classification of the deposits which he describes, his arrangement of the facts may be taken as the best guide in this discussion.

The Tertiary or Kainozoic period, the last of the four great "times" into which the earth's geological history is usually divided, and that to which man and the mammalia belong, was ingeniously subdivided by Lyell, on the ground of percentages of marine shells and other invertebrates of the sea. According to this method, which with some modification in details is still accepted, the *Eocene*, or dawn of the recent, includes those formations in which the percentage of modern species of marine animals does not exceed  $3\frac{1}{2}$ , all the other species found being extinct. The *Miocene* (less recent) includes formations in which the percentage of living species does not exceed 35, and the *Pliocene* (more recent) contains formations having more than 35 per cent. of recent species. To these three may be added the *Pleistocene*, in which the great majority of the species are recent, and the *Modern*, in

which all may be said to be living. Dawkins and Gaudry give us a division substantially the same with Lyell's, except that they prefer to take the evidence of the higher animals instead of the marine shells. The Eocene thus includes those formations in which there are remains of mammals or ordinary land quadrupeds, but none of these belong to recent species or genera, though they may be included in the same families and orders with the recent mammals. This is a most important fact, as we shall see, and the only exception to it is, that Gaudry and others hold that a few living genera, as those of the dog, civet, and marten, are actually found in the later Eocene. In the case of plants, Saporta shows that in Europe and the neighbouring regions modern genera of land-plants occur before the Eocene, in the last great group of the preceding period, and we have abundant American evidence of the same fact. As in the Mosaic narrative of creation, the higher plants precede by a long time the higher animals. The Miocene, on the same mammalian evidence, will include formations in which there are living genera of mammals, but no species which survive to the present time. The Pliocene and Pleistocene show living species, though in the former these are very few and exceptional, while in the latter they become the majority.

With regard to the geological antiquity of man, no geologist expects to find any human remains in beds older than the Tertiary, because in the older periods the conditions of the world do not seem to have been suitable to man, and because in these periods no animals nearly akin to man are known. On entering into the Eocene Tertiary we fail in like manner to find any human remains ; and we do not expect to find any, because no living genera of mammals are known in that period ; nor do we find in it remains of any of the animals, as the anthropoid apes for instance, most nearly allied to man. In the Miocene the case is somewhat different. Here

we have living genera at least, and we have large species of apes; but no remains of man have been discovered, if we except some splinters of flint found in beds of this age at Thenay in France, and which are too doubtful as to their source and origin to be accepted as evidence.

In the Pliocene, as Dawkins points out, though the facies of the mammalian fauna of Europe becomes more modern, and a few modern species occur, the climate becomes colder, and in consequence the apes disappear, so that the chances of finding fossil men are lessened rather than increased, in so far as the temperate regions are concerned. In Italy, however, Cocchi<sup>1</sup> has described a skull, an implement, and a notched bone, supposed to have come from Pliocene beds. I had the pleasure of studying this skull in Florence, in the winter of 1883. It consists only of the upper part, or calvarium. It is of long shape, large, and thick-walled, with well-developed forehead. Neither it nor the implement found with it seems to be of ancient type, and probably its association with Pliocene remains may be due to a landslip. The same museum contains a fine collection of the Pliocene and Pleistocene mammals of the Val d'Arno, which show a wonderfully rich land fauna in Italy in these periods. Among them is another fragment of a skull from post-glacial beds in Oviato. This is seemingly of the type of the oldest skulls of Belgium and France. As the writer has elsewhere pointed out,<sup>2</sup> similar and apparently fatal objections apply to the skull and implements alleged to have been found in Pliocene gravels in California. Dawkins informs us that in the Italian

<sup>1</sup> "Homme fossile dans l'Italie."

<sup>2</sup> The facts, or supposed facts, stated by Mr. Wallace in the *Nineteenth Century* (Nov., 1887), do not invalidate the above statements. In America, as I have shown in the Appendix to my work "Fossil Men," the evidence for Pliocene man disappears on investigation, and Wallace makes no allowance for the effects of the post glacial submergence, which in America, as in Europe, is an important factor.

Pliocene beds supposed to hold the remains of man, of twenty-one mammalia whose bones occur, all are extinct species except possibly one, a hippopotamus. This of course renders very unlikely, in a geological point of view, the occurrence of human remains in these beds.

In the Pleistocene deposits of Europe,—and this applies also to America,—we for the first time find a predominance of recent species of land animals. Here, therefore, we may look with some hope for remains of man and his works; and here, according to Dawkins, in the later Pleistocene, they are actually found. When we speak, however, of Pleistocene man, there arise some questions as to the classification of the deposits, which it seems to the writer that most geologists have not answered in accordance with geological facts, and a misunderstanding as to which may lead to serious error. This will be best understood by presenting an arrangement of these beds, which, after much study of the subject, I hold to be more natural than that usually adopted:—

I. PLEISTOCENE, including—

(a) *Early Pleistocene*, or First Continental period. Land very extensive, moderate climate.

(b) *Later Pleistocene*, or glacial, including Dawkins' "Mid Pleistocene." In this there was a great prevalence of cold and glacial conditions, and a great submergence of the northern land.

II. MODERN, or Period of Man and Modern Mammals, including—

(a) *Post-glacial*, Palanthropic<sup>1</sup> or Second Continental period, in which the land was again very extensive, and Palæocosmic man was contemporary with some great mammals, as the mammoth, now extinct, and the area of land in the northern hemisphere was greater than at present. This represents the Late Pleistocene of Dawkins. It was terminated by a great and very general subsidence, accompanied by the disappearance of Palæocosmic man and some large mammalia, and which may be identical with the historical deluge.

<sup>1</sup> I have used the term Palanthropic for the period itself, and Palæocosmic for the men of this oldest human period. The terms Neanthropic and Neocosmic will serve the same purpose for the later or more modern races.

(b) *Recent*, or Neanthropic, when the continents attained their present levels, existing races of men colonized Europe, and living species of mammals. This includes both the Prehistoric and Historic periods.

On geological grounds the above should clearly be our arrangement, though of course there need be no objection to such other subdivisions as historians and antiquaries may find desirable for their purposes. On this classification *the earliest certain indications of the presence of man in Europe, Asia, or America, so far as yet known, belong to the Modern period alone.* That man may have existed previously no one need deny, but no one can positively affirm on any ground of actual fact; while it cannot be denied that the physical conditions of the glacial period were of such a character as to render the existence of man, in the northern hemisphere at least, very unlikely.<sup>1</sup>

Inasmuch, however, as the human remains of the post-glacial epoch are those of fully developed men of high type, it may be said, and has often been said, that man in some lower stage of development *must* have existed at a far earlier period. That is, he must, if certain theories as to his evolution from lower animals are to be sustained. This, however,

<sup>1</sup> I have carefully considered the facts adduced by Dr. Hicks respecting the pre-glacial or inter-glacial appearance of man in Wales, but I cannot help suspecting that the supposed glacial deposits of the Ffynnon Bemw and Cae Gwyn caves may be *remanié* material, and the implements and other remains post-glacial. Prof. McKenny Hughes has also stated at length arguments in favour of this conclusion. Falsan in his recent work, "La Periode Glaciare," takes it for granted that man existed in France before the local glaciers of the Pleistocene had disappeared from France, and even supposes that in the so-called "Mousterian" period they considerably extended themselves, and that the climate was colder than in the previous "Achulcan" age. I cannot, however, find any good evidence to show that any of the works of man go back to the deposits of the glacial period proper, though it is quite possible that in the early post glacial and after the advent of man, the European glaciers may have been more continuous than at present, and that considerable changes of climate occurred.

is not a mode of reasoning in accordance with the methods of science. When facts fail to sustain certain theories, we are usually in the habit of saying, "So much the worse for the theories," not "So much the worse for the facts," or at least we claim the right to hold our judgment in suspense till some confirmatory facts are forthcoming.

To return to primitive man and the date of his appearance in Europe, an important question is raised by Dawkins in the attempt which he makes to discriminate between two races of men supposed to have existed successively in Europe in post-glacial times or in the Second Continental period. These he calls respectively "men of the river gravels" and "cave men," and they correspond approximately to the Achulean and Moustertian types of the French archæologists. The idea of such distinction seems to have arisen in his mind from the fact that in certain caverns in England the lowest stratum containing human remains affords only rude implements, while an upper stratum appears to testify to improved manufacture of stone tools and weapons, both strata being of so-called Palæolithic age; that is, belonging to the time when certain mammalia, now extinct, survived. Such facts, however, would rather seem to testify to local improvement in the condition of certain tribes than to any change of race. Such local improvement would be very likely to occur wherever a new locality was taken possession of by a small and wandering tribe, which in process of time might increase in numbers and in wealth, as well as in means of intercourse with other tribes. A similar succession would occur when caves used at first as temporary places of rendezvous by savage tribes became afterward places of residence, or were acquired by conquest on the part of tribes a little advanced, in the manner in which such changes are constantly taking place in rude communities.

Another point which Dawkins has admirably illustrated is the marked distinction between the old palæocosmic men of

the gravels and caves and the smaller race with somewhat differently formed skulls which succeeded them in the Later Stone age, after the great subsidence which terminated the Second Continental period and inaugurated the Modern epoch. The latter race he identifies with the Basques and ancient Iberians, a non-Aryan or Turanian people who once possessed nearly the whole of Europe, and included the rude Ugrians and Lapps of the North, the civilized Etruscans of the South, and the Iberians of the West, with allied tribes occupying the British Islands. This race, scattered and overthrown before the dawn of authentic history in Europe, by the Celts and other intrusive peoples, was unquestionably that which succeeded the now extinct palæocosmic races and constituted the men of the so-called "Neolithic period." It thus connects itself with the modern history of Europe, from which it is not separated by any great physical catastrophe like that dividing the older men of the mammoth age and the widely spread continents of the post-glacial period from our modern days. This identification of the Neolithic men with the Iberians, which the writer has also insisted on, Dawkins deserves credit for fully elucidating, and he might have carried it further to the identification of these same Iberians with the Berbers, the Guanches of the Canary Islands, and the Caribbean and other tribes of Eastern and Central America. On these hitherto dark subjects light is now rapidly breaking, and we may hope that much of the present obscurity will soon be cleared away.

Another curious point, illustrated by the recent rediscovery of the tin mines of Tuscany, is the connection of the Etruscans with the introduction of the bronze age into Central Europe. This, when viewed in relation to the probable ethnic affinities of the Etruscans with the Neolithic and Iberian races, remarkably welds together the stone and bronze ages in Europe, and explains their intermixture and "overlap" in the



earlier lake habitations of Switzerland and elsewhere, while the evidence of local facts has induced many archæologists to dispense with the distinction of bronze and iron ages, and to be content with an age of metal instead.

We are also indebted to Dawkins for a suggestion as to the linguistic connection of the Neocosmic and Modern periods, which is deserving the attention of philologists. He quotes from Abbé Inchaupé the following Basque words:—

|                 |            |                               |
|-----------------|------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>Aizcora</i>  | = Axe      | = Stone lifted up or handled. |
| <i>Aitzurra</i> | = Pick     | = Stone to tear asunder.      |
| <i>Aiztoa</i>   | = Knife    | = Stone, little or small.     |
| <i>Aizurrac</i> | = Scissors | = Little stones for tearing.  |

He remarks that all these words are derived from the word *aitza*, *atcha*, stone, though now applied to implements of metal, and they are probably identical with such modern words as hache, axe, adze, and even with the primitive word *hac*, which has come in various languages to mean things so different as a king and a cutting instrument.<sup>1</sup> The same thing occurs in many American languages, in which the word for stone, with appropriate additions, is applied to different kinds of tools. It is also curious that in some of the American languages the word for stone is almost identical with that in Basque; but this applies to some other Basque roots as well. Still it is not unlikely that the onomatopoeic sounds, *itz*, *aitz*, and the like, applied to stone and cutting instruments in many languages, in all cases arose from the sounds produced by sharpened stones in cutting and rending.

A still more important speculation arising from the facts recently developed as to prehistoric men, is the probable equivalency with the historic deluge, of the great subsidence which closed the residence of palæocosmic men in Europe, as well as that of several of the large mammalia, an equivalency which I have in previous pages incidentally referred to.

<sup>1</sup> See the Hakim of Deborah, Judges, chap. v.

Lenormant and others have shown that the wide and ancient acceptance of the tradition of the deluge among all the great branches of the human family necessitates the belief that, independently of the Biblical history, this great event must be accepted as an historical fact which very deeply impressed itself upon the minds of all the early nations. Now, if the deluge is to be accepted as historical, and if a similar break interrupts the geological history of man, separating extinct races from those which still survive, why may we not correlate the two? The misuse of the deluge in the early history of geology, in employing it to account for changes that took place long before the advent of man, certainly should not cause us to neglect its legitimate uses, when these arise in the progress of investigation. It is evident that if this correlation be accepted as probable, it must modify many views now held as to the antiquity of man. In that case, the modern gravels and earth, and loess, spread over plateaux and in river valleys, far above the reach of the present floods, may be accounted for, not by the ordinary action of the existing streams, but by the abnormal action of currents of water diluvial in their character, and may thus be a true "diluvium," as it was called by the older geologists. Further, since the historical deluge cannot have been of long duration, the physical changes separating the deposits containing the remains of palæocosmic men from those of later date would in like manner be accounted for, not by slow processes of subsidence, elevation, and erosion, but by causes of more abrupt and cataclysmic character, which, on any natural system of geological dynamics, must be admitted as possible. This subject the writer has referred to in previous publications,<sup>1</sup> and he is glad to see that prominence has recently been given to it by so good a geologist as the Duke of Argyll, in an article in the *Contemporary Review*, and also

<sup>1</sup> "Origin of the World," "Fossil Men."

in an address delivered before the Edinburgh Geological Society.

In the latter paper the evidence assigned is mainly the distribution of surface deposits later than the glacial age, such as the loess, or "inundation mud," as it has been called, which covers so much of Europe and Asia, and the superficial gravels. Respecting the former his Grace remarks: "On the continent of Europe, too, we know that a large part of its central area is occupied by a formation (the 'loess') which Lyell calls 'inundation mud,' and which he designates as the last and latest of all the great formations known to geology. The difficulty of accounting for it is proved by the number of theories which have been propounded. The shells in this formation are not fluviatile, nor are they lacustrine. On the other hand, they are not marine. They are terrestrial. They are land shells—the shells of damp woods or morasses—in short, of a land surface which has been covered with this 'inundation mud.' One possible explanation is obvious. The sea establishes its own forms of life where itself is established for any length of time. But if its invasion of any land area be not lasting, but temporary, it may well fail to carry its mere dead shells over that area, whilst its living fauna would not have had time to grow. But here again this notion of a submergence temporary and transitory must at all hazards be dismissed. And so the ice cap again comes into play. There are no banks within which to confine a great European lake, but in the ice sheet banks are always ready; and so it has been supposed, among other explanations, that enormous masses of ice, walking of their own sweet will about the world, came down from the North and dammed back the waters of the Rhine, or of some other greater river which then took its place, and thus formed a lake in which this vast sheet of inundation mud was deposited. I do not pretend to be able to solve all the difficulties of the problem connected with the great formation of the

'loess.' But I am sure that any theory is better than this, and further, I am sure that many difficulties will be removed if we can but face the conclusion that there has been in very recent times, and over a large area of the northern hemisphere, a great depression and a great re-emergence of the land towards the close of the glacial epoch."

But this whole subject has been discussed with the greatest fulness in a series of papers by Mr. H. H. Howorth in the *Geological Magazine*.<sup>1</sup> He first refers to the loess of Western Europe, and the similar deposits in Eastern Europe and Siberia, and in China. Indeed, this deposit may be said to lie, more or less, over all the countries of the northern hemisphere up to heights of 4,000 and 5,000 feet. It is a loamy deposit, unstratified, though often of great thickness, destitute of marine shells, but with land shells and bones of land animals, and newer than the deposits of the glacial period, being, in fact, the latest deposit next to the modern peats and river alluvia. It caps and rests upon even the river alluvia, when these are of the early post-glacial or Palanthropic age. In some places large angular stones are associated with it, as are also beds of rolled flints and far-transported gravel. My own observations lead me to believe that in all parts of our continents which I have visited, these superficial deposits more or less occur, overlying all others, independent of existing river valleys and lines of drainage, partially swept away by modern denuding agencies, but occurring in patches everywhere. That they refer to a very modern and very general, if not universal, submergence of the land, and this of short duration, there seems no reason to doubt, however difficult it may be to account for it by any causes known to us. Certainly, the attempts to explain it by local land floods, by the waters of melting glaciers, by immense lakes dammed in by ice, and by a greater extent and energy of the existing rivers,

<sup>1</sup> Also "The Mammoth and the Flood," 1887.

have all ended in failure. Perhaps the evidence in relation to it, as it exists in England, cannot be better summed up than in the following quotation from Mr. Skertchley, of the Geological Survey of England, as quoted by Geikie.<sup>1</sup>

“I must now turn to the palæolithic gravels and sands of Suffolk. They have been described by many previous writers as confined to the river valleys, and to be, consequently, river gravels. This is no otherwise true than that being (naturally) thicker in valleys than elsewhere, they are there worked, and the implements brought to light. In point of fact, however, they spread all over the country, quite irrespective of the drainage systems, crossing watersheds, occupying the highest ground, and running down to the lowest; and at points as widely distant as possible from any water-course I have found implements. These gravels and sands are for the most part quite unstratified, and only show signs of stratification in limited areas. They form wide sandy heaths, which are only used for rabbit warrens. *Every phase in their character shows that they are the effect of great floods sweeping across the face of the country. They have naturally accumulated in greatest force in the valleys, and as it would be impossible but that streams were locally formed, so we find portions showing stratification and false bedding; but these appearances are by no means confined to the river channels.* They are older than much of the present river valley, for the river has cut through them, and the waste so derived has been re-arranged as true river gravel, and in both palæolithic implements are found, although in the latter case they are often rolled. It seems clear to me that man could not possibly have lived at the time when these great floods swept across the country, but must have been a prior occupant, whose discarded relics were swept up with the other surface matter to form the sandy deposits.”

Let it be observed, in conclusion, that this inundation,

<sup>1</sup> “Great Ice Age.”

flood, or deluge, of whatever origin, occurred at the close of the Palanthropic period, and was connected with the disappearance of the men and many of the larger animals of that period, and that it was followed by the advent of the modern animals and the modern men, whose descendants still survive. Let us note also that it extended up to very high levels all over the old continent from England to China, and apparently over North America as well. Such a catastrophe occurring within the human period may well be the origin of what Lenormant calls, in his "Beginnings of History," the "most universal of all the traditions which concern the history of primitive humanity."

A most important topic in this connection, for which little space remains, is the date of this diluvial catastrophe. Since the publication of Sir Charles Lyell's work on the "Antiquity of Man," and that of Croll on the "Glacial Age," and of Pengelly on the "Devonshire Caves," nearly all English geologists have accepted as proved the doctrine of the existence of man for vast periods anterior to the dawn of history; and by some the possible duration of the human species has been extended over hundreds of thousands or years. It can, however, easily be shown that the astronomical phenomena alleged to bear on this question have no certain connection with it, that the facts of erosion, elevation, and subsidence adduced in support of the longer dates tend in the other direction, or have been misunderstood; so that in a recent paper read before the Geological Society by Professor Prestwich, the best English authority on Pleistocene geology, he argues for a very recent date for the close of the glacial period, and in regard to the antiquity of man, falls back on the evidence of history instead of that of geology. I have for many years maintained the recency of man on geological grounds, more especially on the evidence of the absence of any change in organic beings, or any considerable physical

changes since his introduction, and of the rate of cutting of river valleys. Evidence of this kind is constantly accumulating, and certain portions of it relating to Bible lands will be noticed in the sequel. For the present I may refer to one chronometer which I regard as giving conclusive testimony. This is the recession of the Falls of Niagara (Figs. 13, 14).

That the gorge of the Niagara Falls is of post-glacial origin, all geologists are agreed, and the fact cannot be doubted. That the present face of the fall recedes at the rate of about three feet per annum has been proved by the accurate surveys instituted by the State of New York.<sup>1</sup> It is a matter of easy

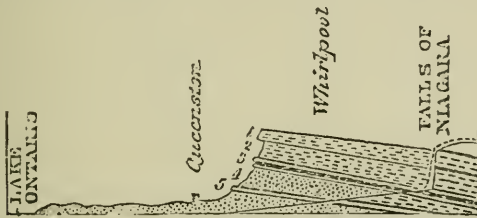


FIG. 13.—Section of the Strata along the Niagara River, from Lake Ontario to the Falls. (1) Hard stratum of Niagara limestone, which preserves the perpendicular face of the Fall. (2 to 5) Soft beds with some harder layers which are eroded by the Falls, causing the cliff gradually to recede. (From *Science*.)

calculation that at this rate the excavation of the present gorge would occupy about seven thousand years, instead of the thirty thousand estimated by Lyell on a supposed rate of one foot per annum. But even this estimate admits of probable reductions. The early modern period was one of greater rainfall than the present. The rocks at the lower part

<sup>1</sup> This rate was estimated many years ago by the late Mr. Bakewell, though a slower rate was afterwards assumed by Lyell and others. In the discussions which have followed the Report on the New York Surveys, some writers have argued that the rate of recession, on the whole, must be rather less, others that it has been much greater than that ascertained by actual measurement.

of the gorge are less resisting than those on which the river is now operating ; and there is evidence that a large part of the gorge above the whirlpool is part of an old channel filled with glacial drift, and merely cleaned out by the modern river.

In accordance with this, Messrs. Humphreys and Abbott estimate the age of the modern portion of the delta of the

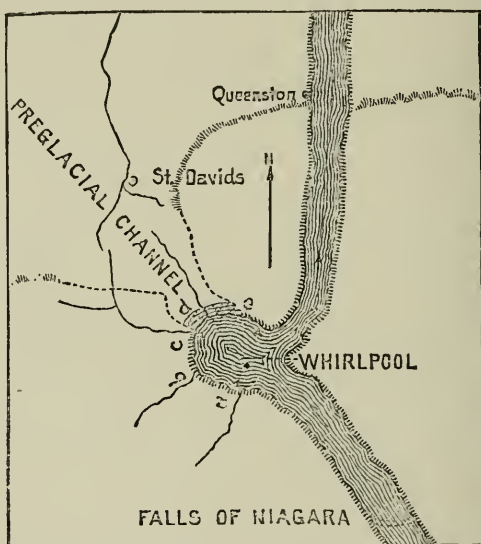


FIG. 14.—Map showing the change of channel in modern times. (*a, b, c,*) Rock Cliff at Whirlpool; (*d, e,*) Old Channel leading to St. David's choked with boulder clay. (From *Science*.)

Mississippi at 5,000 years, and Forshey calculates that the river would fill the Gulf of Mexico in 100,000 years. Guppy and Woeikoff think that the great rivers of China would fill the Yellow Sea in 24,000 to 28,000 years. Prof. N. H. Winchell has arrived at results respecting the Falls of St. Anthony similar to those stated above as to Niagara.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Survey of Minnesota," 1876.



The careful calculations of Dr. E. Andrews on the ancient beaches of Lakes Huron and Michigan give similar results, which are confirmed by the best observations made in Europe, and as I shall show in subsequent chapters, are corroborated by Egypt and Syria. In point of fact, no remains of man probably older than 7,000 years are yet known, and the recency of the glacial age and the great subsidence of the Pleistocene are so well established, that it is not likely that anything older will be found in the temperate regions of the Northern Hemisphere.

Quatrefages makes the following judicious remarks<sup>1</sup> in summing up the evidence derivable from the more recent formations. "The total age of the earth used, till lately, to be restricted to little more than 6,000 years; but the alluvial deposits of the Saone show that the present geological epoch alone surpasses this by several centuries. On the other hand, under the influence of Darwinian prejudices, men have begun to handle time with a strange laxity, and it has been affirmed that millions of years separate us from glacial times."

In addition to evidence from the modern period itself, similar conclusions may be reached by referring to what we know as to the whole age of the earth. Sir William Thomson, in a recent lecture at the Royal Institution, has stated that the past age of the sun, whatever theory may be held as to its origin, cannot have exceeded twenty millions of years. Taking this as a maximum date for the sun's age, and making a due allowance for the early vaporous and liquid conditions of the solar system, and of our earth, as shown in the table prefixed to Chapter I., it is plain that this will reduce the whole of geological time, since the formation of the oldest Laurentian rocks, to about six millions of years, or possibly less. Geology can afford data at least for the relative length of its own periods, and applying such time-ratios of this kind as have been cal-

<sup>1</sup> "The Human Species," 1883.

culated,<sup>1</sup> we find that of the six millions, two and a half will be required for the Eozoic age, the same at least for the Palæozoic, and at least three-quarters of a million for the Mesozoic, leaving only a quarter of a million, or say 250,000 years, for the whole Kainozoic time. Of this, the Eocene, Miocene, and Pliocene will require at least 200,000, leaving but 50,000 or less for the Pleistocene and Modern. Thus the Modern proper may well shrink within the limits assigned to it by such calculations as those based on the recession of Niagara. If the reader is disposed to take the trouble, he will obtain a somewhat realistic demonstration of the above facts, by taking a strip of paper 20 inches in length, and dividing it into inches, each of which will represent a million of years. Six inches at one end will then represent all geological time. Of these five may be marked off for the Eozoic and Palæozoic, three-fourths of an inch for the Mesozoic, and one-fourth for the Kainozoic, while a line one-hundredth of an inch thick at the end will stand for that period of geological time in which man is known to have existed.

Since the publication of the first edition of this work, I have been taunted with holding that diluvial catastrophes were proceeding in Western Europe while civilized men were living in Egypt in entire ignorance of such events. I shall, however, show in a subsequent chapter that it is physically impossible that post-diluvial Egyptian history can extend much farther back than 3,000 years B.C.; and when physical facts oppose uncertain and contradictory dynastic lists of kings, scientific men cannot be expected to give much credence to the latter. On this point it is not the Bible, but the baseless dogmas of certain archæologists, that are at variance with geology.

Thus, whether we attempt to estimate the chronology of the newer formations, or have recourse to the calculations of physicists as to the age of the solar system, we arrive at some-

<sup>1</sup> As, for instance, by Dana and Hull and Houghton.

what similar results, limiting the time available for the human period, and are able to confine the probable residence of man and modern mammalia on our continents to the ordinary historical computation of six or seven thousand years, and the great post-glacial deluge to a still later date. It is evident also that geology will not allow us to grant the very long periods claimed by the semi-mythical histories of some of the ancient nations. We shall see abundance of additional evidence of this growing upon us as we proceed. In the meantime, we may conclude that the facts we have been considering, which have led us from the caves of Lebanon to the Falls of Niagara, and back to the origin of the solar system itself, harmonize in point of time with those of the Bible history. We shall proceed in the next chapter to consider this history in the details which it presents to us.

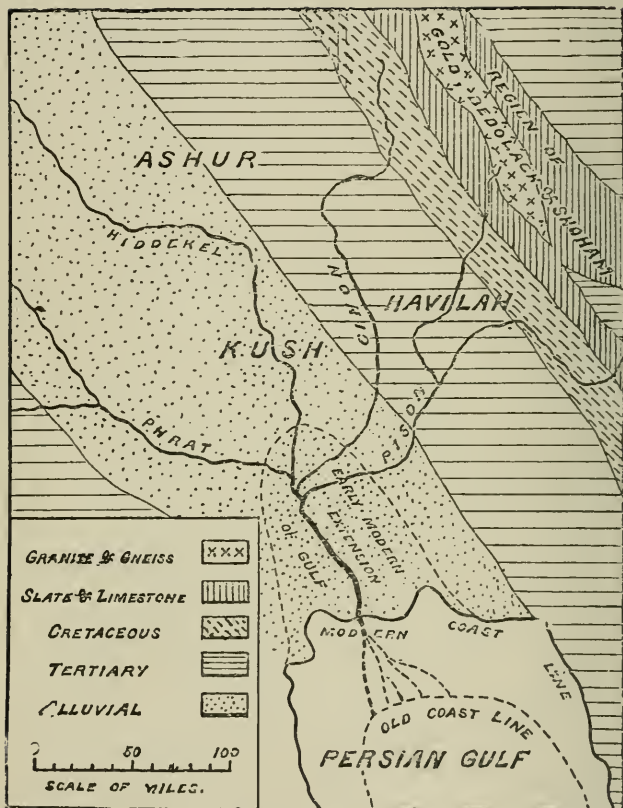
Dr. Mourlon, of the Geological Society of Belgium, has recently drawn attention<sup>1</sup> to worked flints and collections of bones in that country, which seem to him to indicate that man may have existed at the beginning of the Pleistocene, or close of the Pliocene age—that is in the “First Continental Period,” which preceded the great subsidence of the glacial time. He states the facts with becoming modesty, and does not consider them absolutely conclusive; but they certainly afford the best evidence hitherto adduced of Tertiary man, though we should reckon with them the similar evidence obtained about the same time by Prestwich, in England.<sup>2</sup> Should the conclusions of Mourlon be confirmed, the curious result will follow that man must have been the witness of two great continental subsidences—that of the early Pleistocene and the early Modern, the former of which—and perhaps the latter also—was preceded and accompanied by a refrigeration of climate in the Northern Hemisphere. In this case, also,

<sup>1</sup> *Bul. Acad. Roy. de Belgique*, 1889.

<sup>2</sup> *Journal Geol. Society*, London, May, 1889.

the historical deluge would be the second catastrophe of this kind to which man had been subjected—a fact which might have lent emphasis to the warnings of Noah, as well as to the subsequent promise that there should not be another destructive visitation of this kind. We must wait, however, for further confirmation of these remarkable Belgian discoveries, which may prove to have a quite different significance.





Map of the rivers of Eden in the Palaeolithic age, as described in Genesis, with geology after Loftus.

## CHAPTER IV.

### *EARLY MAN IN GENESIS.*

**A**FTER groping so long in the darkness of caverns, and digging in gravel pits in search of early man, it is a relief to come once more into the daylight and to walk with Adam in the Garden of the Lord. We may at least hope to enjoy this pleasure if we are not doomed by stubborn facts to suppose the early progenitors of our race to have been no better than modern Australian savages, or trembling survivors of ice and cold, struggling for existence on the shores of an arctic sea.

We may, I think, at once set ourselves free from this disagreeable prospect. Under any hypothesis of the origin of man, we must suppose that, whatever his subsequent fortunes, he came into the world under circumstances congenial to him. We cannot suppose him to have been either created or developed under conditions in which, with all his acquired arts and stratagems, he finds it difficult to subsist even in a degraded and depauperated condition. He must have come into existence in an equable and mild climate, and with abundant supplies of food, and must have reached the extreme limits of his distribution in the arctic snows, the mountain tops, the farther ends of the continents and distant oceanic islands, only after long migrations and the impelling power of necessity.

Thus science, as well as revelation, bids us look for the original seats of men in those regions of western Asia which are the historical cradle of all the most ancient races, and which are also the principal centres of the animals and plants

most useful to man. It is worthy of remark here, that Haeckel and others of his school substantially agree with us in tracing the affiliations of men from the region of the Persian Gulf, though to find scope for the Anthroposimians, which their idea of evolution requires, they imagine a continental area in the Indian Ocean, now submerged, which has been designated Lemuria, from the family of the Lemurs, animals of a low Simian type, and where they suppose man to have spontaneously originated by development from apes. Unfortunately this region, being submerged, can tell nothing to the geologist, and we have no actual evidence that it ever existed as land. Of course, if we could suppose that man originated in the Eocene or Miocene periods, it might be possible to imagine his birthplace to be much farther north, nay, even in what are now boreal regions; but we have already seen that there is no geological probability of this, and that we must consequently suppose the original seats of primitive and naked humanity to have been in at least the warm temperate zone.

The narrative of man's creation in Genesis gives us no uncertain doctrine as to this; and, as we shall see, not only places the first man in a garden, with trees pleasant to the sight and good for food, but in a definite region fixed by distinct geographical characters, and these appropriate to that age of the world in which he appears, and to its known physical conditions.

It is true that nothing has been more disputed than the site of Eden; but it can, I think, be shown that this has arisen from carelessness and inattention to the terms of the description, or from the tendency to convert plain statements into mythical and imaginary stories, and this along with ignorance of the topography and geological history of the districts in question.

In the general account of creation in Genesis i. no special locality is referred to. This is in accordance with the perfectly



cosmopolitan character of that document ; but we are told that man was to be in the first instance a vegetarian, though to have dominion over animals, and to extend himself over the earth from his centre of creation, wherever that may have been.

In the detailed narrative of the second chapter, however, we have first a picture of a particular state of the land, that bare and unfurnished state in which it rose up from the Pleistocene submergence, when "no plant of the field was yet on earth," when there was neither rain nor irrigation, but a mist covered the bare land. This was the desolate and nude condition of the continents after the glacial age and the great submergence following it had passed away. But vegetation again took possession of the soil, and animals re peopled it ; and, under the kind providence of God, a special area was planted and prepared for man, where he might subsist in peace and plenty till prepared to enter on his great mission of colonizing the earth. The topography is thus given :—

"And Jahveh Elohim planted a garden eastward in Eden, and He placed there the man whom He had formed. And Jahveh Elohim made to spring from the ground every tree pleasant to see and good to eat, and the tree of life in the middle of the garden, and also the tree of the knowledge of good and evil."

"A river came out of Eden to irrigate the garden, and from thence it divided into four heads (branches). The name of the one is Pison ; it is that which encircles all the land of Havilah, where the gold is found ; and the gold of that land is good ; and there is also found the bedolach and the stone shoham. And the name of the second river is Gihon ; it is that which encircles all the land of Kush. And the name of the third river is Hiddekel (Tigris) ; it is that which flows before Ashur. And the fourth river is the Phrath (Euphrates)."

The first remark I have to make respecting this description

is, that it refers to the Palanthropic or post-glacial period, that continental period referred to in Chapter II., when the Mediterranean, Red Sea, and Persian Gulf were more limited than at present. It does not refer to the post-diluvial period, during which, as we know from the gradual increase of the deposits of the Euphrates and Tigris, the area of the Persian Gulf, though much larger immediately after the deluge, has been contracting. The district has not, however, yet attained to the magnitude of its antediluvian condition, when what is now the marshy delta of the Euphrates must have been comparatively elevated and dry, and probably well wooded. This does not affect at all the question of the age of the narrative, which was no doubt written after the deluge—it may be long after it ; but it shows that the writer was describing the district as he believed it had been in the early antediluvian time ; and if at all well informed by tradition or otherwise, he should be aware of its condition at the time to which he refers. A writer describing to-day the localities of events which occurred in the Bay of Naples before the Christian era, should, in order to describe accurately the scene of the events, have before his mind, not the present state of the shores of the bay, but their state before the great eruption of 79 A.D. If he had no knowledge of this past condition of the place, it would be inferred that his knowledge of the events also would be defective. Bearing this in mind, let us inquire as to the meaning of the description.

In considering any ancient topographical description, it is necessary to ascertain, if possible, the standpoint, or assumed standpoint, of the writer with reference to place and time. This is equally important whether we regard these as real or only imaginary. I do not by any means admit that the standpoint of the writer of Genesis ii. is assumed or unreal. On the contrary, the facts to be stated in the sequel tend to confirm our belief in the antiquity and genuineness of the

document, as well as in the accuracy of the writer ; but the view now stated is independent of these considerations.

With reference then to the geographical position of the writer of the description of Eden in the second chapter of Genesis, it is, I think, apparent that this is not in Egypt or Palestine, but rather on or near the river Euphrates. This is shown by the manner of his treatment of the four rivers to which he refers. Three of them he describes by ethnical or other characters. The fourth, Euphrates, he merely names, as if no geographical identification was needed. In any topographical description so arranged, it seems fair to assume that the writer might thus define his geographical standpoint and that of his earlier readers.

The position in time assumed by the writer is equally obvious. He is writing of the antediluvian period and of a "garden" or district supposed to have existed in that period, but possibly not existing in his own time. The time of the writer is postdiluvian, but in that early postdiluvian period referred to in the tenth chapter of Genesis, when the tribes noticed in the description were separating themselves and acquiring distinct territories. Thus we seem to have here a writer who professes to have written at the date referred to in the early genealogy of the sons of Noah in Genesis x., and on or near the Euphrates.

Let us suppose, for the sake of illustration, an old chronicler describing the invasion of Central Britain by the Romans, and remarking that the district is drained principally by four rivers. The first is the Severn, which flows westward toward the country of the West Saxons, where is much valuable tin and copper. The second is the Ouse, which flows eastward into the country of the East Angles, where is much marshy land. The third is the Trent, which flows towards the land of Deira. The fourth is the Thames. Might we not infer, first, that the writer was not contemporary with the Roman Conquest, but

with the Saxon Heptarchy, to which his geography refers : and, secondly, that his own position was in the South of England, in the valley of the Thames ? It might of course remain open to question whether the author of the chronicle really lived in the time and place indicated, or was of later date, and merely simulated an earlier date and a special locality. In either case, however, we should have a right to interpret his description in accordance with the indications afforded by himself.

Treating our ancient description in Genesis ii. in this way, we find that the writer professes to be describing a topography of more ancient date, in terms of his own later time ; but that he believes that this topography can be ascertained and defined, at least in a general way, by existing physical and ethnical facts. Let us now examine more minutely what he actually says.

(1) The garden was to the eastward of his Euphratean standpoint. It was "eastward in Eden." It has, I know, been proposed to read the word translated eastward as meaning before or beforehand, but this view is apparently strained, and I believe the general consent of scholars reads it as in both our English versions.

(2) It was in a country or district named "Eden," a word which has usually been held to signify a pleasant or beautiful country ; but which Schrader, with reason, prefers to connect with the Chaldean *Idinu*, meaning plain country. In either case we should suppose that some part of the great fertile plain east of the Euphrates is intended, more especially when we connect with it the idea of irrigation, evidently implied in the sequel of the description.<sup>1</sup> It is to be observed, however, that in the antediluvian period this plain may have presented conditions considerably different from those of the time of the writer, and this may account for some of the peculiarities of his statements. We shall see the evidence of this further on.

<sup>1</sup> The rivers "watered" the garden.

(3) It was at or near the confluence of the Euphrates and Tigris, and where these were joined by two other rivers, presumably flowing from the east. It has been supposed that the heads of these rivers may be meant; but this seems to be a forced interpretation of the simple and clear topographical sentence, "From thence it was parted and became, or constituted, four heads."

(4) These rivers were known to the writer and his earlier readers, but in so imperfect a way that three of them required descriptive notes for their identification; and he begins with the most distant and least known stream, ending with that so well known as to need no characteristic marks.

These preliminaries being understood, let us now inquire as to the rivers intended, bearing in mind that they lie to the eastward of the Euphrates, and become confluent with it near to each other. We may add that, as another of the rivers is well known and generally admitted to be the Hiddekel, or Tigris, we have to look for two rivers only, lying eastward of the latter and connected with it and with the Euphrates near their junction. The only rivers in this relation are the Ker-khar, the ancient Choaspes, and the Karun, the ancient Pasi-tigris. We must however consider the characters given to the two rivers referred to by our ancient geographer.

The Pison, presumably the most eastern river, and whose name indicates a spreading or overflowing stream, is said to compass or pass through the whole land of Havilah, and to drain a country producing gold, bedolach, and the shoham stone, which must be local products, and probably products of a rocky or metamorphic country near the sources of the river. As to Havilah, there are two tribes designated by this name in the tenth chapter of Genesis. One of these is of Semitic descent, and of the family of Joktan: the other Hamitic, and of the line of Cush. No information is given of the latter in Genesis x., but there is a note respecting the Semitic Havilah

which suggests a connection with the present description. It is said of him and his brethren that "their dwelling is from Mesha, as thou goest unto Sephar, a mount of the east." Sephar has been generally supposed by Biblical geographers to be a city and seaport in Arabia; but here it is said to be a mountain, and one lying to the east of the primitive abodes of man in Shinar, so that this identification can scarcely be correct. It is more likely to be the mountainous region affording the products we have just been considering, and perhaps connected with that later Sephar from which the Assyrian kings transported Sepharvaim to people the cities of Israel (2 Kings xvii. 24). In any case the reference of the name to Arabia implies a different geographical standpoint from that of the writer, either in the second or the tenth of Genesis, and is therefore not admissible, whatever facts may be afforded by subsequent history as to Joktanite tribes in Arabia, to which they may have come in the great migrations of the Abrahamic age. Thus, the Sephar of Genesis x. may well be those Luristan mountains which are the nearest east of Euphrates, and from which the river Karun, a large and important stream, celebrated for the purity of its waters and the fertility of its banks, flows into the Shat-el-Arab or united Tigris and Euphrates. The early abodes of Havilah may have been along this river; and the people of this race may have been the first post-diluvian explorers of the mineral riches of these mountains, as their descendants, perhaps, afterwards were of the mountains of Eastern Arabia. But it will be well, before entering on the discussion of these questions, to inquire respecting the nature of the products referred to.

As to the gold, it is characterized as "good." This raises the question of the distinction in the mind of the writer between good and inferior gold. In primitive times gold occurring in large nuggets, and therefore available for being worked by hammering, was more valuable than that in fine scales or

dust ; and gold in a state of absolute purity was more valuable than that alloyed with other metals. Again, native copper was sometimes regarded and used as an inferior kind of gold. In some one of these respects, or in all of them, the gold of Havilah was believed by the writer to be of superior quality. According to Loftus, gold occurs in the mountains of Luristan, drained by one of the tributaries of the Karun ; but as to its quality I have no information. This is, however, the nearest gold region to the plain of the Lower Euphrates, and therefore, probably, the country of "the gold" to its primitive inhabitants.

Bedolach is rendered bdellium in our English versions, but it is scarcely likely that a vegetable product should be classed along with two minerals, and we should therefore be disposed to inquire if some stony or similar substance may not be intended. The word unfortunately occurs only here and once in the Book of Numbers ; but there are some considerations which aid us in ascertaining its nature. Its etymology indicates something picked out or separated, an indication leading to the idea of small objects obtained by selection from other material.<sup>1</sup> In the Book of Numbers the manna is compared to it, but in a special manner. The "eye," that is the lustre, of the manna is said to be like the "eye" of bedolach. Bedolach must therefore have been well known to the Hebrews of the Exodus as a substance occurring in rounded grains, and having a peculiar lustre. In accordance with these indications, the weight of ancient authority seems to be in favour of the pearl, a view strongly supported with a great number of references by Bochart. In primitive times the pearl was valued, especially for necklaces ; and as the use of language was not very critical in such matters, and the pearl, though of animal origin, is of stony hardness, it is probable that shell and stone applicable to

<sup>1</sup> Our own word "bead" is apparently derived in the same way, from a root signifying to count.

the manufacture of beads would be bedolach as well as the proper pearl. In point of fact, in the oldest interments known, there are necklaces made of perforated shells and stones, and even of fossils.<sup>1</sup> Freshwater pearls and pearly shells are found in many rivers; and the mountainous district of the Karun affords various crystalline minerals and pure white gypsum, which might readily be associated with pearls or other material of personal ornament.

The stone shoham, our old translators, as well as the Revised Version, translate "onyx" in the text, and the latter gives "beryl" in the margin. This uncertainty is not wonderful, since even in the Septuagint, whose translators may be supposed to have known something of the substance intended, it is rendered by five different words in the different places where it occurs. Still, the testimony of the Septuagint, when interpreted mineralogically, has a definite significance. In the passage before us it is rendered *lithos prasinus*, prase-like, or leek-green stone. In other places it appears as *smaragdos*, which among the Greeks was a general name for green ornamental stones, as emerald, malachite, serpentine, and jade. In two other places it is rendered by beryl, which is a variety of emerald. In the only other places, two in number, in which it occurs, it appears as onyx and sardius. In one of them (Job xxviii. 16) it is associated with the sapphire, which was certainly a blue stone, being compared to the sky, and in the other (Exod. xxxv. 8), the stone referred to in connection with the priestly garments is evidently the same with that in Exod. xxxv. 27, where the Septuagint has *smaragdos*. The testimony of this ancient version is therefore in favour of some greenish stone; and we should here bear in mind that the names of precious stones were in ancient times based on their colour,

<sup>1</sup> I have referred in the last chapter to the beautiful necklace, composed of 180 silicified *Turritelle*, in the Royal Museum at Brussels, which is attributed to the Mammoth age, or, in other words, to antediluvian times.



independently of their composition. To this we may add that Schrader compares shoham with the Babylonian *Samtu*, a valuable stone afforded by the mountains east of Babylonia, and supposed to have been of a dark colour. We may further note that an allied word in Arabic denotes a dart or arrow, connecting this stone with the material of weapons. It is also true that stones of greenish colour, as emerald, malachite, jade, and turquoise, were held in high estimation in ancient times, and that a certain sacredness was attached to them. In Egypt such stones were sacred to Athor, the mother of men; and a similar superstition has extended into the east of Asia, and even into America. This respect for such stones would seem to be founded on the fact that jade or jadeite, and some allied green minerals, have commended themselves to primitive man in every part of the world, from New Zealand to Alaska and Siberia, as the best material for the manufacture of polished implements and weapons, and as the basis of one of the great steps of mechanical discovery in the primeval stone age.<sup>1</sup>

We may therefore, without much hesitation, consider this primitive list of materials as carrying us back to an early period

<sup>1</sup> The terms jade, nephrite, and jadeite have been applied to several silicates of magnesia, lime, and aluminium, distinguished usually by a more or less green colour, derived from protoxide of iron, by a close texture, admitting of a fine polish and of a sharp edge, and by considerable hardness and toughness, characters admirably adapting them for the manufacture of weapons and cutting instruments. The more highly coloured and translucent varieties are also well adapted for purposes of ornament. The use of these minerals in primitive times, and among rude peoples, has been almost universal; and in districts where they could not be obtained, they have been articles of commerce. Professor Putnam has noticed the occurrence of jade implements in British Columbia, in Michigan, and from different localities in Central America, and has supposed that it was derived from Asia; but Dr. G. M. Dawson has shown that in British Columbia, at least, it is of indigenous origin, and Professor Meyer had previously established the same fact for Alaska. Thus it may be said that the valuable properties of jade have been recognised by rude races in all historical periods and in all parts of the world.

of Eastern civilization, akin to that which in Europe has been termed the age of polished stone, and may read "gold, bedolach, and shoham," as signifying in that old time the native metals, the materials of beads or wampum and of personal ornament, and the stone most useful for implements and weapons. In other words, we may translate the words, "gold, wampum, and jade,"—terms which in any primitive state of society would include all that is most precious in the mineral kingdom.<sup>1</sup> We have now before us the question, In what region east of the Euphrates can these precious products be found?

Some information on this subject was obtained by Ainsworth, the geologist of the Euphrates expedition,<sup>2</sup> but much more full descriptions of the geology of this region have been given by the late William Kennett Loftus, of the Turco-Persian Frontier Commission,<sup>3</sup> a man equally distinguished as a geologist and archæologist. According to Loftus, the alluvial and marine plain east of the Tigris is bounded by a Tertiary formation of gravel, sandstone, and marl, containing large deposits of gypsum, which was extensively used by the Assyrians for architectural and ornamental purposes. In the gravels of these deposits are many pebbles, derived from the rocks next to be mentioned, and which might have been used in early times for the making of implements. The gypsiferous series forms low hills, succeeded to the eastward by a great formation of limestone, the nummulitic limestone of the Eocene period, attaining in some places an elevation of 9,000 feet. Succeeding to these, after the intervention of lower beds referred to the cretaceous and

<sup>1</sup> It should be mentioned here, that in the Revelation of St. John, just as the river and trees of Eden reappear in the New Jerusalem, so do the "gold, bedolach, and shoham stone" in the golden streets, the gates of pearl, and the foundations of precious stones. We have thus an amplification and apostolic explanation of this part of the story of Eden.

<sup>2</sup> "Researches in Assyria, etc., 1858."

<sup>3</sup> *Quarterly Journal of Geological Society*, vol. xi.

palæozoic series, there occur in the mountains of Luristan clay slates and micaceous schists, with crystalline limestone, associated with which are granite and porphyry, and various kinds of trap. In the streams traversing this older formation gold is found,<sup>1</sup> and there are precious garnets, beautiful green serpentine, and a hard dark-green jade, or a green chert. The important point for our present purpose is, that these metamorphic and crystalline rocks, which form the highest hills of Eastern Persia, afford the products referred to in Genesis ii., and that this is the nearest district to the Euphrates, in which these products occur. Further, the river Karun, the ancient Pasitigris, originates in these hills, and is the only river of the region that does so, and it empties into the Shat-el-Arab, the stream which arises from the confluence of the Euphrates and Tigris. Thus we are able to find a river answering to the Pison of our old geographer, and which, while flowing from mountains rich in mineral products, is in its lower portion a spreading or overflowing river, watering one of the finest countries in the world, and on the banks of which was situated the city of Susa, the capital of ancient Persia—a place celebrated for its beauty and the fertility of its environs, and the site of the winter palace of the Persian kings. To the early dwellers in Mesopotamia, the valley of the Karun afforded fertile soil and scenic beauty, and by following it up they would reach the nearest district of metamorphic rocks and mineral riches.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In the Elwend Mountain, and probably in the head waters of the Diz, a branch of the Karun.

<sup>2</sup> I have examined the collections of Loftus, which are in the museum of the Geological Society of London, and which fully bear out his descriptions. The specimens, however, require microscopic and chemical examination, as it seems probable that some of those classed as hard green serpentine and green chert are really varieties of jade. Loftus says, "If a traveller approach the dominions of the Shah from the Persian Gulf, or from Lower Mesopotamia, he must cross the vast range of the ancient Zagros, and invariably meet with the part of the section exhibited in Fig. 1" (of his Memoir). This section, showing the rocks and minerals re-

If the Pison of our narrative be the Karun, then the second river, the Gihon, the rushing or rapid river, must be the Kerkhah, the ancient Choaspes, a river of considerable magnitude and importance, though inferior to the Tigris and Euphrates. This stream intervenes between the Karun and the Tigris, and its head waters do not reach so far into the mountains as those of the former river. This is an important point, as in the ordinary maps of the district the reverse is the case ; but on referring to the geological map prepared by Loftus from personal surveys, we find that it is really the Karun that penetrates the metamorphic country, so that the topographical geology of Genesis is more accurate than that of most of the maps in our modern atlases.<sup>1</sup> The Gihon is said to compass the whole land of Cush ; not an African or Arabian Cush, but that primitive Cush noticed in the tenth chapter of Genesis, and which under Nimrod founded the first Chaldean empire in the plain of the Euphrates.<sup>2</sup> If the Gihon compassed the Cushite territory, this early empire must have extended across the Tigris, nearly to the foot hills of the Persian mountains ; but in this there is nothing improbable. The fact that Cush is said to have had a son named Havilah may, however, have some significance in this connection. It is also interesting to note that the Kerkhah compassed the land of the Cossai of classical history, and flows through the modern Khusistan.

We thus find, that if we place our ancient geographer where referred to in the text, is that which the earliest explorers would find as they wandered up the Karun, and its tributary the Diz, and which would introduce them to a region of mineral products quite different from anything to be found in the Euphratean plain.

<sup>1</sup> It is scarcely necessary to say that Loftus, in his explorations, had no special reference to the identification of the rivers of Eden. The map prefixed to this chapter gives the topography and geology as ascertained by him.

<sup>2</sup> It seems now pretty generally admitted that the Biblical Nimrod was an early Chaldean king, subsequently identified with Merodach, the tutelary god of Babylon, and also with the hero Isdubar.

he places himself, and suppose he refers to the Euphrates and the three principal rivers confluent with it near its entrance into the Persian Gulf, we obtain a clear idea of his meaning, and find that, whatever the sources of his information respecting the antediluvian Eden, he had correct ideas of the Idinu of his own time, and of its surroundings and inhabitants. According to him, the primitive seat of man was in the south of the Babylonian plain, in an irrigated district of great fertility, and having in its vicinity mountain tracts abounding in such mineral products as were of use to primeval man. It is not my purpose here to vindicate the accuracy of his statements, but I may shortly refer to some questions that may arise concerning them.

It has been objected to the Babylonian site of Eden, that there is evidence that in Pleistocene times the Chaldean plain was under the sea, and that the encroachment of the alluvium on the head of the Persian Gulf is so rapid as to prove that in early historic times the Euphrates and Tigris were separate streams. But this objection neglects the fact that between the Pleistocene submergence of the country and the modern period there intervened that continental age in which all Europe and Western Asia were more elevated than at present, and the Babylonian plain must have been higher and less swampy than at present, while it is probable that the mouths of the Karun and Kerkhah were better defined and nearer to each other than they now are. It is probable that this time of continental elevation was that of antediluvian man, and that, consequently, to which our writer refers. We must, therefore, in order to realize the exact geographical position of Eden according to Genesis, imagine the shallower parts of the Persian Gulf to be dry land, the Shat-el-Arab to be longer than at present, and the country on its banks dry, though capable of irrigation, and clothed with open woods; while the climate would be more equable than at present. This was undoubtedly its condition

in the early human period at the close of the Pleistocene, and must have been known to or imagined by the writer of the early chapters of Genesis. In Haeckel's curious map of the affiliation of mankind<sup>1</sup> he agrees so far with our ancient geographer, but stretches the primitive abode of man farther to the south, over an imaginary continent of "Lemuria," supposed to be submerged under the Indian Ocean, but of whose existence Wallace has shown that there is no good evidence.

There is a curious Biblical connection between this district and the earliest history of postdiluvian man. The ark of Noah, we are told, grounded on the mountains of Ararat, and immediately after the deluge, the survivors moved southward and westward, and settled themselves in the plain of Shinar. This would be natural if to them Shinar or its vicinity was the site of Eden. Further, this postdiluvian migration from the hills of the north has fixed itself in the traditions of men, as Warren has argued in his ingenious but fanciful book, "Paradise Found," in which he gives to the fact, contrary to the Bible history, an antediluvian bearing. Lenormant has illustrated this,<sup>2</sup> and has shown that the Chaldean, Persian, and Indian traditions of the origin of man in northern mountains are really postdiluvian. Lastly, this early migration serves to illustrate the promise made to Noah that "all flesh should never again be destroyed by the waters."<sup>3</sup> Without faith in this, it is little likely that the survivors would have left their comparatively secure mountain retreats and ventured again to settle in the plains.

Another important question relates to the ideas of our ancient authority respecting the minerals he mentions. Did he suppose that these were important to Edenic man, or are his notes respecting them intended merely to identify the river

<sup>1</sup> "History of Creation."

<sup>2</sup> "Ancient History of the East and Beginnings of History."

<sup>3</sup> Gen. ix. 11.

Pison? It would seem likely that the former is the true explanation. Just as he informs us that Eden contained every tree pleasant to the eye and good for food, so it would seem that he wishes to inform us that the "precious things of the lasting hills" were also accessible. Man, he tells us, was to dress the garden and keep it, and even Adam may have required stone tools for this purpose, while there can be little doubt that the fig-leaves and dresses of skin would soon be followed by feminine attempts at ornament. It is further to be observed that Cain is said to have fled to the East after the murder of his brother, and this would bring him to that mountainous country which contained the mineral treasures referred to, and of which, according to Genesis, his descendants so soon began to make use. Thus there is nothing contradictory in these ancient accounts, but the whole hang together with perfect consistency. They are also consistent with the curious Babylonian tradition that Noah hid the documents of the antediluvian world at Sippara, a name probably connected with Sephar, and that he himself, or his spirit, still lingered at the mouth of the Euphrates, as if watching the slow retreat of those waters which in his time had overflowed the world.

Finally, the conclusions above reached are not very novel or startling, being near to those of Calvin and Bochart, and of Pressel in more modern times; and while they limit the geographical horizon of our ancient author, and do not imply that he had any information as to rivers so distant as the Oxus and the Indus, they serve to place the whole of the statements respecting early man in harmony with each other and with geographical facts, and to show that the documents embodied in these records are of great antiquity and historically accurate, unless indeed we prefer to believe that their writer was a consummate master of the art of simulating antiquity, and wonderfully fortunate in anticipating discovery; or, on the other hand,

that he was supernaturally enlightened as to matters not otherwise known to him.

The site of Eden being thus definitely fixed, and the time being that of the greatest extension of our continents, we cannot wonder that in the two thousand years or so which intervened between the first man and the deluge, the human race had pushed its way to the Atlantic on the west and to the Pacific on the east, and as far south and north as the habitable land extended. In connection with this, it must be borne in mind that the condition of the continents was eminently favourable for migration by land, and that this is evidenced by that remarkable association in the same deposits of remains of animals now widely separated, to which we adverted in the last chapter.

It remains for us in this chapter to consider certain parallelisms between the record of geology and the Bible with reference to the social and industrial state of man, the effects of the fall, the characteristics of the antediluvian nations, and the tradition of the deluge.

That man in Eden was socially and industrially in the most primitive possible state we cannot doubt. Destitute of clothing and of shelter other than that afforded by the trees of the garden, without weapons and implements; at first, as we shall see, perhaps even without language; he was, in so far as inventions and industrial art are concerned, in a position inferior to that of the rudest savages at present. Yet this condition was not incompatible with the moral purity implied in his state of innocence. Very soon, however, his inventive powers would supply him with such implements as he required; and the expulsion from the garden introduced him at once into that struggle for existence in which he has ever since been engaged, and which would greatly quicken his inventive faculties. Already, in the first generation we read of agriculture, carried on, no doubt, with implements of stone or



wood, of the taming of animals, of the use of skins as clothing, implying the employment of stone knives and possibly some art of dressing skins and of needlework. The region, as we have seen, is not one of flints suited for chipping, and it is not unlikely that chips of jade and other hard stones, and polished edges of the same, were the first cutting implements.

Let it be observed here, further, that the family relationship was already established, but not that which is tribal; and here there is a note of contradiction between certain modern theories and the Bible story, as well as the common-sense probabilities of the case, which deserves attention, and which we must keep in view throughout. It is well known that there has been much controversy on the original constitution of human society, and the institution of marriage. The late Mr. J. F. McLennan and Mr. Morgan have brought into prominence the totemism and descent in the female line peculiar to certain ancient and rude nations, as well as the practice of exogamy, or marrying a person of a distinct tribe, and that of wife-capture. These customs prevail in nations as remote from each other as those of North America and Australia, and are unquestionably very primitive. There is, however, nothing in this at variance with the prevalence in primitive times of the patriarchal system, as implied in the Bible, and practised from time immemorial in the East. Nor is there any proper justification for the idea of a previous state of "Matriarchy," as it has been called, preceded by a state of merely promiscuous intercourse. The oldest human beings known to us, those of the caves and gravels, evidently lived in communities; and we have thus a right to regard man as from the first a social or gregarious being. But, living in society, there must have been some head to the family, and such head would naturally be the person of greatest age and experience; while in times of danger the adult males would as naturally come to the front, and would be led either by the patriarchal head or, fail-

ing him, by the person of most influence and energy. Further, the long period of helplessness of the human infant necessitates parental care, and therefore some family arrangements. Thus the patriarchal system, or the rule of parents and elders, must have existed in the first human family. But so soon as the family increased to a tribe, or aggregation of tribes, questions as to marriage must arise, and then came the law of marriage, as expressed in Genesis, that a man should leave his father and mother and cleave unto his wife, and that they two should be one flesh. In other words, the man had to belong to the tribe of his wife, and the woman became the head and centre of the household. When distinct tribes came to have their separate totems or emblems, and to constitute separate communities, then arose the case of marrying into another tribe, or exogamy, as a consequence, perhaps, of the observed evil effects of too close consanguinity in husband and wife. It is interesting to note that these facts are implied in the early chapters of Genesis, and are referred to by our Lord in arguing with the Jews on the law of marriage. The doctrine of Genesis on this subject casts in truth a bright light on all the questions of marriage and the position of woman, which we may carry with us as a lantern to guide our steps even in these modern times. Man was made in the shadow and likeness of God, His representative in this lower world. But what of woman? "Male and female created He them"; and man in this double capacity was to replenish the earth and subdue it; not its slave but its master—"treading it under his foot," as the words literally are. Man and woman were to do this, so that the woman as well as the man shares in the high distinction of being the image and likeness of God; and it is in the family relation, and this alone, that such manifestation of God, and the consequent subduing of the world, can take place. Going a step further, we find this developed in that remarkable law of marriage, which has received less attention

from historians and theologians than it merits: "Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife." Here it is the husband who goes with the wife, and she, as the centre of the family and the mother of the children, is the true husband, the bond of the household. That this is the actual Edenic position of primitive woman could be proved by incidents in the history of the patriarchs, by the customs of many ancient peoples, and by the fact that even in such rude and isolated tribes as the wild Indians of America this aboriginal idea of marriage still lingers in customs which, however degraded, are sad and pitiful reminiscences of unfallen man. But I need not take time to enter into such proofs, for we have the testimony of One whose own title of the "Seed of the Woman" looks back to the time when descent was in the female line. Our Lord Himself took occasion in His ministry to recall the memory of this great and fruitful fact. The Pharisees, most self-satisfied men, wise in their own wisdom, and case-hardened in their own orthodoxy as the most earnest bigot of our own day, came to Him with the question, "May a man put away his wife for every cause?" saying in effect, "Woman is the slave of man; may she be treated with any injustice, dismissed for any caprice, without offence to God?" Our Lord, in His answer, takes them back to Genesis and to Eden. "Have ye not read" He asks, that He who made them, both the man and the woman alike in His own image, and instituted the distinction of sex, enacted its law, and that law was, "The man shall cleave to his wife"? That is God's order. Is there any place in it for putting away? Nay, if there were such, would it not rather be the woman that could put away her husband than the husband the wife? How strange, that in our worldly wisdom we overlook the simplest, plainest truths, and need a Divine messenger to point them out to us! But, objected the Pharisee, that is not what Moses said; and we may object, it is not what Paul said

about the subjection of woman. Our Lord has His answer to this too. It is "because of the hardness of your hearts, but from the beginning it was not so." The original equality of man and woman was, like so much other good, broken down by the fall, which brought, among other woes, the subjection of woman, too often developed into tyranny and injustice to her. In a hard, fallen world of labour, struggle, warfare, and danger, woman necessarily becomes the weaker vessel; and her original dignity of child-bearer, which gave her in Eden her high position, and which, even after the fall, is sought to be regained in her prophetic destiny as the potential mother of a Saviour, becomes in all savage and rude states of society an additional cause of weakness and disability. Hence one of the great missions of Christianity is to restore woman to that place which she had in the beginning—to deliver her not only from the slavery of savagery, but from the contempt of Phariseism and pedantry; and just in proportion as the law and love of Christ prevail will these ends be secured. But not until He who is the woman's Seed shall reign absolutely on the earth, will all traces of this evil be removed—an evil at once sad in its effects on woman and most degrading in its effects on man. Practically, in Christianity as promulgated by Christ and His apostles, woman is recognised as the ruler of the house, the centre of the family, which is the oldest, holiest, and highest of all institutions. She is removed from the more public offices of rule and government, but has acknowledged rights of service, and shares with man the higher gifts of prophecy and song, which are not extinct among the good women of modern times. Here, then, we have reached the ideal of the position of woman—the Edenic ideal of the equal helpmeet of man, the shadow and image of God—the Christian ideal adapting all this to an imperfect yet improving world, and holding up before us the Christian daughter, sister, wife, and mother as the most beautiful of moral pictures, as the pillars

of God's family, the noblest representatives of Christ's cause in the world. Thus the oldest account of the condition of primitive man carries with it all that can be learned or done in regard to the relations of the sexes in the highest Christian civilization.

But it may be said, all this was very imperfectly realized in the early tribes of the caves and gravels; and this leads us to consider the Bible explanation of the manner in which the human race came to be what we actually find it, and the vicissitudes through which it passed in the antediluvian period.

The fall of man wrought a change of which we have unhappily too many illustrations, when temptation and sin change the trusting, simple child into the debased victim of appetite, or the man of violence and deceit. It opened up to humanity infinite avenues of elevation and degradation, which were followed far in the antediluvian age. The temptation came through fruit—ordinary food; perhaps, as Hindu tradition in the Vedic hymns has it, a fruit having intoxicating or stimulating properties.<sup>1</sup>

“ We've quaffed the Soma bright,  
And are immortal grown;  
We've entered into light,  
And all the gods have known.”

The agent of the spirit of evil in the temptation is a serpent, of all animals the most subtil—the one which is the wisest, in that it can, without limbs and with its wondrous gliding motion, walk, run, swim, climb, leap, do all that other creatures can do, and more. All this is perfectly natural and simple, and in accordance with the probabilities of such a case, so hard for us to realize in our present state. The fall leads to the first murder, a sin of violence and anger stimulated by

<sup>1</sup> The Soma tree, said to be an asclepiadaceous plant. According to Dr. Dymoke, however, different plants receive this name, and the properties of the tree of life as well as of that of knowledge are attributed to it.

jealousy and hatred arising out of that relation to the heavenly Father which should be the fountain of brotherly love :—a prototype of too much that this bad world has since seen.

The first murder makes Cain a fugitive, and leads to a division of men into two races, at first apparently altogether separate from each other, the Cainite race settling eastward in the rich country at the base of the Persian mountains, and in command of the treasures of gold, bedolach, and shoham stone in these mountains ; the Sethite race in or near the original Euphratean Eden. Respecting the history of the latter we have little information, except what relates to their religious condition. We may infer that they were quiet, sedentary, pastoral and agricultural people, following the traditions taught them by Adam and Seth. A few points in their record are interesting, and will aid us further on. We are told that in the days of Enosh, men began to invoke the name of Jahveh, a religious change which, as we shall find, leads us to understand the true meaning of the mysterious story of the marriages of the sons of God and the daughters of men, and also, if we are not mistaken, lies at the root of the distinction of what are called "Elohism and Jahvist documents." The primitive Elohim worship was probably degenerating into polytheism or nature-worship, and a change was made in favour of a direct appeal to Jahveh as the Saviour and covenant God. At a later date the men of that race had their attention directed to the reality of a future life by the example of Enoch, who walked with God and "was not, for God took him." Still later, Lamech's prophecy as to Noah as a comforter directs our attention to the increasing difficulty of obtaining sustenance out of the ground, and the hope of a comforter or deliverer to introduce a better era.<sup>1</sup> These may be regarded

<sup>1</sup> There may be in this a reference to the increasing rigour of climate toward the close of the palæocosmic age, already referred to, and which may have seemed to be a literal "cursing of the ground."

as three successive revelations coming to the Sethite people as the inheritors and pioneers of true religion.

More details are given of the Cainites. First, we may infer from the curse on Cain, that his posterity may, like himself, have been to some extent wanderers and rude hunters and trappers,—“fugitives and vagabonds,” and to whom “the ground would not yield its strength.” It was, perhaps, to avert or arrest this doom, that Cain established himself in a city or fortified station; or perhaps this indicates that already, in his lifetime, the wild passions of savage men were making life dangerous. Cain’s city was probably built in that pleasant region where Susa or Shushan, the winter capital of the Persian kings, was afterwards placed. So far, however, the policy of Cain was successful; for it was, no doubt, in connection with the citizen population situated in a country rich agriculturally and in mineral products, that those great inventors, the sons of Lamech, arose. There the musical talent of Jubal added new pleasure to life, and the art of Tubal-cain learned to forge cutting instruments of metal, superior to those of stone. From these communities also sprang the institution of a nomad life by Jabal—a better method of wandering than that of the houseless cave man and wandering hunter, and involving the domestication of some of the more powerful beasts of burden.—probably, from the region referred to, of the ox and the ass, possibly of the horse or the camel. The subsequent deluge-narrative seems to assume that many of these inventions spread among the Sethite population.

Still the two populations, Cainite and Sethite, kept distinct, each following its own course; and now comes that remarkable episode, introductory to the great flood, which has been truly called the *crux interpretum* of this part of Genesis—the intermarriages of the “sons of God” with the “daughters of men,” and the consequent production of a gigantic, energetic, and warlike race. A naturalist may be pardoned for at

once discarding as physically impossible the theory, dear to some theologians, that the "sons of God" are fallen angels, or superhuman beings of some kind, intermarrying with the daughters of ordinary men. The mythologies of many ancient peoples present such ideas; but they are scientifically absurd, and our old Genesis record is not a myth, but evidently an attempt to relate plain human history. The other interpretation, however, that the sons of God (*bene ha elohim*) are Sethites, and the daughters of men (*benoth ha adam*) Cainites, is also attended with insuperable or nearly insuperable difficulties, although it is easy to find passages in the subsequent Hebrew scriptures in which good men are called "sons of God," or "children of the Most High."<sup>1</sup> What alternative, then, is left to us? Simply to take the words as they stand, and in connection with the institution of the Jahveh worship among the sons of Seth, as already mentioned. The words are:—

"It came to pass, as men (*ha adam*) began to multiply on the face of the ground, and daughters were born to them, the sons of God (*bene ha elohim*) saw the daughters of men (*benoth ha adam*) that they were beautiful; then they took for wives among them, all those who pleased them.

"And Jahveh said, 'My Spirit will not prevail always with man (*adam*), because he is flesh; and his days shall be 120 years.'

"The giants (*nephelim*) were on the earth in those days, and also after that the children of God came to the daughters of men, and these had given them children; they are the heroes (*gibborim*) of antiquity, men of renown."<sup>2</sup>

Now, who are the men (*ha adam*) of the beginning of this extract, and the man with whom God's Spirit would not always strive? Clearly, I think, the Sethites, the worshippers of Jahveh; and this, let it be observed by the believers in

<sup>1</sup> Deut. xiv. 1, 2, xxxii. 4, 5, 19, are perhaps the cases most in point.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. vi. 1-4.



documents, is a Jahvist extract. These are the legitimate progeny of Adam through Seth, and the Jahvists of their time. Who, then, are the *bene ha elohim*, the sons of God? Just as certainly the Cainites, still worshippers of Elohim, but probably now in a corrupt and materialistic form. It seems to me that this must be the meaning of the writer, and that it solves the whole mystery. Under this light some other points become instructive. The superior beauty of the daughters of men implies a finer type on the part of the Sethites. Again, the wives were "taken," probably by capture from a weaker and a more peaceful people. Further, in violation of the primitive marriage law, they were taken into the tribes of their husbands. This, again, implies a superior power on the part of the Cainites, enabling them to enslave the other race, as well as the introduction of a great social innovation which became general in later times. The children of these marriages, as was natural in the case, were a race of half-breeds, more energetic, and it would seem of greater stature than the pure races. Finally, all this led to a corruption of manners and morals on the earth, which caused Jahveh to doom its inhabitants to destruction in one hundred and twenty years—not to shorten the life of man to that term, which is contrary to all the other testimony of our record, and to the plain import of the words when taken in their connection.

We are now in a position to inquire as to the relation of all this to our palæocosmic men. Do the Canstadt and Cro-magnon races represent any of these diverse antediluvian peoples, and if so, which of them? Here we must notice that we know something of the physique of the Sethites. Noah was certainly of this race, and so were the other members of his family; unless, indeed, any of his sons' wives may have been of the mixed stock. If so, then the early Chaldean and Egyptian peoples, whose features are well known to us from a very early period, may be taken as representing the Sethites,

who will thus be a modern people. No such people are, however, known to us in the cavern or gravel deposits; and if by any rare chance a skull of this kind were found, it would run the risk of being set down as Neolithic. It is, however, to be observed that the Sethites were probably somewhat limited in their distribution, and that it is only in Western Asia that we can hope to meet with remains of peoples of this type. Our Canstadt and Cro-magnon men must therefore be Cainites, or perhaps the former may represent the pure Cainite type, and the latter some mixture with the other race. The tall Cro-magnon men would certainly correspond very well with the gibborim or giants of the writer of Genesis. Further, we have as yet no examples of the more civilized Cainites, if their civilization is to be inferred from their building cities and using metals, though it is quite likely that such a station as Soloutre may be an adequate representative of an early Cainite city, and that implements of stone would be vastly more numerous than those of metal; and they certainly are more durable. In all probability our cave and gravel men are of those wandering hunting tribes on whom the doom of Cain fell to the uttermost, and who descended to lower and lower grades of mere barbarism as they wandered farther from the primitive seats of humanity.

If this is the real parallelism of geology and Bible history as to early man, we have still much to learn beyond the results of our present cave-hunting, and may be prepared to find somewhere, antediluvian men of higher type and more culture than those hitherto discovered.

Curious questions occur in connection with this, as to the possible survival of some antediluvians, and as to the genealogy of those old Palestinian peoples who seem to have preceded the Canaanites, and whose descent is not given in Genesis x. Were they a remnant of the old *bene ha elohim* of the antediluvian times? We have not as yet facts to de-

termine the question, and must, in any case, first consider the history of the deluge itself.

We have noticed in a previous chapter the general geological evidence as to the post-glacial flood, an event of which the tradition survives in all the great races of the earth, except, perhaps, some of those of Africa and the Pacific Islands; and our Biblical account of it has recently been reinforced by the testimony of the ancient Chaldean tablets.

The account of the flood in Genesis, chapters vi. to ix., is very detailed in comparison with other histories in the early part of that book; and it is usually stated that it consists of two documents, one Elohist and one Jahvist, welded together by a subsequent editor. On this I would remark, that if it is correct, there would seem to have been two independent histories open to the editor, and that one of them may have represented the fortunes of the Cainite, the other that of the Sethite race. This appears from the fact that in the opening of the sixth chapter it is the sons of Adam, properly so called, who are the special objects of wrath, and this is the wrath of Jahveh. If nothing more had been said, we should have inferred that the Cainites, the sons of Elohim, were left to suffer the curse of Cain, and were not subjects of this new judgment. But as the narrative goes on, Elohim also is introduced, and no distinction is made between Elohim and Jahveh. I do not of course suppose that in the mind of the writer Jahveh and Elohim were two distinct Gods, but the one was God in the aspect of Redeemer, the other in that of Creator. The one was the name specially venerated by the Sethites, the other by the Cainites. Thus, God, in all aspects and in all relations, is represented as concerned in the great judgment. If, therefore, the theory of two documents is well founded, the intention of the editor must have been more fully to emphasize the universality of the destruction as relating to both great sections of the human family. It may also be

observed that if we separate the supposed documents, we shall find that, while both have the form of testimony of eye-witnesses, the Elohist portion is the more detailed as to the physical phenomena, and that this corresponds to the fact that Elohim represents God specially as the Creator of the universe.

Without concerning ourselves further as to this question of different documents, we may remark certain points as to the deluge, which are important in a topographical and scientific point of view. The first is, that the narrator represents himself to be an eye-witness of the catastrophe. No other inference can be drawn from such expressions as that "the waters increased and lifted up the ark, and it was raised above the earth"; "the waters strengthened, and the ark began to move"; "fifteen cubits upwards the waters rose, and the mountains were covered"; "the waters retreated, departing and withdrawing themselves." These, and a variety of notes scattered throughout, are statements derived from an eye-witness, or one who represents himself as such. This is a most important consideration, as it serves to explain the meaning of such expressions as imply universality, since these must refer merely to the experience of the observer—all visible to him was covered, and all its creatures destroyed. The narrative may have been purposely kept in its present-form, to prevent misconception on this point.

Another important remark is, that the deluge is not a mere river inundation. The rivers, indeed, are not mentioned, though the writer, whose Euphratean standpoint we have already proved, must have been familiar with such inundations, but only the springs of the abyss and the rain. The described appearances also are those of a great marine, rather than fluviate inundation. This accords with a geographical indication, the only one in the narrative. The ark rested on the mountains of Ararat. Now, Ararat was undoubtedly somewhere in the high lands of Western or Central Asia ;

and to reach such a position, if Noah's residence was in the original seats of human population in the Euphratean valley, the ark must have drifted northward, or against the natural drainage of the country, a statement inexplicable, unless the writer intended an actual submergence of the land.

The duration of the deluge in round numbers was about a year, but this no doubt represents its culmination in the district occupied by Noah and his family. We have a right to assume that for at least the whole term of one hundred and twenty years between the first announcement and the final catastrophe, there may have been a gradual encroachment of the waters and disappearance of the land, culminating in a great submergence, which must certainly have been very general, though not universal. If we are to take the loess and other post-glacial deposits as its measures, all the countries between the Mediterranean and Indian Ocean, and great interior mountain-chains of Europe, Africa, and Asia, must have been submerged; and the remnant of the animal population that survived, independently of the selected creatures in the ark of Noah, must have been small, though enough to replenish the earth with that diminished fauna which it possesses at present.

I may add here an important note. After the deluge, the first settlement of the Noachidæ was in the mountain region where the ark had grounded. Here vegetation would be comparatively intact, and men seem to have become acquainted, perhaps for the first time, with the vine; perhaps with other products of the mountains and table-lands not previously penetrated by man. So soon, however, as the lower valleys had been dried up and their vegetation restored, men—encouraged, no doubt, by the prediction of Noah that the flood would not return, and stimulated by the traditions of the fertility of the old Edenic regions—migrated downwards into them. This is the great migration from the mountains of the north already referred to, and which, like the tradition

of the flood, has remained with the people of Asia. It is this which has led to the unfounded impression that these traditions indicate a northern locality for the original abode of man in the antediluvian time. After what has been said, it is not necessary to point out the remarkable agreement of the Bible and observation with reference to the deluge, or the light which they mutually cast on each other. It still remains, however, to inquire as to the arts of the antediluvians and their relations to certain localities and to postdiluvian history.<sup>1</sup>

Since the publication of the first edition of this work, questions as to the extent of the deluge have become prominent in popular discussions, and old ideas have been revived, some of which it may be useful to notice, before leaving this part of the subject.

It is obvious that there are four senses in which a catastrophe like the deluge of Noah may be affirmed or denied to have been universal. (1) It may have been universal in the sense of being a deep stratum of water covering the whole globe, both land and sea. Such universality could not have been in the mind of the writer, and probably has been claimed knowingly by no writer in modern times. Halley, in the last century, understood the conditions of such universality, though he seems to have supposed that the impact of a comet might supply the necessary water. Owen has directed attention to the fact that such a deluge might be as fatal to the inhabitants of the waters as to those of the land. In any case, such universality would demand an enormous supply of water from some extra-terrestrial source. (2) The deluge may have been

<sup>1</sup> It has been remarked by archæologists that the palæocœmic men were more artistic than the early neocosmic men, and apparently less religious. This agrees very well with the respective characters of the Cainites and Sethites in the Bible; and if the latter alone survived the deluge, their ruder migratory tribes must have been the men of the early Neanthropic age.

universal in the sense of being a submersion of the whole of the land, either by subsidence or by elevation of the ocean bed. Such a state of things may have existed in primitive geological ages before our continents were elevated, but we have no scientific evidence of its recurrence at any later time, though large portions of the continents have been again and again submerged. The writers of Genesis (chap. i.) and of Psalm civ. seem to have known of no such total submergence since the elevation of the first dry land, and nothing of this kind is expressed or certainly implied in the deluge story.

(3) The deluge may have been universal in so far as man, its chief object, and certain animals useful or necessary to him, are concerned. This kind of universality would seem to have been before the mind of the writer, when he says that "Noah only" and they who were with him in the ark remained alive.<sup>1</sup>

(4) The deluge may have been universal in so far as the area of observation and information of the narrator extended. The story is evidently told in the form of a narrative derived from eye-witnesses, and this form, as I have already observed, seems to have been chosen or retained purposely to avoid any question of universality of the first and second kinds referred to above. The same form of narrative is preserved in the Chaldean legend. This fact is not affected by the doctrine held by some of the schools of disintegrators, that the narrative is divisible into two documents, respectively: "Jahvisitic" and "Elohistic." I have elsewhere shown that there is a very different reason for the use of these two names of God; but if there were two original witnesses whose statements were put together by an editor, this surely does not invalidate their testimony or deprive them of the right to have it understood as they intended.

It is thus evident that the whole question of "universality," as recently urged by objectors to Genesis, is little more than

<sup>1</sup> Genesis vii. 23.

a mere useless logomachy, having no direct relation to the facts or to the credibility of the narrative.

There are also in connection with this question of universality certain scientific and historical facts which should be clearly stated in any discussion of the subject. Nothing is more certainly known in geology than that at the close of the later Tertiary or Pleistocene age, the continents of the Northern Hemisphere stood higher and spread their borders more widely than at present. In this period also, they were tenanted by a very grand and varied mammalian fauna, and it is in this continental age of the later Pleistocene or early modern time that we find the first unequivocal evidence of man as existing on various parts of the continents. At the close of this period occurred changes, whether sudden or gradual we do not know, though they could not have occupied a very long time, which led to the extinction of the earliest races of men and many contemporaneous animals. That these changes were in part, at least, of the nature of submergence we know from the fact that our present continents are more sunken or less elevated out of the water than those which preceded them, and also from the deposit of superficial gravels and other detritus more recent than the Pleistocene over their surfaces. The human period of geology is thus separated into two portions by a submergence which must have been fearfully destructive of human and animal life, and vastly more extensive than that portion of the Noachian deluge which came under the observation of the author or authors of the narrative in Genesis. If, therefore, we suppose that existing men are the descendants of survivors of this event, there can be no reason to doubt that a catastrophe so terrible might remain in remembrance, and might be the same with the historical deluge recorded in the traditions and early history of so many races of men. Further, since large tracts of land in the Mediterranean, in the Persian Gulf and its vicinity, and on the coasts of Western Europe,



which are known to have been above water in the antediluvian period, are still submerged, it is possible that as yet we know nothing of the arts or literature of the greater and more civilized peoples of the antediluvian world except from historical records. If we could ascertain all the facts of this kind, it is possible that fewer difficulties would attend our speculations as to the origin and extent of civilization both before and after the deluge. At one time, indeed, it was supposed that the geological deluge was a much more ancient event than that of Noah, but recent discoveries have tended greatly to strengthen the probability of their identity as to date. Thus geology and archæology have no alternative but to believe in a deluge of wider range geographically than we could have inferred with any certainty from the narrative in Genesis.

One other objection to the deluge narrative perhaps deserves a word of comment—that urged against the statement of the gradual disappearance of the waters. The extraordinary difficulty is raised respecting this, that the water must have rushed seaward in a furious torrent. The objection is based apparently on the idea that the foundation for the original narrative was a river inundation in the Mesopotamian plain. This cannot be admitted; but if it were, the objection would not apply. River inundations, whether of the Nile or Euphrates, subside inch by inch, not after the manner of mountain torrents. Thus this objection is another instance of difficulties gratuitously imported into the history.

In point of fact, the narrator represents the deluge as prevailing for a whole year, which would be impossible in the case of a river inundation. He attributes it in part, at least, to the "great deep"—that is, the ocean; and he represents the ark as drifting inland or toward the north. Such conditions can be satisfied only by the supposition of a subsidence of the land, similar, in kind, at least, to the great post-glacial

flood of geology. Partial subsidences of this kind, local but very extensive, have occurred even in later times, as, for instance, in the Runn of Cutch, the delta of the Mississippi, and the delta of the Nile : and if the objectors are determined to make the Deluge of Noah very local and more recent than the post-glacial flood, it would be more rational to refer to subsidences like those just mentioned, and of which they will find examples in Lyell's "Principles" and other geological books. It is, however, decidedly more probable that Noah's flood is identical with that which destroyed the men of the Mammoth age, the palæocosmic or "palæolithic" men ; and in that case the recession of the waters would probably be gradual, but intermittent, "going and returning," as our ancient narrator has it ; but there need not have been any violent debacle.

I may add that the importance and authority of the deluge narration are supplemented and enhanced by the invaluable table of the early affiliations of nations in Genesis x. which all scientific investigation confirms.

The accounts of man in Genesis concur with the evidence of the caves and river gravels in representing the earliest men as different, in many respects, from their successors, whether savage or civilized. As described in Genesis, primitive man is morally innocent (ii. 25), incapable of associating on equal terms with the brutes (ii. 20), destined to rule over them (i. 28). His food was originally seeds and fruits, not flesh or mere herbage (i. 29, ii. 9) ; but soon after the fall we may infer, from his skin clothing and his keeping flocks, that he had acquired the taste for animal food. He was naked ; destitute of shelter and of implements, except such as natural wood or stone could furnish. At a very early period, however, he must have acquired those simple arts of chipping and polishing stone, antler, and bone, of which we find evidence in his earliest remains.

It would seem, as already hinted, that the fall and its consequences, in the banishment of man from Eden, and the separation of Cain and his family, gave a great stimulus to invention. It led to clothing, tillage, domestication of animals, buildings, metallurgy and other arts, in rapid succession ; and it would seem that the earliest history of our race must have been more fertile in invention than any that has succeeded it, unless, indeed, we are to suppose that it was of indefinitely long duration. But such indefinitely long duration, we have already seen, geology will not grant, though there is what may be called an evolutionary superstition, which seeks to account for all progress by slow and indefinite gradations, as if mere lapse of time were an efficient cause. We may test this doctrine by a consideration of the origin and progress of arts and of language, as these are stated to us in the Bible, or as they are evidenced in the fossil remains of early men. The Bible theory of inventions is, that they result from the action of great or special minds working out some new problem that has baffled or has not occurred to others. Such men are Tubal-Cain and Jubal ; and similar to this is the history of invention in modern as well as ancient times. Further, the new inventions—sprung upon the world by inventive genius—fall into the hands of ordinary men, who carry them on indefinitely, without improvement, until some new genius arises : and, after all, the first stride in such matters is usually something far greater than any subsequent advance. Hence it comes to pass that human progress is a series of leaps, followed by indefinite persistence. If we apply this to the early arts of prehistoric men, we find the use of chipped stone an early invention, and persisting to this day all over the world, wherever it exists or has existed, with precisely the same forms as those which were developed in antediluvian times. The making of pottery of clay mixed with sand, and spread out and doubled in pastry-cook fashion, so as to give

it tenacity, and ornamented with chevron and basket patterns, has extended unchanged throughout the world. Who invented the throwing-stick for spears, the harpoon, the boomerang, the bow, the drill? All these have come down to us from post-glacial times, and no one has been able to improve on them to any appreciable extent. Who discovered the needle and thread and the art of sewing? and who, until the modern invention of the sewing-machine, has improved on them? The like may be said of the arts of knitting, netting, and basket-making. In the earliest times the most suitable species of animals were domesticated, and the best grains and fruits selected and cultivated, and scarcely any advance has yet been made in these matters. Another invention of early man is that of money. I do not say that this was antediluvian, though the mention of "bedolach" in Genesis, and the pierced shells found in palæocosmic graves, lend some countenance to such a theory. In any case, shell-beads or other forms of wampum constitute a currency so general that the invention must have been made in very early times. In a recent paper<sup>1</sup> Mr. Horatio Hale has connected the cash of the Chinese with the shell money of the Pacific, and the similar currency in use all over America. He does not seem to be aware that wampum similar to that of America is found in the graves of the Guanches of the Canaries (Fig. 15), who must have derived the art from very early European or African sources. Here, again, we have an early invention preserved among the Chinese to this day. Does not all this show, not a slow and gradual progress, but a sudden advance followed by a period of persistent imitation? In short, have we not a right to say that the greatest inventors in the world must have lived before the flood? The study of early postdiluvian arts will enforce this more strongly on us.

The history of the expression of thought by spoken and

<sup>1</sup> *Popular Science Monthly*, January, 1886.

written language furnishes another illustration. Archæologists have supposed the existence of speechless men; and it has even been maintained that the absence of the little process of bone in the middle of the lower jaw, to which some of the muscles of the tongue are attached, proves that the Canstadt race of men were *alali*, or speechless. No such inference will, however, hold as to the Cro-magnon race, since in their

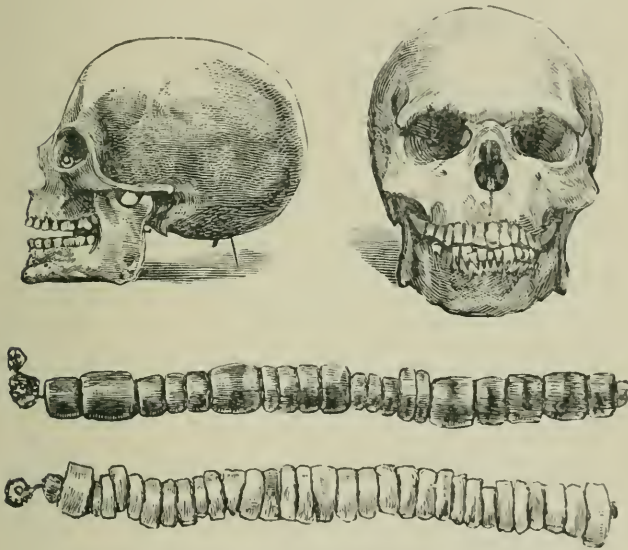


FIG. 15.—Skulls and wampum of Guanches, Canary Islands.

jaws these processes occur. But the whole doctrine is baseless. My friend, Professor Wesley Mills, who has given some attention to this subject, informs me that even the loss of the muscles in question would not prevent speech, and that the absence of the bony processes does not necessarily imply the absence of the muscles; and though these men may have had

less command over those modulations which depend on the movements of the tongue, they were not necessarily speechless.<sup>1</sup> Yet the narrative in Genesis represents man at first as destitute of speech. He was alone, and so had no need of speech; and is introduced to this gift in anticipation of having a partner meet for him. We may imagine the first man altogether silent, or making the woods vocal with inarticulate sounds vaguely expressing his wants, when there was no intelligent ear to hear. His first lesson in speech is in naming the animals (Gen. ii. 19). There is only one possible way in which a solitary and speechless man could do this, and this is by imitating the sounds these creatures made. Thus, the author of Genesis—or, if it be preferred, of that document which combines the names Jahveh and Elohim—commits

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mills has kindly given me the following note on this subject:—

(1) Though the muscles attached to the genial tubercles, *viz.*, the *Genio-hyoid* and *Genio-hyo-glossi*, are the most important in the greater movements of the tongue, as, when it is protruded from the mouth, yet many minor movements, such as those concerned in speech, are possible in the absence of the functional activity of these muscles.

(2) The clearest evidence that the tongue itself is not the sole organ of speech, or even an essential organ of speech, is derived from the fact that after the removal of the tongue, as complete as may be, speech is so far possible as to be intelligible, though not perfect, the dentals especially being indistinct; yet there is good utterance. I, myself, many years ago, followed a case of excision of the tongue, and was surprised at the degree of perfection of utterance attained in even a few weeks after the operation. No doubt, certain parts do extra work in the absence of those normally concerned: a principle of very wide application in modern physiology.

(3) But a comparison of even a few lower jaws of man shows that these genial tubercles vary very much in size, etc., in some being but indifferently marked; so that from this, and from the great variety in degrees of development of bony markings for the attachment of muscles, one would perhaps not be justified in inferring the absence of the muscles now attached to these genial tubercles from the absence of the tubercles themselves. So that, altogether, I should myself hesitate to infer that men in whom these tubercles were absent had been without the power of speech, for the various reasons given above.

himself to what is usually called the onomatopoeic origin of language, without, however, excluding the use of natural interjections. I am aware that this theory has been ridiculed by one of the most eminent of living philologists; but I must say that, as a matter of fact, the existence of a vast number of onomatopoeic root words, and the fertility of these as sources of other words, when metaphorically used, commends itself to a naturalist as most certain. To this day the names of animals in all languages betray their origin, and have proved most fruitful roots of language. Can any one doubt that *Orev*, *Rav*, *Korax*, *Corvus*, *Crow*, *Raven*, *Corbie*, are imitations more or less exact of the voice of the animal? And when we examine ancient languages, we find that a vast number of words—expressing obscurity, darkness, blackness, either physical or moral—have sprung from these words. There is evidence also that this principle of imitation has been transferred from the animals to inanimate things which either make an audible sound or can be made to emit such sound; and not merely names of things but of actions are formed in this way. It has been said, somewhat contemptuously, that primitive man did not speak Hebrew; but Hebrew abounds in such primitive roots, which must have constituted the staple of man's originally small stock of words; and an unusual number of these words appears in the early chapters of Genesis. It is probable that all the words in the first verse of Genesis are onomatopoeic, except *El*, the name of God, which is interjectional, expressing awe or wonder. *Aretz*, "the earth," more especially, is a word indicating the sound of sand or soil, when it is disturbed by digging or ploughing; and *bara*, "to create," is certainly onomatopoeic. So in later verses, *Hayath*, "animal," from *Haya* or *Huo*, comes from the act of breathing; *Bemah*, "cattle," from their lowing voice; *Ouph*, "fowl," from the sound of wings; *Sheretz*, "swarming animal," from *shar*, "to shear," or divide. The

first species of animal mentioned in Genesis, the serpent, has a name *Nahash* or *Nesh*, taken from its hissing; the second is the raven, whose name, *Orev* or *Horbk*, is taken from its voice. So the dove (*Iona*) has a name derived from its cooing; and a little later in the book we have *Zippor*, "sparrow," from its chirping. It was not without reason, therefore, that this writer represents man as learning speech from the voices of the animals. Children to this day frame their language in the same manner. A very recent case of the formation of a new language is that of the Chinook jargon of the west coast of America. The words of this jargon are largely borrowed from Indian dialects, or from French and English—but many are original, and of these a large number are onomatopoeic. The following are examples:—*Tshu*, "to grind"; *He-he*, "laughter"; *Hok*, "cough"; *Lip*, "to boil"; *Tik-tik*, "watch"; *Poh*, "to blow"; *Tin-tin*, "bell"; *Took*, "to spit." As to the fertility of these words, none is more so than the curious word *Tum-tum*, "heart," which in various connections serves not only to denote that organ, but "mind," "will," "opinion," "courage," "grief," "affection," etc., so that it becomes a perfect dictionary in itself. It is curious that the action of the heart may be represented in different languages by sounds so different as *Tum*, *Leb*, *Kar*, *Cor*; yet all are onomatopoeic, and all most fertile in derivatives and various metaphorical meanings.

As to the time required for the development of language, a new light has recently been thrown on this subject by Hale, in his address before the section of Anthropology of the American Association (1886). In this he has shown that children, not infrequently, have a capacity to invent a language of their own, quite distinct from that of their parents. He has also shown, from American tribes, the probability that this has occurred frequently among them; and thus that no great length of time would be required, under favourable circumstances, to develop a great variety of languages. Mr. Hale's



results are so well presented in a review of his address in *Science*,<sup>1</sup> that I quote the statement nearly verbatim :—

“There was once a time when no beings endowed with articulate speech existed on the globe. When such beings appeared, the spread of this human population over the earth would necessarily be gradual. So very slow and gradual, indeed, has it been, that many outlying tracts—Iceland, Madeira, the Azores, the Mauritius, St. Helena, the Falkland Islands, Bounty Island, and others—have only been peopled within recent historical times, and some of them during the present century. This diffusion of population would take place in various ways, and under many different impulses,—sometimes as the natural result of increase and overcrowding, sometimes through the dispersion caused by war; frequently from a spirit of adventure, and occasionally by accident, as when a canoe was drifted on an unknown shore. In most instances a considerable party, comprising many families, would emigrate together. Such a party would carry their language with them; and the change of speech which their isolation would produce would be merely a dialectical difference, such as distinguishes the Greek from the Sanscrit, or the Ethiopic from the Arabic. The basis of the language would remain the same. No length of time, so far as can be inferred from the present state of our knowledge, would suffice to disguise the resemblance indicating the common origin of such dialect-languages. But there is another mode in which the spread of population might take place, that would lead in this respect to a very different result. If a single pair, man and wife, should wander off into an uninhabited region, and there, after a few years, both perish, leaving a family of young children to grow up by themselves and frame their own speech, the facts which have been adduced will show that this speech

<sup>1</sup> August 27th, 1886.

might, and probably would, be an entirely novel language. Its inflections would certainly be different from those of the parent tongue, because the speech of children under five years of age has commonly no inflections. The great mass of vocables, also, would probably be new. The strong language-making instinct of the younger children would be sufficient to overpower any feeble memory which their older companions might retain of the parental idiom. The baby talk, the 'children's language,' would become the mother-tongue of the new community, and of the nation that would spring from it.

"Those who are familiar with the habits of the hunting tribes of America know how common it is for single families to wander off from the main band in this manner,—sometimes following the game, sometimes exiled for offences against the tribal law, sometimes impelled by the all-powerful passion of love, when the man and woman belong to families or clans at deadly feud, or forbidden to intermarry. In these latter cases the object of the fugitives would be to place as wide a space as possible between themselves and their irate kindred. In modern times, when the whole country is occupied, their flight would merely carry them into the territory of another tribe, among whom, if well received, they would quickly be absorbed. But in the primitive period, when a vast uninhabited region stretched before them, it would be easy for them to find some sheltered nook or fruitful valley, in which they might hope to remain secure, and rear their young brood unmolested by human neighbours.

"If, under such circumstances, disease, or the casualties of a hunter's life, should carry off the parents, the survival of the children would, it is evident, depend mainly upon the nature of the climate and the ease with which food could be procured at all seasons of the year. In ancient Europe, after the present climatal conditions were established, it is doubtful if a family of children under ten years of age could have lived through a

single winter. We are not, therefore, surprised to find that no more than four or five linguistic stocks are represented in Europe, and that most of these are believed to have been of comparatively late introduction. In California, on the other hand, where the climate is mild and equable beyond example, and where small fruits, roots, and other esculents abound at all seasons of the year, the aborigines are found to speak languages belonging to no less than nineteen different stocks. In Brazil, where the same conditions prevail, more than a hundred stocks, lexically distinct, have been found to exist. A review of other linguistic provinces yields results which strongly confirm the views now presented. A curious ethnological fact which tends in the same direction, is the circumstance, which has been noticed by Major Powell, that, as a general thing, each linguistic family has its own mythology. Of course, when the childish pair or group, in their isolated abode, framed their new language and transmitted it to their descendants, they must necessarily at the same time have framed a new religion for themselves and their posterity; for the religious instinct, like the language-making faculty, is a part of the mental outfit of the human race."

It is true that Mr. Hale is of the opinion that it has been proved that man has existed on the earth for perhaps 200,000 years, and, therefore, that for a vast period he must have been speechless; but we have already seen that this difficulty is purely imaginary.

In point of fact, unless we admit that some of the early post-diluvial peoples were survivors of the deluge, independently of Noah, all the present variety of language must have arisen since the deluge; and this question brings before us the remarkable circumstances connected with the Tower of Babel.<sup>1</sup> It would seem that the early colonists of the plain of Shinar, after the

<sup>1</sup> Genesis, chap. xi.

deluge, undertook the erection of a tower, probably a temple-tower, like the temple of Bel, subsequently erected in the same region ; or like the teocallis, or temple-pyramids, of the Mexicans. Some religious idea—probably that of worship of the heavenly bodies—was no doubt connected with this, but it included also the desire for political unity—of “making to themselves a name.” The realization of this idea was prevented, we are told, by the confusion of tongues. The narrator refers this result directly to the Divine justice, and accounts in this way for the diversity of languages in his own day ; but he does not inform us how it came to pass, or if this was by any secondary agency. If it was, we may imagine a multitude, with few forms of expression, brought together in circumstances which required the invention of many new terms, and quarrelling over questions of nomenclature, or we may imagine that the languages of the tribes gathered at Babel, perhaps by warlike raids, had already diverged too far to be re-united. In any case the incident relegates the beginning of diversity of language to post-diluvian times, and is illustrative of the facts adduced by Mr. Hale.

Before leaving this subject I may note that the language and ideas of the antediluvians, as presented to us in Genesis, are of a very primitive character, that the words used in the speeches attributed to Eve, Cain, and Lamech, for instance, are largely of a widely distributed and very ancient type, and that the ideas in these speeches are appropriate to a very primitive and simple race, to whom trees, animals, and other objects would be embodiments of their highest religious conceptions. I do not need to detain the reader with details bearing upon this, but may refer to what is stated of the trees of knowledge and of life ; of sin crouching like a wild beast at Cain’s door ; and of the distinction made by Lamech between wilful murder, like that of Cain, and homicide in self-defence, like that which he confesses in his own case,

A collateral question here, is the expression of thought by written or engraved characters.

It seems certain that what is called hieroglyphical writing was practised by the Egyptians from the first. The arrow-headed character of Chaldea seems about as old. Both of these may have had their origin in picture-writing, and consequently this, at least, must have been antediluvian. In evidence of it we have the so-called tallies, or inscribed bones, from the French caves, and also some curious engravings on bone or ivory, representing historical or personal incidents, and one of which, as given by Lartet and Christy, I have elsewhere commented on as follows: <sup>1</sup>(Fig. 16.)

It represents a naked man walking with a burden or weapon in his arms. Behind him is the sea, indicated by marks representing the waves, and in it swims a large eel. Meeting the man, on the side toward which he is hastening, are two horses, indicated by their heads. The intention may be to commemorate the annual migration of the owner of the inscription from

<sup>1</sup> "Fossil Men," page 267.



FIG. 16.—Pictograph on a piece of Reindeer Horn from a Cave in the Dordogne.  
(After Christy and Lartet.)

the sea-side, where he subsisted on fish, to the inland plains, where he hunted horses. Or, possibly, it may have been a record of his escape from a destructive inundation. In any case he had arrived at the stage of expressing his ideas by a pictograph ; and that his name or tribal designation might not be lost, he has placed on the reverse of his carving (not in our figure) his totem—the head of an aurochs, or wild bull ; so that we know that the family name of this antediluvian sculptor was Urus, Taurus, or Bull, or some primitive form of one of these words.

In connection with Bible literature it seems certain that Abraham must have carried with him, in his migration into Canaan, the Chaldean character, which was in common use in that country not long after ; and the Hittite hieroglyphics were probably known in Canaan at least as early. When did the use of the old Hebrew or Phenician alphabet begin ? Scribes are mentioned in the narrative of the exodus. Did they write in Egyptian characters or in Hebrew ? We have no examples in Palestine of the Hebrew characters so old, the oldest being the inscription of King Mesha on the “ Moabite Stone,” as it is called, and the Siloam tunnel inscription, both belonging to the time of the Hebrew kings. The discoveries referred to in Chapter I.<sup>1</sup> would, however, seem to indicate that in Southern Arabia and in Egypt the Phenician alphabet, which is identical with the older Hebrew, was in use much earlier than the exodus ; and if so, Moses and his scribes would have the choice of the Egyptian or Chaldean characters or of the Phenician alphabet, and would almost certainly prefer the latter, as being simpler and better adapted to their language. If so, we can account for many peculiarities of names and

<sup>1</sup> See page 8. The Tel el Amarna tablets prove that the Babylonian Script was in general use in Palestine as early as the reign of Amenophis III., about the time of Joseph. Petrie finds evidence of the Phenician alphabet in Egypt still earlier. (Reports on Kahun, etc.)

diction, which might otherwise be held to indicate a later date. One fact noted in Hebrew history, and which has caused some controversy, is connected with this. In Josiah's time what was supposed to be the original copy of the Law of Moses was found in the temple, and evidently was in a character legible to Hebrew readers of that time, who were more likely to have known their own writing than that of Chaldea or Egypt, though there were no doubt scribes in Jerusalem acquainted with both of these. This would take the Hebrew writing back to the time of Moses. We are thus able, with much probability, to trace alphabetical writing in the very perfect form used by the Hebrews, as far as the time of the exodus; and this, I may note, is one of the arts that have since that time not improved but deteriorated, down to our most inconvenient and unscientific English alphabet. The hieroglyphic and syllabic writing we can trace back to the immediate survivors of the deluge. The picture-writing we can carry back to the palæocosmic cave men.

Something has been said above, incidentally, of the religion of primitive man, and though this is quite distinct from his progress in material arts, it may be well to notice it here. That antediluvian man must have had a religion or religions is amply proved by the fact that postdiluvian man everywhere is found to have had strong religious convictions, which could not have been newly born, but must have descended to him from his ancestors. Besides this, there is the best evidence of the belief in a future life on the part even of palæocosmic man. Even if we were to adopt the dogma of agnostic evolution, and to suppose that the instinct of immortality and the belief in God were established in some fortuitous manner in a being previously a brute, we could not escape from this conclusion. True, in this case the development of such a superstitious belief would be at once the most inscrutable mystery and the most frightful calamity in the history of our race; but

it would be none the less real. Further, it is evident that in any case the idea of God to primitive men must have been very vivid, if imperfectly defined. It would be like the conversion of a Paul or a Bunyan, in bringing man very near to God, even face to face with Him, and realizing His immediate presence in a manner scarcely comprehensible on the part of men whose minds are pre-occupied with a vast variety of ideas of this world. Now this is the representation of primitive man in Eden. He is very near to God, sees and hears Him, feels himself in direct communication with his Maker and Father, even as a little child with an earthly parent.

Again, it is evident that primitive religion must have been a very simple thing. No one can believe that early man possessed any complex system of theology, or of ritual or of priesthood. He was his own high priest, and all nature was his temple, and he had no prescribed code either of morals or ceremonial. This also is the statement of Genesis. The one religious idea is obedience, and the one test of this, abstinence from a fruit presumably hurtful in its effects. This religion is precisely that of a child turned loose in a garden with an injunction not to taste the fruit of one of its trees.

With the fall all this is changed. New ideas of relation to God, to a spirit of evil, to a future state, to the world, and above all to a Redeemer, come in, and these ideas are obviously radical ones in relation to all the old religions known to us historically. The first great doctrine is that of an evil influence hostile to humanity, and this not to be subdued directly by God, but by a Redeemer born of the woman. Thus, evidently, originates that idea of a new deliverer—a theanthropic saviour, which is the life of all the old religions in various forms. It is little to be wondered at that this idea should ally itself in the minds of men with the original worship of the Creator debased into a nature-worship, or with the deification of the tree of life and its guardian keru-



bim, and that many heroes and great men should locally have been deified as the expected Redeemer; or even that the old serpent, the spirit of evil, should have been adored or deprecated. Eve herself seems to have regarded her first-born as the promised seed. She calls him Cain (=geneos), because she had got or produced him (*Kanah*), and she connects him with Jahveh in a manner suited to her undeveloped grammar, and which is scarcely translatable by us. "I have gotten a man—the Jahveh," an identification with God who had given this man, and with the coming man, plain to those who take the words simply as they were said, but inscrutable to critical minds. Then we have the institution of sacrifice. It is not said how, but it seems that Cain and Abel were already representatives of two types of religion, that of the worship of God as Creator, and that of the coming Redeemer; and we are not surprised afterwards to hear that the Sethites began to invoke the name of Jahveh, and that the Cainites continued to be *bene ha elohim*, or worshippers of the Creator alone. The two tribes were respectively the Christians and the deists of their time; and as these faiths degenerated, the one fell into the worship of subordinate redeemers and intercessors, the other into mere nature-worship. It is in these forms that we find them in Chaldea and Egypt at the dawn of history. It was from this degradation that Abraham, the father of the faithful, and the father of all puritans and reformers, extricated the primitive religion when he emigrated from Ur of the Chaldees.<sup>1</sup>

We thus find that the primitive religion, represented in Genesis as that of Adam and Eve, is the root of all religions, however debased; and that, as handed down to us by the

<sup>1</sup> It will thus be seen that the Bible history includes the origin both of nature-worship and hero-worship, and gives to both equal antiquity—a much more rational view than the theories of solar myths, etc., now prevalent.

Hebrew prophets, and fulfilled in Christ, it is not a new religion, but the development of the old. Nay, more, we can see that when the Kingdom of Christ shall appear in the New Jerusalem, when "God shall dwell with men, and they shall be His people, and Himself shall be with them,"<sup>1</sup> we shall only return to that primitive communion of God and man which was in the Garden of the Lord.

All these things—the greatness of man's inventions and the simplicity of his theology before the flood—we can best understand from the study of what we find in the earliest post-diluvian nations; for there can be little doubt that the arts with which the early Egyptians and Chaldeans began their national existence were survivals of the deluge. As we have next to turn to Egypt as a land influencing the Bible and the people of God, we shall have an opportunity, in studying the works of the early Egyptian dynasties, of estimating the value of this kind of evidence, while we shall also be able to appreciate the manner in which these early arts and industries were modified by local conditions, and the light which they cast on subsequent history.

We may conclude this chapter with a summary review of the more important conclusions already reached in this and the previous chapters, and which we may here bring together so as to obtain a more definite idea of their significance, more especially in a scientific point of view.

1. The Bible presents man to us as a distinct creation (Gen. i. 27), and this with special reference to the fact that he was created in the image of God, which, of course, relates rather to his mental and moral constitution than to his bodily frame.

With respect to the first of these, the Bible seems throughout to affirm the existence in man of a lower (psychical) intelli-

<sup>1</sup> Revelation xxi. 3.

gence, similar to that of the inferior animals, and of a spiritual nature allying him with higher intelligences, and with God Himself. Rightly considered, this places the doctrine of creation in a very firm position. Those who deny it must adopt one of two alternatives. Either they must refuse to admit the evidence in man of any nature higher than that of brutes,—a conclusion which common sense, as well as mental science, must always refuse to admit,—or they must attempt to bridge over the “chasm,” as it has been called, which separates the instinctive nature of the animal from the rational and moral nature of man,—an effort confessedly futile.

As to the body of man, the case is different, but still perfectly in harmony with the biblical idea. Man, as to his body, is obviously an animal, of the earth earthy. He is also a member of the province *Vertebrata*, and the class *Mammalia*; but in that class he constitutes not only a distinct species and genus, but even a distinct family, or order. In other words, he is the sole species of his genus, and of his family, or order. He is thus separated by a great gap from all the animals nearest to him; and even if we admit the doctrine, as yet unproved, of the derivation of one species from another in the case of the lower animals, we are unable to supply the “missing links” which would be required to connect man with any group of inferior animals. To us, therefore, as yet, the human body, and the sensuous nature connected with it, are as much products of creation as they were in the time of Moses. It is to be observed, however, that the Bible does not concern itself with this question, but is content to affirm a direct Divine origin for that higher part of humanity which is implied in the statement that man is “the shadow and likeness of God.”

2. Man, according to Genesis, is the latest and culminating product of creation. Without insisting here on the great length of the periods represented by the creative days, which,

as I have elsewhere endeavoured to show,<sup>1</sup> the harmony of the different parts of the Bible obliges us to hold, it is certain that the *sheretz*, or "swarmers" of the waters, are stated to have been first introduced, then the higher animals, and, lastly, man. Now, no fact of science is more certainly established than the recency of man in geological time. Not only do we find no trace of his remains in the older geological formations, but we find no remains even of the animals nearest to him; and the conditions of the world in those periods seem to unfit it for the residence of man. If, following the usual geological system, we divide the whole history of the earth into four great periods, extending from the oldest rocks known to us, the Eozoic or Archean, up to the modern, we find remains of man, or his works, only in the latest of the four, and in the later part of it. In point of fact, there is no indisputable proof of the presence of man until we reach the early modern period. This is, no doubt, what was to have been expected, on the supposition of the orderly development of the chain of animal life in the long geologic eons; but it is not by any means the only hypothesis that was possible when Genesis was written. A more fanciful cosmologist might have given precedence to man, and might have supposed that the other animals were produced later, and for his benefit, or his injury. This is the view of the sacred writer himself with respect to the local group of animals intended to be in immediate association with the first man. Restricted in this way, the statement of a group of animals created with man in his earliest abode is not contradictory to the order in Genesis first, nor scientifically improbable.

3. The absolute date of the first appearance of man cannot perhaps be fixed within a few years or centuries, either by the biblical chronology or by the science of the earth. It would

<sup>1</sup> "Origin of the World," London: "Recent Discussions of Genesis," *The Expositor*, 1886.

seem, however, that the Bible limits us to two or three thousand years before the deluge of Noah, while some estimates of the antiquity of man, based on physical changes, on ancient history, or on philology, greatly exceed this limit. If the earliest men were those of the river gravels and caves, men of the mammoth age, or of the Palæolithic or Palæo-cosmic period, we can form some definite ideas as to their possible antiquity. They colonized the continents immediately after the elevation of the land from the great subsidence which closed the Pleistocene or glacial period, in what has been called the "continental" period of the post-glacial age, because the new lands then raised out of the sea exceeded in extent those which we have now. We have, as stated in the last chapter, some approximate measures of the date of this great continental elevation, and, without repeating these, it may be confidently affirmed that the tendency of geological investigation for some time has been to bring nearer to us than before the close of the glacial age. The value of the demands for long time on historical grounds is as yet quite uncertain. Egyptian and Assyrian chronology constantly vary as new discoveries are made. Anthropology cannot precisely measure the rapidity of variation in the infancy of mankind; and Hale has recently shown, in the papers noticed above, that American facts respecting language prove that it may vary much more rapidly than has heretofore been supposed.

It is further to be observed, that many of the demands for long time relate to the postdiluvian period, about which there is a consensus of historical evidences, limiting it to at most 3000 B.C.,<sup>1</sup> and that there is no geological evidence of any considerable change, either physical or vital, within that time.

It is true that announcements have been made from time to time of the discovery of remains indicating the existence of

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, "Hibbert Lectures," 1887, attempts to extend the chronology to over 4000 years; but the data are uncertain.

man in deposits as old as the Miocene period ; but these alleged facts have broken down on investigation, so that no certainty can be attached to them. Nor have we discovered in the Tertiary formations older than the modern or later Pleistocene any animals nearly related to man as probable ancestors.

To the recency of man we have to add the further fact, that the earliest known men are still members of the human species, not exceeding in their variation the limits presented by the various races of men in the present day. Nor do the bones or the works of the earliest men present any approximation to those of lower animals. In physical development and cranial capacity, the oldest men are on a par with those who have succeeded them, and, in some respects, superior to the average. There is, however, evidence of the contemporaneous existence of very rude and savage tribes with others of higher culture and development, which is also affirmed of the antediluvians in Genesis.

4. We have next inquired if science can give us any indications of the conditions likely to have accompanied the first appearance of man. Under any hypothesis as to his origin, we may affirm that he was introduced under favourable conditions. Even if, as some evolutionists affect to believe, he was a mere product of the environment acting on some lower animal, this would be absolutely necessary. We cannot imagine man coming into existence already provided with clothing, weapons, implements, and habitation, and already an experienced agriculturist, hunter, or fisherman. If so, his first appearance must have been in some peculiarly favoured spot, where food could be obtained all the year round, and where no artificial warmth or shelter was required. Again, it is evident that such conditions could not have existed at any one time over the whole world. They must have applied merely to some happy vale or elysian island of peace and perennial

plenty. Placed in such a region, the earliest men must have at first subsisted on the spontaneous bounty of nature. Later they would invent arts and implements, discover useful metals and minerals, cultivate the soil, select and improve useful varieties of grains and fruits, domesticate animals, weave garments, and erect buildings, and so enter on the path of mechanical civilization, and assert the mastery of inventive mind in the world. Now, all this, which is merely the reasonable inference from what we know as to the constitution of man, is in accordance with the early biblical narrative, and with the subsequent history of antediluvian man; so that there is nothing in science which obliges us to renounce our belief in the beautiful story of the "Garden of the Lord" and in the antediluvian history.

5. We have already seen that the researches of the late William Kennet Loftus, F.G.S.,—a man equally distinguished as geologist and as archæologist,—have thrown the light of modern science on the much-disputed question of the site of Eden as described in Genesis. The Shat-el-Arab, the river formed by the union of the Tigris and the Euphrates, receives also two other large rivers, the Kerkhah (the ancient Choaspes) and the Karun (the ancient Pasitigris). Now, if we bear in mind that the manner in which the rivers of Eden are characterized in the second chapter of Genesis shows that the standpoint of the writer in space is on the Euphrates, and that he states Eden to have been to the eastward, while his standpoint in time seems to be that of Genesis x., when the Cushites were establishing an empire in the Euphratean country, and when the Semitic Havilah dwelt toward "Sephar, a mount in the East," and not in that Arabian seaport which afterward bore his name, we shall find that the four rivers which watered Eden, and which, parting thence, became four heads, must be the Karun, the Kerkhah, the Tigris, and the Euphrates. Further, the objections as to the condition of the Persian Gulf

in early historical times fall to the ground when we consider the different conditions of the region in the Palanthropic period.<sup>1</sup>

This locality for Eden conforms also to the known affiliations of the different nations of men, and in some degree even to the speculations of evolutionists. This is obvious from the map prepared by the great German naturalist Haeckel, to illustrate his "History of Creation," and in which he traces the whole human race back to a spot in the Indian Ocean, where he supposes a continent, now submerged, to have been. If we except this hypothetical continent of "Lemuria," as it was called by Sclater, the affiliation of the main stems of mankind arrived at by Haeckel, entirely on scientific and historical grounds, is very near to that of Genesis,<sup>2</sup> and with this agree, in the main, most of the more eminent anthropologists and geographers. It is true that some theorists have assumed that man began his existence in a half-simian state in those regions in which we now find the lowest types of humanity; but this is, in a scientific point of view, improbable, since we cannot suppose the species to have originated in districts which experience shows to be those least favourable to it.

We have also to notice, with reference to the biblical site of Eden, that while, in modern times, much of it is marshy and insalubrious, it must, in the second continental period of geology, when we may suppose man to have originated, have been more elevated and dry than at present. This removes one of the geographical objections urged against the site of Eden on the lower Euphrates, and shows that the writer of the description in Genesis was aware that he was describing a

<sup>1</sup> See also note appended to this chapter.

<sup>2</sup> Haeckel especially states in this connection, and independently of the Bible history, that neither Europe, Africa, Australia, nor America can, on scientific grounds, be regarded as the "cradle of the human race," and that "most circumstances indicate Southern Asia as the locality in question."



condition of the district different from that existing in his own time.<sup>1</sup>

6. Of the fall of man, science has naturally little to say. It knows, however, that there is much that is abnormal in the present relations of man and other parts of nature. It can imagine a condition of harmony between man and nature, in which he might be innocent and happy. It knows that, like other creatures, he is under law, and that, when he seeks emancipation and to be as a god to himself, he enters on a course of error and suffering. It is also aware that the present is not the best possible condition of the earth, but that in some former times it has enjoyed amenities of climate and an exuberance of vegetable life which it does not now possess. Whatever the cause of this discordance, it is a scientific fact, and so far confirmatory of the historical truth of Genesis, that a great change has come over man in his relations to his Maker and the world around him, and that nothing short of the restoration of the lost harmony can form an effectual remedy.

7. The fall was followed, according to Genesis, by the prevalence of crimes of violence, and by the establishment of distinct and hostile tribes, some of them inventors and artisans, others wandering dwellers in tents. Withal, these antediluvian men were "giants"<sup>2</sup> and "men of renown," strong, courageous and aggressive, warring with each other and with the wild animals around them.

If we identify these ancient antediluvians with the oldest men known to science, the parallelism is somewhat marked.

<sup>1</sup> This fact of the deterioration of the site of Eden in the later antediluvian and early postdiluvian times, which we know on geological grounds must have occurred, probably forms a part, though only a part, of the "cursing of the ground" recorded in Genesis.

<sup>2</sup> "Nephilim"—that is, powerful, formidable men. See the use of the same word for the Anakim in Numbers xiii. 33.

Recent discoveries also suggest the possible equivalency with the historical deluge of the great subsidence which closed the residence of palæocosmic men in Europe and Western Asia, as well as that of several of the large mammalia. Lenormant and others have shown, as already stated, that the wide acceptance of the traditions of the deluge among all branches of the human family necessitates the belief that, independently of the biblical history, the great event must be received as an historical fact which very deeply impressed itself upon the minds of all the early nations. Now, if the deluge is to be thus accepted, and if a similar great break interrupts the geological history of man, separating extinct races from those which still survive, why may we not correlate the two? If the deluge was misused in the early history of geology, by employing it to account for changes that took place long before the advent of man, this should not cause us to neglect its legitimate uses, with reference to the early human period. It is evident that if this correlation be accepted as probable, it must modify many views now held as to the antiquity of man. In that case, the modern gravels spread over plateaux and in river valleys, far above the reach of the present floods, will be accounted for, not by the ordinary action of the existing streams, but by the abnormal action of currents of water diluvial in their character. Further, since the historical deluge must have been of very limited duration, the physical changes separating the deposits containing the remains of palæocosmic men from those of later date would in like manner be accounted for, not by the slow processes imagined by extreme uniformitarians, but by causes of a more abrupt and cataclysmic character.

It is an interesting fact, that those ancient cave men, whose bones testify to the existence of man in Europe before the last physical changes of the post-glacial age, and while many mammals now locally or wholly extinct still lived in Europe,

present characters such as we might expect to find at least in the rude nomadic tribes of the antediluvian men. Their large brains, great stature, and strong bones point to just such characters as would befit the giants that were in those days. It is further of interest that, though no relics of civilized antediluvians have yet been discovered, the early appearance of skill in the arts of life in the valleys of the Euphrates and the Nile in postdiluvian times points to an inheritance of antediluvian arts by the early Hamitic or Turanian nations, and is scarcely explicable on any other hypothesis.

8. The occurrence of such a catastrophe as the deluge of Noah is in no respect incomprehensible as a geological phenomenon; and, were we bound to explain it by natural causes, these would not be hard to find. The terms of the narrative in Genesis well accord with a movement of the earth's crust, bringing the waters of the ocean over the land, and, at the same time, producing great atmospheric disturbances. Such movements seem to have occurred at the close of the post-glacial, or palæocosmic age, and were probably connected with the extinction of the palæocosmic or cave men of Europe, and of the larger land animals their contemporaries; and these movements closed the later continental period of Lyell, and left the land permanently at a lower level than formerly. The narrative in Genesis purports to be that of an eye-witness. He notes the going into the ark, the closing of its door, the first floating of the large ship, then its drifting, then the disappearance of visible land, and the minimum depth of fifteen cubits, probably representing the draft of water of the ark. Then we have the abating of the waters, with an intermittent action, "going and returning"; the grounding of the ark, the gradual appearance of surrounding hills, the disappearance of the water, and, finally, the drying of the ground. All this, if historical in any degree, must consist of the notes of an eye-witness; and, if understood in this

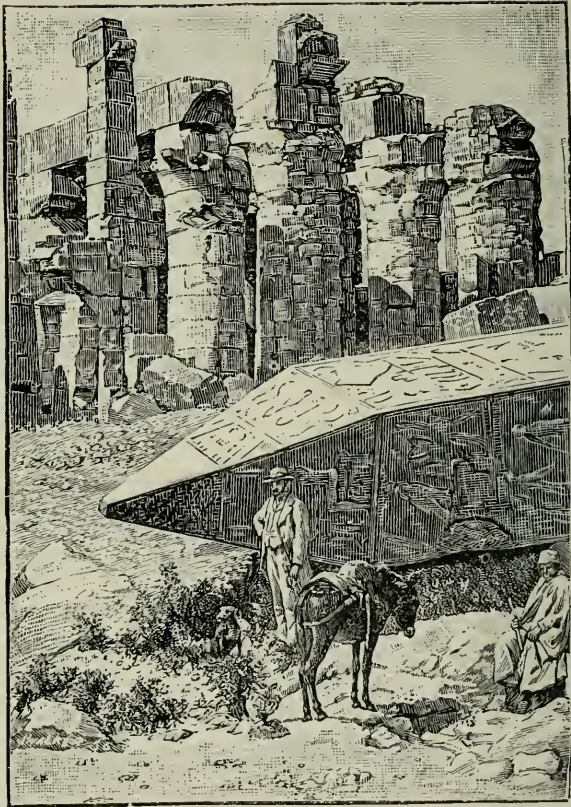
sense, the narrative can raise no question as to the absolute universality of the catastrophe, since the whole earth of the narrator was simply his visible horizon. This will also remove much of the discussion as to the animals taken into the ark, since these must have been limited to the fauna of the district of the narrator; and, even within this, the lists actually given in Genesis exclude the larger carnivorous animals, though it is true that these are usually present in the toy Noah's arks, from which most persons seem to have derived their ideas of the inmates of Noah's ship. Thus, there would be nothing to prevent our supposing, on the one hand, that some species of animals became altogether extinct, and that the whole faunæ of vast regions, not reached by the deluge, remained intact.<sup>1</sup> It is further curious, that the narrative of the deluge in the Assyrian tablets, like that of Genesis, purports to be the testimony of a witness, and, indeed, of the Assyrian equivalent to Noah himself. The "waters of Noah" are thus coming more and more within the cognizance of geology and archæology; and it is more than probable that other points of contact than those we have noticed may ere long develop themselves.

It is not consistent with the plan of this work to follow further the early history of man in the Pentateuch, except in so far as it may enter incidentally into the subjects of the following chapters. There are, however, many other points in these old records which commend themselves to the attention of scientific students. Scientific exploration and accidental discovery have, even since the appearance of the first edition of this work, removed many difficulties and objections, and we may hope that the excavator's spade and the observations of geologists and archæologists will in the future tend more and more to the vindication of the truth of the early books of the

<sup>1</sup> The expression, "From all that go out of the ark to every beast of the earth," would seem to imply that there were wild beasts preserved otherwise than in the ark (Gen. ix. 10).

Bible from the attacks of a vexatious verbal criticism. On the other hand, it may derive from these venerable documents many useful hints in aid of its own investigations, as well as invaluable guidance with reference to the moral and social difficulties of the present time, and to the solution of religious doubts.

NOTE.—While this edition was in the press, an article appeared by Dr. Fritz Hommel, of the University of Munich, which, on purely archæological and philological grounds, places Eden in Southern Babylonia, as in the text. Dr. Hommel, however, like most other scholars, expresses much doubt as to the rivers or Eden, which, as shown above, are so clearly defined by the topography of the region, when taken in connection with its probable condition in the Post-glacial period.



Apex of the great prostrate obelisk of Queen Hatasu at Karnak, one of the two largest obelisks known, of red Syene granite. In the background are the ruins of a temple of Nubian sandstone. [From a photograph.]

## CHAPTER V.

### *EGYPTIAN STONES AND THEIR TEACHING.*

NOTHING is more remarkable in primitive humanity than that exploratory instinct which searches out and utilizes every natural product within reach. We see this in the early discovery of the gold and bedolach and shoham stone of the hills eastward of Eden. We see it in the shells, minerals, and other objects collected in sepulchres and early caves of residence. We see it in the fact that the rudest peoples of modern times have scarcely allowed any plant, animal, or mineral, suitable to their simple needs, to escape their notice. It was the same with those young nations which sprang into existence and grew so rapidly immediately after the deluge, and whose people brought with them into their new homes the traditional culture of the antediluvian time. The valley of the Nile is perhaps pre-eminent in this respect, and nothing is more striking to a scientific traveller in that country than the variety of material used by its industrious and ingenious people in their works of construction.

In my recent visit to Egypt, my attention was naturally turned to this subject, more especially as I noticed that very inaccurate names are often given to stones and minerals by archæologists. I took every opportunity to obtain specimens of economic stones and minerals, and soon formed a somewhat large collection. I was aided in this by my friends, Dr. Emil Brugsch Bey and Dr. Schweinfurth; and Dr. Bonney, of London, and Dr. Harrington and Mr. Adams, of Montreal,

have been so kind as to contribute valuable lithological determinations. I am also indebted to a paper by Dr. Persifor Frazer on the New York Obelisk,<sup>1</sup> and to another by Professor Rupert Jones, on the marbles and other monumental stones in the British Museum.<sup>2</sup>

The oldest and most durable materials of construction in most countries are the hard crystalline felspathic rocks known as granites and gneisses, of which the Aberdeen granites, so extensively worked in Scotland, constitute an eminent modern example.<sup>3</sup> Rocks of this kind, and mainly of a reddish or flesh colour, occur in Egypt in great force at the first cataract, the ancient Syene, now Assouan, and have been used by the ancient Egyptians from the earliest periods. In the times of the early monarchy, before the Hyksos invasion—that is, before the time of Abraham—these hard stones were worked with as much skill as in any subsequent time. A remarkable example is the so-called Temple of the Sphinx at Gizeh, attributed to Kephren, the builder of the Second Pyramid, and a monarch of the fourth dynasty. This temple, preserved by having been buried in the drift sand of the desert, is constructed of immense squared stones of red granite, beautifully fitted and jointed; and Kephren's pyramid was cased with the same costly stone. A still earlier building, the Great Pyramid, though constructed of limestone, has its principal interior chamber built of this red granite; with the stones fitted in the nicest manner, and arranged so as to resist effectually the pressure of the superincumbent mass. The last of the great obelisks which adorned the Temple of the Sun at Heliopolis dates from the reign of Usertesen I., of the twelfth dynasty, and is the oldest obelisk now standing in Egypt. It was an

<sup>1</sup> "Journ. Am. Inst. Mining Engineers."

<sup>2</sup> "Proc. Geol. Association," vol. viii.

<sup>3</sup> The quarried rock at Assouan is a gneiss interstratified with micaceous schists, and penetrated by thick dykes and masses of intrusive granite.



old monument in the time of Joseph. Later obelisks from the same temple are those now in New York Park and on the Thames Embankment, and which are said at this moment to be the largest quarried stones in those countries, though they were quarried, sculptured, and set up as early as the time of Joseph, and had later inscriptions added to them in honour of Rameses II., the Pharaoh of the Hebrew oppression. But these obelisks are inferior in size to those set up by the great queen Hatasu, the elder sister and predecessor of Thothmes III., which are eighty feet in height, and one of which still stands in all its majesty. The other has fallen, and lies in several pieces on the ground, enabling the traveller to see its beautifully polished apex or pyramidion, ornamented with figures of the kneeling queen presenting offerings to the spirit of her deceased father, represented as a god—perhaps one of the finest and boldest pieces of granite-cutting in the world.<sup>1</sup> It is interesting to note that this Hatasu, who built a magnificent tomb for herself at Deir el Bahari, opposite Karnak, has so far been more fortunate than her contemporaries in having it preserved inviolate, while it has also served as a refuge in times of danger to the mummies of several later royal personages, including the great Rameses himself. The mummy of Hatasu has, however, as yet not been found, and I have no doubt that it is placed in some secret receptacle never yet revealed<sup>2</sup> to greedy Arab or prying antiquary.

The two greatest granite statues in Egypt, or in the world, are those of Rameses II., at Tanis, whose fragments, accord-

<sup>1</sup> See cut facing this chapter. In an inscription on the obelisks of Hatasu they are said to have been gilded, and the pyramidions terminated with pure gold; and the almost incredible statement is made, if it has been correctly read, that the stones were taken from the quarry, set up, and sculptured in the space of seven months. The name of the artist of these magnificent monuments is said to have been Semnut.

<sup>2</sup> May it remain till that resurrection day to which she, with the faith of her people, no doubt looked forward!

ing to Mr. Flinders Petrie, show that it must have been eighty feet in height, and the prostrate statue of the same king, at the Ramesseum in Thebes, which has been sixty feet high. The latest of the great granite shafts brought from Syene is that of the pillar in honour of the Emperor Diocletian, known as Pompey's Pillar, and now standing at Alexandria. Its shaft is seventy three feet in length. Another great stone, intended for an obelisk, and of unknown date, lies quarried out, but unremoved, in the quarry of Assouan. It is ninety-five feet long, and eleven and a half feet wide at the base.<sup>1</sup>

One of my specimens is a portion of a sarcophagus, probably of a priest, with the name of Seti I., father of Rameses II. It is made of a coarse dark red and grey granite, with large crystals of red felspar.<sup>2</sup> The hieroglyphics are deeply and remarkably clearly cut, and with square edges. Circular figures have apparently been sunk with a hollow drill, armed probably with emery or diamond. This kind of cutting explains many of the great works of the ancient Egyptians in hard stone. Mr. Petrie was the first to inform us of this fact,

<sup>1</sup> The beautiful figure of Rameses II., seated between two deities, and the great historical stela of the same king, found on the site of Pithom, and now in the public square at Ismailia, are of this red granite, and are of special interest from their probable connection with the labour of the Hebrew bondsmen.

<sup>2</sup> This red granite of Syene, sometimes called rose granite, or red oriental granite, is a hornblendic granite, consisting of red orthoclase felspar, whitish quartz and black hornblende. By the occurrence of large felspar crystals, the mass sometimes becomes porphyritic, and resembles the spotted granite of Shap, in Westmorland, though of a lighter colour. Sometimes it is so poor in quartz that it becomes a syenite, in the modern German acceptance of the term. In point of fact, the true syenite, or rock of Syene, is a syenitic granite, but certain German lithologists have feloniously attempted to rob it of this name. A specimen in my collection, from the ruined temple of the Second Pyramid, has a red and white felspar, a little quartz and black hornblende, and also contains a few scales of black mica, and a little pyrite.

and I now possess cores of hard stones collected by him. The use of a hollow reed, armed with sand, is a contrivance of many rude peoples, and possibly antediluvian. The Egyptians had perfected the instrument into the likeness of the modern diamond drill, and with this they bored into these great granite stones, cutting them into holes, and then breaking out the cores and intervening spaces. On the wall of the Boulak Museum I saw a slab of hard stone which had been treated in this way, and left in an unfinished state, showing plainly the method by which hieroglyphics had been cut in the finished portions. (See Fig. 17, *infra*.)

The colossal statue of Rameses, at Thebes, is of a coarse variety, tending to gneiss, since it shows a laminated structure ; and the same is the case with some other statues of the same king at Luxor and Karnak.<sup>1</sup> It is to be remarked here, that the gneiss is often a more compact and durable stone than the granite, except that it tends more readily to split along the planes of lamination, and sometimes presents irregular dark bands. In some of the older structures at Gizeh, a porphyritic gneiss is employed, which has two kinds of felspar, white and pink.<sup>2</sup> The red syenite is probably the *Lithos Æthiopikos* of Herodotus, and the *Syenites lapis* of Pliny.

Another frequent stone in Egyptian architecture and sculpture is a black granite, often confounded with diorite and basalt. We are most familiar with white and grey granites, or those of a reddish hue, but there are varieties of the rock of so dark a colour that they may be called black, though when polished they are usually of a very dark grey. They contain

<sup>1</sup> Diodorus remarks not only on the great size, but also on the "excellent stone" of this statue. The block before it was sculptured must have weighed 900 tons.

<sup>2</sup> Oligoclase and microcline. In the paper above referred to will be found a good description of the minerals of the New York obelisk, by Professor Frazer.

the ingredients of ordinary granite, except that the dark-coloured hornblende is in large excess.<sup>1</sup> I obtained specimens of this rock from a doorway in one of the oldest temples at Karnak, and from the *débris* of the perished temple of the Second Pyramid at Gizeh, also from a sarcophagus at Thebes ; and some, at least, of the remarkable statues of the cat-headed goddess Pasht, or Bast, in her temple at Karnak, are of this stone.<sup>2</sup> A similar stone occurs in one of the old sarcophagi at Sakkâra. A figure of Nectanebo I. and a hawk from Pithom, now in the British Museum, are of black granite,

The black and white spotted rock, consisting of black hornblende and white lime felspar, properly named diorite, was a favourite material for Egyptian sculpture. Far back in the Stone period this rock must have been known to the Egyptians, as to all other primitive peoples, as the best material, next to jade, for stone hatchets, chisels, and hammers. A fragment of a hammer of this material occurs in my collection from the old cavern at Nahr-el-Kelb, and every collection of North American stone implements contains chisels and axes of diorite. Perhaps this primitive use directed early attention to it, or perhaps its capacity to take a high polish, its dark colour, and its extreme durability, may have tended in this direction. In any case, though apparently not used for obelisks, it is one of the most common materials of sphinxes, and statues of gods and kings, and, as Mr. Petrie's excavations at Naukratis have shown, was also largely used for platters, trays, and similar utensils. More especially, a variety found at Assouan, and which has large white blotches on a black ground, was a very favourite material. At Assouan this rock, which occurs in dykes or great seams in the gneiss, weathers out on the decay of the containing rock, and stands out in relief in large masses,

<sup>1</sup> Quartz, felspar, and hornblende, or mica.

<sup>2</sup> Dr. Harrington states that it consists of quartz, orthoclase, oligoclase, and a little microcline, hornblende, biotite, magnetite, and sphene.

almost isolated. Of these the Egyptians seem to have taken advantage, because of their accessibility, and possibly also because the fact of their thus weathering out testified to their extreme durability. I have numerous specimens from broken statues and statuettes; some of these are ordinary diorite, others the spotted variety above mentioned, others a black variety, almost wholly hornblendic, and some in which the hornblende has a dark green hue. According to Jones, the celebrated Rosetta stone is a diorite, and the great scarabæus and several sarcophagi in the British Museum are of the same material. He thinks that the Basanites of Pliny was a diorite, but it would rather seem to have been the diabase referred to farther on. The two Pithom sphinxes now at Ismailia are of diorite, as also the great sphinx of the shepherd kings, and the statue of the "fish-offerers" from Zoan, now in the Gizeh Museum.

Jones also notices the remarkable statue of Rameses II. in the British Museum, the upper part of which only remains; but this, though in one piece, consists of two kinds of stone. Below, it is of the white-spotted diorite, above, it is of red granite, and the stone must have been obtained from the junction of a diorite vein with a mass or dyke of granite.

The manner in which the Egyptians quarried, removed, and worked these gigantic, refractory, and very heavy stones has long attracted inquiry and attention. The granite obelisk now lying in the quarry at Assouan shows that the method employed was to cut the two outer faces of the great prism, and then to disengage the mass by notching it behind, and inserting wedges, subsequently soaked with water. An attempt has been made at a later date to cut up this obelisk into blocks by cross grooves, on which fires would probably have been built, and then suddenly quenched with water, so as to crack the stone; but the intention was not carried out. If many skilled workmen were available, the quarrying of one of these stones need not

*Should it not be "previously"?*

have occupied much time. The removal of the disengaged block from the quarry was effected by means of a tramway and rollers, as represented in figures copied by Wilkinson. The motive power was that of men pulling on ropes. Brought to the river's bank, the stone was probably placed on a raft or barge at low Nile, and when floated at the time of the inundation, was carried to its distant place by water, and floated as high as the inundation would permit. The dressing and polishing of these stones was a work of great labour, and must have been done with tools of hard bronze or steel, and with rubbers of sandstone. The incising of hieroglyphics was, as Petrie has shown, accomplished with hollow drills of metal, armed with emery or diamond. The more quartzose varieties of granite must have taxed the tools and the patience of the sculptors severely; but, as we shall find, the Egyptians sculptured even quartzite itself.

Another dark-coloured stone profusely employed by the Egyptians, especially for smaller objects, is a nearly black or dark-greenish substance, showing a slight play of colours in spots when polished, and weathering in places to a rusty hue. It is a fine-grained diabase or dolerite, with detached crystals of olivine, and occasional cleavable crystals of lime felspar.<sup>1</sup> Chips and fragments of it, sometimes with polished surfaces, abound on most of the sites in Egypt. I have a painter's pallet in this stone, and two scarabs, one of the sacred eyes used as charms, and some large beads, and there are a polisher, perforated disc, and other objects, in a small collection from Naukratis, presented to the Museum of McGill University by the Egypt Exploration Fund. This stone has a dingy appearance, and I do not know why it was so favoured, except, perhaps, for the greenish colour and lustrous appear-

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Adams, who has examined specimens microscopically, defines it as plagioclase basalt of the subdivision of olivine basalts.

ance of the olivine grains and the play of colour in the felspar. Neither of these appearances is, however, conspicuous, except under a bright light, and in recently polished specimens. A rock similar to this occurs in the Upper (possibly Huronian) series at Assouan ; but I did not see any place there where it had been quarried. It no doubt occurs in the Arabian ridge east of the Nile, and may possibly be one of the varieties of the more modern volcanic rocks occurring in Lower Egypt, and described by Arzruni from specimens collected by Schweinfurth. I have unfortunately no specimens of these rocks, which occur at Abu-zabel. The prevalent rock is, however, described as an olivine-dolerite, in terms which might well apply to the kind of stone in question.

Next to this I would place certain rocks which are usually called basalt, but some of which seem really to be hardened ash-rocks of volcanic origin, or altered sandstones. They were no doubt quarried in the hills east of the Nile. I have a small vase in this stone, probably an ash-rock ; and the sarcophagus of one of the sacred bulls at Sakkâra appeared to be of similar material. In the tomb called that of Unas, at the same place, are fragments of a sarcophagus of similar stone. A fragment of a sacrificial tablet from Thebes, in my collection, is of a greenish altered sandstone, having some resemblance to the stones mentioned above. Fragments of a compact basaltic-looking stone occur on the pyramid plateau ; and Dr. Schweinfurth has found masses of rock of this kind in the hills toward the Red Sea, where it has been quarried. True basalt is, however, not common in Egyptian sculptures, though it has been the custom to call all dark-coloured rocks by this name.

A geological visitor to the Gizeh Museum has his attention at once arrested by the beautiful statue of Kephren, the builder of the Second Pyramid. It is a fine portrait statue, in the best style of early Egyptian art, when it was still natural, and

before it had entered on its later conventional stage. It is one of several such statues found in fragments in the red granite temple of the Sphinx, to which reference has already been



FIG. 17.—Statue of Kephren, or Kafra, the Builder of the Second Pyramid, in Anorthosite Gneiss. (Boulak Museum.)

made; and though of very great antiquity, its polish is as perfect as if done yesterday (Fig. 17). The stone is usually called diorite in the descriptions, but is really an anorthosite



gneiss of the same description with that which occurs abundantly in the Upper Laurentian of Canada, and I recognised it at once as a familiar rock. It has, at first sight, the aspect of a dark grey marble, with blackish veins running through it; but its lustre is higher than that of marble, and its hardness much greater; and the apparent veins are really the lines of bedding, marked by dark streaks of hornblendic matter.<sup>1</sup> The rock itself is essentially a lime felspar, with a banded or gneissose structure. When polished, it has a fine translucent appearance and a very high lustre, akin to that of moonstone. I did not see this rock in place, but was informed that it exists in the mountains east of the Nile, where it no doubt indicates the existence of a formation of the Upper Laurentian age.<sup>2</sup> I am not aware that this beautiful rock has been worked in more modern times; but the sculptors of Kephren, in his far-back time, anterior to that of Abraham, had the audacity to execute in it no less than nine statues of this king, for his temple at Gizeh. The material is a hard and obdurate one, but it has vindicated the selection by its unique beauty and great durability. I have seen small ornamental articles of the same stone, one being a knob or button presented to me by Brugsch Bey, but I do not know their dates.

Serpentine was a favourite material with many ancient nations, owing to its green colour, its fine lustre when polished, and the ease of working the softer varieties. I did not see it in place, but it is a natural accompaniment of such rocks as those of Assouan. I have in my collection a fragment of a ushebti, a little mummy-like figure buried with the dead as a servant in the spirit-world, in this material; also scarabs and

<sup>1</sup> The marks seen on the right arm and head of the statue (see figure) represent these lines.

<sup>2</sup> According to Dr. Harrington and Mr. Adams, this rock is a plagioclase felspar, with a little hornblende, and scarcely differs either in mass or in thin slices from specimens from the Laurentian of Canada.

vases, and in the collection from Naukratis, already referred to, are platters of a coarse greenish serpentine. Many figures and other objects of this material may be seen in the Gizeh Museum. Green serpentine was one of the stones included by the ancients as varieties of emerald. The colour was a sacred one, and it is not unlikely that the green glaze which covers many of the little earthen ushepti and scarabs was intended to imitate such stones.

Talcose schist, allied to the potstone of America, and chlorite schist of a very dark green colour, were very much used for small and cheap figures of deities, etc. The material, being soft, readily lent itself to purposes of this kind, and though easily scratched, it is susceptible of a good polish. Allied to these stones are various kinds of slates, green, grey, and purple, which were extensively cut and polished for a great variety of uses. The talcose and chloritic stones appear to have been much used for moulds, wherein to cast metallic objects, as rings, balls, etc., a use for which their softness and resistance to heat well fits them. Many objects of this kind occur in the Naukratis collections. In the same collections occurs a curious instance of perseverance in the polishing of a slab of chlorite schist, holding intensely hard crystals of magnetite; but the industrious lapidary has smoothed the stone, regardless of this inconvenient hardness of a portion of it. In these Naukratis collections occur fragments of the beautiful bright green chromiferous mica schist, only known to me elsewhere from localities in the Tyrol and in the State of Maine. I have not seen or heard of it as occurring in place in Egypt, though it might occur in the Arabian chain; nor do I know to what use it was applied, unless, perhaps, to be inlaid, on account of its brilliancy, in mosaics or ornamental stucco-work.

I was not so fortunate as to see *in situ* the Egyptian red porphyry so extensively used in the Roman period. I ob-

tained, however, a small disc or button of the variety with black ground and white spots, caused by small crystals of white felspar. Nor did I obtain any specimen of the famous green breccia, of which the sarcophagus of Nectanebo I. in the British Museum is made, and which is found near Kosseir, on the Red Sea, belonging probably to the Huronian or Cambrian series. It is an epitome of the older lithology of Egypt, containing, according to Newbold, fragments of gneiss, diorite, porphyry, slate, serpentine, green felspar, and marble, all compacted together by a greenish or purplish, slightly calcareous cement.

Another very hard stone, much used by the Egyptians, is the red, brown, and white quartzite, or quartz rock, which is found in the hill of Jebel Ahmar, or the Red Hill, near Cairo. This hill consists of a stratified sandstone, more or less tinged with oxide of iron, and resting on the Eocene limestone, itself being of Miocene age.<sup>1</sup> It is therefore, geologically speaking, not of ancient date. It is the matrix of the celebrated petrified forest, the silicified trees of which, washed out of the sandstone, lie loose on the surface of the desert ; but may also be seen in place in some parts of Jebel Ahmar. The remarkable feature of this rock is, that since its deposition, siliceous springs have poured through it, and have hardened portions of the sandstone by deposit of flinty matter between the grains, so that it becomes a perfect quartzite, resembling some of the oldest rocks of that description.<sup>2</sup> In process of time, and more especially in the Pleistocene age, when much of Egypt was under water, and on its emergence was deluged with rain, the softer part of the sandstone has been washed away, leaving only the fossil trees. The harder part remains in Jebel Ahmar and some similar hills. This hard stone has been so

<sup>1</sup> Meyer-Eimer has, on the evidence of certain fresh water shells, referred it to the Tongrien, or Lower Miocene age.

<sup>2</sup> The grains of sand are partially rounded, like the modern desert sand.

extensively quarried in ancient times that the sides of the hill are a mass of stone chips; and it is still used for millstones, and also for macadamizing the newer streets of Cairo. But the uses made of it by the ancient Egyptians were multiform, and some of them almost incredible. This stone must have attracted the attention of the Egyptians at a very early period. Though flint available for knives and arrow-heads abounds in the limestones of Egypt, and has been used throughout the whole course of Egyptian history, up to the present day, and though diorite, fit for the formation of stone axes and chisels, is also abundant in Upper Egypt, quartzite like that of Jebel

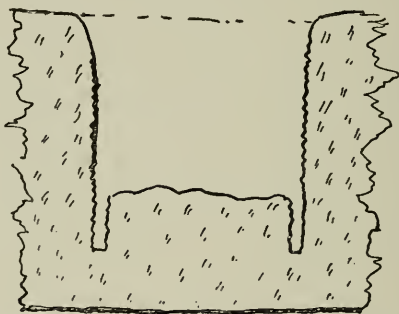


FIG. 18.—Section of drilled Pivot-hole, Gizeh, after Petrie.

Ahmar must have been very valuable to prehistoric man as a material for battle-axes, hoes, harrow-teeth and spear-heads, stone hammers and drill-sockets, specimens of some of which exist in collections. I have in the collections of the Egypt Exploration Fund, from Naukratis, a disc-shaped drill-socket with the round hole in its centre polished to the last degree of smoothness, and a hammer or polisher made of the same stone. In somewhat later times it commended itself to the Egyptians as the most durable stone for some of their larger works. My first acquaintance with it in this aspect was in the collection of

the late Dr. Douglas, of Quebec, where, many years ago, I saw an oblong stela, or monumental tablet of quartzite, with an inscription deeply incised on it. I remarked at the time, that the sculptor must have consulted durability and indestructibility without regard to labour or expense ; but I was not then aware of the far greater extent of work of this kind in Egypt itself. In the Gizeh Museum are two tables of offerings of this stone, of the white or light grey variety. They are flat and square, almost four feet in width, and six inches thick. The edges are inscribed with hieroglyphics, and the tops are wrought into a series of perfectly formed and beautifully worked circular bowls, to hold the offerings of worshippers. They are believed to belong to one of the older periods of Egyptian art, and are astonishing monuments of the skill and patience of the early workmen. They are also the highest artistic realization of those flat slabs, with cavities for offerings, which constitute the rude altars of the hills of Palestine, and of so many other countries.

In front of one of those great propyla, or gateways, which adorn the temples of Karnak, on the side towards Luxor, I noticed the lower half of a sitting statue of this stone, which must, when entire, have been twenty to thirty feet in height. It was composed of a single block of the Jebel Ahmar quartzite, or a stone of similar quality, of a light brown colour, and with lines of flint pebbles passing diagonally across the great body. I had not seen any notice of the figure in the guide-books, and was struck with the fact, unexampled, I suppose, elsewhere than in Egypt, of such a figure executed in a stone as hard as agate. On its pedestal was a royal cartouch, which I suppose to be that of Thothmes II. The upper part of the statue was entirely gone, but I feel sure that nothing short of intentional violence could have prevented it from enduring for ever. A figure of such material would be everlasting, not only in the climate of Egypt, but in any climate in the

world. The statue referred to had been one of six of similar size, sitting in front of this propylon. The first, on the left hand, on approaching from the south, was of finely granular white limestone or marble with crystalline veins. The second was also limestone, a hard, compact, white variety, showing, under the microscope, oolitic grains cemented by calcite. The third is the quartzite statue already referred to. The fourth is of compact limestone, like the second, but without the oolitic structure. The fifth was wanting; but, judging from the fragments scattered around, had been of quartzite like the third. The sixth was also wanting, but chips scattered around indicated that it had been of Assouan granite. It is likely that the quartzite and granite statues had been destroyed to make millstones, while the less useful limestone had been spared. It would thus appear that the six statues placed in front of this gateway had been of different materials, derived from quarries in various places between Assouan and Cairo, and two of them were of a quartzite which would entirely defy the art of the modern sculptor, unless he were to work, like his predecessor in Egypt, with the diamond drill.

Among the remains excavated from the temple erected by Rameses II., at Pithom, and now at Ismailia, is a portion of a monolithic shrine made of this rock. The material has not been of the most uniform quality or colour, and it has been injured by weathering, and broken; but as it stands it is a remarkable work. In form it is a little room or chamber about six feet long, five feet wide, and four feet high, with the walls, which have been covered with hieroglyphics, about six inches thick. In the centre are the remains of a sphinx, like a dog sitting in a kennel, and this sphinx is itself a portion of the rock left in excavating the shrine. The stone is so cut that the bedding is vertical, and it must have been hollowed out by the drill. It was, no doubt, dedicated to the sphinx or guardian cherub of the place; and as it is coeval with the oppression of the

Hebrews, and from one of the store cities which they erected for Pharaoh, the question arises whether this somewhat unusual symbolism may have been intended for the edification of the Hebrews, as representing one of their religious symbols. Mr. Petrie describes a shrine at Zoan, or Tanis, which seems to have been similar to this ; but I have not seen any specimen of its material. Petrie has also discovered that the two colossal statues described by Herodotus as standing on pyramidal bases in Lake Mœris were of quartzite, though only fragments of them remain.

Had the Egyptians been limited to the hard stones above referred to, with all their industry and skill, they would have been unable to carry out their greater architectural works ; but they had unlimited supplies of easily worked material in the Nubian sandstones and the Eocene and cretaceous limestones of the Nile valley. The most important quarries of the sandstone are at the gorge of Silsilis, or Selsileh, where the Nile flows in a narrow channel between cliffs of this rock, and very extensive quarrying operations have been carried on, and rock temples excavated. The quarries at this place show the very careful manner in which the Egyptians cut out their great blocks by means of chisels and wedges, leaving the quarry face in very good condition, and wasting very little material. The same methods were employed in the limestone quarries at Turra, and were in use in Asia also, as they appear in the quarries of the kings under the city of Jerusalem. Beyond Silsilis, the sandstone has been opened at various places on the Upper Nile. I saw remains of old quarries on the Island of Biggeh, near Philæ ; and behind Assouan there are quarries in a ledge of this sandstone where drums for columns have been cut out in such a manner as to leave semi-cylindrical recesses in the quarry face. Farther up, the great temple of Abou Simbel is excavated in this rock.

The sandstone of Silsilis, which is the so-called Nubian

sandstone, is in thick beds separated by layers of shale, and affords good blocks of a buff or grey colour, sometimes nearly white, or with a tinge of reddish. It is easily cut and coarse grained, and in an extreme climate much of it would be very perishable.<sup>1</sup> Even in Egypt, when exposed to moisture, it decays somewhat rapidly. It is, however, an admirable building stone, and nearly all the great temples in Upper Egypt are constructed of it. It suits very well for a bold and vigorous style of sculpture, and it is well adapted to the large hieroglyphics and gigantic battle-scenes on the propyla and walls of temples, as well as to the building of such great columns as those of Karnak Dendara, Esneh, and Kom Ombos. When finer decoration and brighter colouring were desired in the interior of temples, it was coated over with a thin, smooth surface of gypsum, giving it the effect of white marble, and on this coloured figures were painted. At Kom Ombos I saw a slab, with raised hieroglyphics cut in a grey layer on a reddish ground having the effect of a coarse cameo; but I do not know if this was intentional. The two great statues of Amunoph, on the plain of Thebes, the Colossi *par excellence*, and one of which was the vocal Memnon,—a distinction probably due to fissures in the stone,—are of this material, and, with the gigantic figures at Abou Simbel, furnish the principal examples of its use in statuary.

Limestone constitutes the mass of all the cliffs fronting the valley of the Lower Nile. In it were excavated the rock-cut tombs of Beni Hassan, Sakkâra, Assiout, Thebes, and many other places. Of it were constructed the pyramids of Gizeh, and to a large extent the temples of Abydos, and probably those at Memphis and other ancient cities of Lower Egypt. It is of various degrees of hardness and texture, and of prevailing light colour, often pure white. It is, in the main, an organic limestone composed of shells and tests of marine animals, and frag-

<sup>1</sup> The grains of sand are angular, and only imperfectly united by a silicious or ferruginous cement.



ments of these. The stepped pyramid of Sakkâra, supposed to be the oldest in Lower Egypt, is built of a light-brown coarse limestone from the vicinity. The material of the great pyramids of Gizeh, with the exception of their outer casing, is the nummulitic limestone of that part of the Nile cliffs, some of it containing quantities of entire discs of nummulites and other fossils. The outer casing of the Great Pyramid was of a beautifully fine white limestone, from the quarries of Turra, on the opposite bank of the river. With this also the finer buildings of old Memphis were constructed, and it is still used in Cairo. This limestone has the appearance of a hardened chalk, and is easily worked and sawn. Under the microscope it shows an infinity of minute microscopic shells of *Foraminifera*. A very large proportion of the sculptures and inscriptions in the temples and tombs are cut in this white limestone. In the case of the tombs, they are often engraved on the solid rock itself; and in the case of temples, on slabs lining the walls, and very neatly fitted to each other. In the excavation of tombs, the beds of pure white limestone were carefully selected, and in like manner the best layers were followed in the quarries. After the inscriptions or figures were cut on the walls, they were tinted with bright colours. These colours, as we saw them at Abydos, and in the Theban tombs and elsewhere, are red ochre, yellow ochre, a copper blue and green, and white, the latter apparently gypsum. All these colours are unchangeable by time, durability being evidently a main object with these old people. The medium employed was not glue or size, but apparently gypsum, applied rapidly, before it had time to set. If not, the colour, in a very fine state of division, was merely mixed with water and applied to a thin film of gypsum previously laid on the stone. This was certainly the method used, as already mentioned, in colouring sandstone interiors. One of the finest extant examples of work in the white limestone, is that of the tomb of Ti, a wealthy country gentleman of the old kingdom.

The style and taste of the sculptures in this tomb, which is of very early date, are superior to those even in the tombs of the kings at Thebes, though on a less extensive scale. The celebrated sphinx of Gizeh is merely a mass of the natural limestone left in place when the rest of the bed was quarried for the pyramids,<sup>1</sup> and shaped with wonderful art into that monster, whose grave, sweet countenance still retains some expression, even after wanton disfigurement, and which was the guardian cherub of the cemetery of Memphis.

One of the most interesting materials employed in Egypt is the oriental alabaster, one of the stones called onyx by the Romans, though not that to which the name is now applied. It has, however, been not inappropriately called "onyx marble." Egypt was in ancient times celebrated for this stone, which may be obtained in considerable quantity at several points on the Nile. It is a carbonate of lime, deposited by water in fissures and cavities, and in successive layers often differing in colour and texture, in the same manner with the stalagmite and stalactite, or "congealed water" of caverns in limestone rock. Large veins of it occur in the Eocene limestones of Egypt, and have been worked from the earliest times. At Gizeh the magnificent granite temple of Kephren, already mentioned, was lined with this stone in the early age of the pyramid-building kings; and the interior decoration of the mosque of Mehemet Ali, in the citadel of Cairo, is of the same stone. Some of the very old tombs in the Memphite cemetery at Sakkâra are lined with alabaster, or partially so lined. A curious example of the latter may be seen in the tomb called that of Unas. The inner sepulchral chamber of this tomb is lined with slabs of alabaster. The work is then continued in common limestone, and the entrance to the tomb is lined with the stronger and more enduring red granite. At Abydos are the remains of a magnificent monolithic shrine of this stone;

<sup>1</sup> The idea that the sphinx is older than the pyramids is, of course, an error.

and at Karnak a similar shrine is built of alabaster slabs, some of them twenty feet in length. In this and other cases one is astonished that so fine work and material should be lavished on places enshrouded in darkness; and the question is raised, but cannot be answered,—What means of illumination had the ancient Egyptians, beyond the smoky oil lamps and torches, which would scarcely suffice adequately to illuminate the interior of tombs and temples, and would soon have destroyed their beautiful workmanship?

Alabaster was largely used for vases, flasks, and unguent

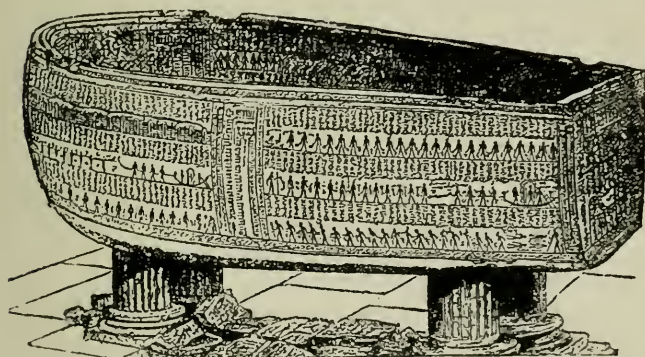


FIG. 19—Alabaster Sarcophagus of Seti I., now in the Soane Museum, London.

pots, or which great numbers are found in Egyptian tombs. One derivation of the name is from these handleless vases;<sup>1</sup> but it is more likely that the word is Egyptian, and possibly the name of a place where the stone was quarried.

The finest work in Egyptian alabaster that I have seen is the sarcophagus of Seti I., father of Rameses II., found in his tomb in the "valley of the kings," by Belzoni, and now in Sir John Soane's Museum, in London. It is 9 ft. 4 in. in length,

<sup>1</sup> *A*, "not," and λαβη, "a handle."

3 ft. 8 in. wide, and from 2 ft. 8 in. to 2 ft. 3 in. deep; and is hollowed out of a single block so delicately that its general thickness is only  $2\frac{1}{2}$  inches, and that a lamp placed within shines through the translucent sides. On the bottom of the coffin is a figure of Netpe, or Athor, the mother goddess, with arms extended to receive the body of the king; and the whole surface is covered with inscriptions and processional figures representing the liturgy of the dead. The lid was of similar character, but has been broken to pieces. By a similar combination of accidents, the mummy of this great king—which had been transferred by its guardian priests, for greater security, to Deir el Bahari—is now in the Gizeh Museum; the noble sarcophagus prepared for it is in London; and his vast and beautifully decorated tomb stands open for the inspection of travellers in the “valley of the kings.”

The gypseous or soft alabaster is an entirely different stone from that above referred to, but was used by the Egyptians especially in later times and for small objects. Common gypsum occurs in various places in Egypt, and is apparently a modern deposit. A noted locality is at the base of the hills between Cairo and Helouan, where it is now quarried, and carried on the backs of camels to the railway, and thence to Cairo. It is, I presume, a deposit due to the action on the limestone of the same sulphurous waters which supply the Helouan baths. The ancient Egyptians well knew the properties and uses of gypsum, and employed it for cements, castings, and plastering the interiors of buildings and the surfaces of walls of crude brick. Stucco work on a large scale was not, however, much to the taste of the more ancient people of Kemi, and is more common in the Greek and later periods.

A pure, transparent, cleavable calcite, like Iceland spar, occurs sparingly in the Egyptian limestones; and I have beads and small ornaments executed in this stone, which, when recently polished, would resemble rock crystal, but is

more easily scratched, and liable to break along the planes of cleavage.

Fine grey clays and talcose clays, soft or indurated, are found in various places in the Nile valley, and are useful as cement, fullers' earth, and for pottery, and the manufacture of sham scarabs, in making which certain Arabs near Thebes are adepts. The manufacture of coarse pottery and of pottery jars has gone on from time immemorial in Egypt, and the *débris* of the water jars of the workmen at the pyramids before the time of Abraham, and those used to-day, are not materially different. There are, however, local differences; and some localities, as Ballarieh and Keneh, are celebrated for water jars, of which immense boat-loads are sent down the river from these places. The art of making fine porcelain seems to have been of late introduction in Egypt, but objects of a white sandy kaolin were covered with coloured glazes of great hardness and durability, and beautifully coloured. In very ancient times the curious figures like little mummies, called *ushebti*, or servants, were formed in this way, and covered with a greenish or bluish glaze, coloured with copper, and absolutely indestructible. These figures are often covered with black hieroglyphics, done in oxide of manganese. The *ushebti* were probably a survival of the old custom of immolating slaves on the tombs of their masters, that they might have service in the world of spirits. The figures of mummied servants, furnished with tools for agriculture or other work, formed a ritualistic substitute, like the paper garments burned by the Chinese to clothe their deceased ancestors, or the models of weapons and other useful objects buried with the dead by some American aborigines, and notably by the Chippewyans and the ancient Peruvians. They were consequently buried in great numbers with the dead, the number being probably an indication of the extent of the good wishes of friends. I have, among other specimens of these objects, one from the tomb

of Deir el Bahari with the cartouche of Hatasu—I do not know whether the older queen of that name, or a later successor. It is made of pure white quartzose clay, imperfectly baked, so as to be soft internally, and it is covered with an intensely hard siliceous glaze of a brilliant greenish-blue colour, with black figures. The glaze is very infusible, perfectly free from cracks, and as fresh as if quite modern. I also have a small quantity of glaze of this kind in the mass. It was found in a vase in a tomb near Thebes, and it is in fine sandy grains. It proves on examination to be a highly siliceous glass or enamel, very infusible, and coloured with copper. The specimen was given to me by the British Consul at Luxor, a noted collector of antiques, and probably represents the condition of the best quality of this glaze before it was melted on the surface of the clay figures.<sup>1</sup> Possibly the person in whose tomb it was found was a manufacturer, proud of the quality of his glaze. The Egyptians had in their later history attained to great perfection in this kind of art, and some specimens used in interior decoration of temples and tombs are very neatly done. I have one specimen, from Tel-el-Yehudieh, which is a radiating pattern in white glaze on a grey or neutral ground, and another, from Thebes, in which hieroglyphics in grey are set on a white ground. In both cases the surface seems to have been incised, and the glaze or enamel neatly set into the cavities before burning.

The Canadian boatmen who went on Wolseley's expedition were much struck with the extent to which mud is used in Egypt for purposes to which timber would be applied in Canada. One of them naively remarks, that in Egypt mud is very plentiful, wood very scarce and dear. They were surprised to see mud fences and walls, floors, shelves, cupboards, cooking-ovens, and hearths. What struck them still more, was

<sup>1</sup> Judd informs us, on the authority of French chemists, that this glaze is a double silicate of copper and calcium.—*The Academy*, May 25, 1889.

the practice of raising the gunwales of overloaded boats with a little wall of clay, which, when sun-dried, actually seems capable of resisting water for a time. Dr. Schweinfurth thinks, and I believe correctly, that when the first colonists entered Egypt the country was well wooded, and that its primitive inhabitants used this material for their buildings; but this stage had passed away almost at the dawn of history, and now one of the greatest deficiencies of Egypt is the scarcity and dearness of wood.

A curious style of pottery found in some small Egyptian objects consists of baked clay saturated with green colouring matter, so as to give it the appearance of a green stone. The colouring matter would seem to have been a salt of copper, mixed with the clay before it was burned, so that the whole mass was tinted with it throughout. I have also some small figures of gods, which have been cut out of hard clay, and afterward burned or hardened in the fire. Whether this was intentional or accidental, I do not know.

When the earliest colonists entered Egypt, at a time when metal was scarce, and when men depended much on implements of stone, it must have been a pleasant discovery to find that the limestones of the Nile valley are nearly as rich in flints as those of Syria and Arabia; and if they came from those regions they would naturally look for such treasures in their new country. It is, perhaps, not without historical significance that those regions of Western Asia and Northern Africa, where the earliest civilized communities are supposed to have been founded, are all well supplied with this important material of primitive art. However we may be disposed to despise the rude arts of the men of the Stone age, it is well to reflect on the fact that but for flint they must have been much more helpless. We cannot divide the history of Egypt into ages of stone, bronze, and iron. From the earliest times of its history all these materials were probably in use. It is

true that General Pitt Rivers has found flints believed to be worked in the old Pleistocene gravels near Thebes; but, on careful re-examination of the locality, I cannot concur in the belief that the flint flakes in question are other than the results of fracture by torrential action. The most abundant repositories of workable flints are, according to Dr. Schweinfurth, certain beds of the Middle Eocene. It is these that are worked at the village of Kerdasseh, near Gizeh, and similar beds were worked very extensively by Mehemet Ali, at Sunour, to the south-east of Cairo, to obtain gun-flints for his soldiers. At this place there are at present great heaps of chips resulting from this manufacture, besides which there are older cores and flakes belonging, as Schweinfurth thinks, to the work of the rude negroid tribes which, in ancient times, inhabited the region, and of whom the Ababdis of the eastern side of the Nile are supposed to be descendants. Though these remains are in a certain sense prehistoric, there is no reason to believe them older than the older dynasties of Egyptian kings; and it is certain that throughout their history the Egyptians used implements of flint for various purposes. A few instances of this may be stated here.

The numerous flint implements found in the vicinity of the baths of Helouan have been fully described by Mr. A. Jukes Brown.<sup>1</sup> From a visit to this place, and the study of his descriptions, I have no doubt that the objects of flint found here, and which lie on the desert surface, are of modern date. They include numbers of small and delicate flakes, or flint knives, some of them modified by edge-chipping, flint-saws worked with teeth on one edge, lance-heads, arrow-points, and scrapers, but the flakes or knives and shapeless chips vastly predominate. The place was evidently a flint factory, and if we inquire as to the customers it worked for, the answer is,

<sup>1</sup> "Journ. of Anthrop. Soc."



that the place was nearly opposite to Memphis and its great Necropolis, in the vicinity of the warm mineral springs of Helouan, and not far from the Turra quarries which supplied Memphis with stone. In such a place there would be a large demand for tools for working the soft limestone, for knives for ordinary purposes, as well as for opening mummies, for surgical operations, and for sacrificial rites. Cases of ancient surgical tools show us that in Egypt it was held proper to cut the human flesh in surgical operations only with knives of stone. Not only was this sanctioned by long usage,—for the surgeons of old time had always used this material, even in such difficult operations as trepanning the skull,—but it was known that metal knives might poison the flesh, and might carry with them the germs of disease, whereas the fresh flint flake, sharp as the sharpest razor, and perfectly clean, was a safe scalpel. The same idea we know existed among the Hebrews. Zipporah circumcised her son with a stone knife, and similar knives were used for this purpose in Palestine by Joshua.

Among the Egyptians a favourite pastime was that of shooting water-fowl and small birds, and this was done with arrows tipped with hard wood, bone, or flint. A large proportion of the Helouan flints are of forms available for this purpose. Again, it seem certain that saws and bodkins of flint were used in sculpturing the limestone so extensively employed in tombs and buildings. If we examine with a lens the inscriptions on walls and stelæ, it becomes apparent that they were cut, not with chisels, but with pointed scrapers, probably chips of flint held in the hand, or handled in wood. In such inscriptions the bottom of the depressed parts is scratched as if with points, and little grains of flint and fragments of shell are worked round, as if with sharp needles. The flint flakes which are found so abundantly near the tombs of the kings and those on the hill at Assiout, are in all likelihood the tools of the

patient sculptors who worked on the inscriptions and figures in these tombs. If these chips are ruder than those found at Helouan, this does not imply any greater antiquity; for, as Mitchell has well shown in his work on the rude arts of Scotland, the decay of such arts often produces rude forms like those of their commencement. This is a principle worthy of more attention on the part of archæologists than it has received.

Since the publication of the first edition of this work remarkable discoveries, illustrative of this subject, have been made by Petrie in two sites at the entrance to the Fayoum.

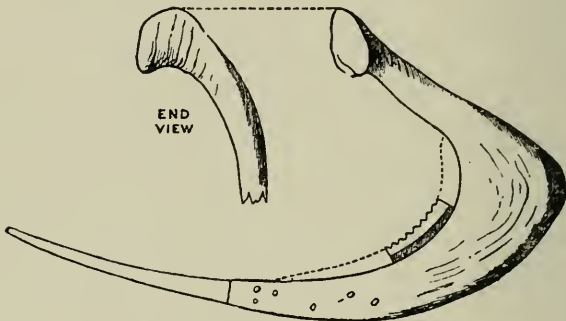


FIG. 19A.—Egyptian Wooden Sickle, with flint-cutting edge (12th dynasty), after Petrie.<sup>1</sup>

One of these, Kahun, belongs to the twelfth dynasty, coeval with the Hebrew patriarchs. In this were found numerous well-worked flint implements as well as metal tools. Of the former, the most curious was a wooden sickle, faced with saw-edged flakes of flint cemented into the wood (Fig. 19A). The other site, Gurob, was inhabited up to the time of Merenptah, or perhaps about the time of the Exodus. In this also were flint implements, but few and rude. We thus find in early

<sup>1</sup> Kahun and Gurob, 1890.

Egypt flint flakes used in reaping the fields, while at a later date they were being disused, and applied perhaps only to rougher uses, and hence ruder in form. Petrie remarks that we may thus date the decline of flint manufacture in Egypt at about 2,000 B.C., though rude flakes continued in use till late Roman times. No more interesting commentary could be imagined on the flint age of archæologists.<sup>1</sup>

The large use of flint for hoes, harrow-teeth, threshing instruments, and other agricultural implements would lead us to expect much material of this kind in a country like Egypt. To this category may belong many of the larger and ruder objects of flint, which, because of their form, have been classed as "palæolithic," though found on the surface. The following remarks on this industry in America are pertinent here, as throwing light on certain classes of large flint tools found in ancient repositories.<sup>2</sup>

The American Indians, before the European discovery, carried on the culture of maize, beans, and pumpkins from the Gulf of Mexico northward to the St. Lawrence and the region of the great lakes. As they had no domesticated animals, their tillage of the ground was all done by manual labour; and their ordinary tool, according to the testimony of all the early voyagers and travellers, was that time-honoured implement, the hoe. In the absence of metal, this had to be constructed of wood, shell, bone, or stone, or some combination of these. Among many tribes a curved stick, or a stick with a branch or prong, served the purpose. Others attached to the wooden handle a flat bivalve shell, the blade-bone of a deer, or a flat stone, sometimes provided with notches at the side.

<sup>1</sup> Sayce mentions (*Academy*, March 9, 1889) a ruin near Jebel Sheik Embarak, on the Nile, covered with flakes, cores, and arrow-heads, mixed with Roman pottery.

<sup>2</sup> See "Trans. Vict. Inst.," Feb., 1877.

The most artificially constructed flint hoes known are those from the neighbourhood of St. Louis, described by Professor Rau in the Smithsonian Report for 1868, and by Mr. Jones, in his "Antiquities of the Southern States." I had an opportunity of inspecting one of these recently, in the collection of the latter gentleman. It was slightly rounded in the front of the blade, and evidently polished by long use in the soil. Near the upper part were two deep notches to facilitate its firm attachment with thongs to the end of the handle.

The more usual form of hoe found throughout the agricultural regions of America is an oval or ovate flat chipped flint, not very dissimilar from many of those of the so-called Amiens type, but usually somewhat thinner, and often of very large size. Foster, in his "Prehistoric Races of America," describes several such instruments from Illinois. Some of them are as much as thirteen inches in length, and may have been used as spades rather than as hoes. It is characteristic of these implements that they are found in large numbers together. Thus Abbot describes a cache of such tools, called by him hatchets, found in New Jersey, and containing one hundred and fifty. In the collection of the Brooklyn Historical Society is one of these implements, stated to be from a similar deposit. But, as might be expected, the greatest repositories of these tools are among the remains of the semi-civilized "Mound-builders" of the Ohio and Mississippi valleys, one of the oldest peoples of the American continent. Squier describes a deposit in Ohio, in which as many as six hundred of these tools were found, while a vast number besides must have existed in it. These were under a mound supposed to have been of sacrificial character, and their discoverer seems at a loss to conjecture their use.

The same writer informs us that the "Flint ridge," which is one of the quarries from which the mound-builders obtained the material of these and other implements, "extends for

many miles, and countless pits are to be observed throughout its entire length, from which the stone was taken. These excavations are often ten or fourteen feet deep, and occupy acres in extent." Similar repositories of flints, where very extensive manufactures have been carried on, in the Uintah hills in Wyoming, are described in one of Hayden's reports on the Western territories. The occurrence of roughly shaped hoes in large deposits may be explained in several ways. Mr. Jones has pointed out to me a statement of Carver, that the makers of flint implements were in the habit of hiding away quantities of them until required for use, or for purposes of trade. Deposits of this kind would, however, consist of various kinds of weapons and implements, not usually of one kind alone. Again, in the case described by Squier, the accumulation may have been a great act of sacrifice. It was the practice of the mound-builders to offer public sacrifices; and on certain occasions, agreeably to the rules of their worship, tobacco-pipes were offered, on others weapons, on others ornaments; and there seem to have been some of these rites in which agricultural tools were proper offerings, perhaps to secure an abundant harvest, or to avert injuries from the crops. Another, and probably more important reason was, that the tillage was often done by large bands of men and women working together on grounds common to the tribe. When the work was finished, the tools prepared for it would be covered up in some place where they could remain safely till again required. In the same way, and for the same reason, the stone gouges used by the Indians in their sugar-camps in spring were hidden away in numbers till the returning season again brought the tribe to the sugar-grove. It is also stated that partially worked flints were buried in the ground to keep them in their hydrated state, ready for working at a later time.

These facts, applied to the so-called palæolithic implements found in the soil and in river gravels in Egypt as well as in

Europe, give some probability at least to the theory that some of them were agricultural hoes and picks. An agricultural population would cultivate the alluvial lands near the rivers. They would seek in the neighbouring flint-gravels for the material of their hoes. After use they would leave these in their fields or garden-beds in large numbers. Subsequent river floods might mix the used and unused hoes with the rejected pieces in the re-arranged gravel-beds, and all this might take place without mixture of the other implements used by the people. It would thus appear possible that the valley of the Somme, for example, may have been the seat of a primitive agricultural people, whose residence may have been in fortified "pahs" or villages on the high grounds, while their fields lay along the stream. Where they resided, domestic implements, pottery, and weapons of polished stone or bone may be found.<sup>1</sup> Where they laboured the fields, only palæolithic implements may occur. There may also have been contemporary hunting populations in the hills who would not use any hoes, but only spears, arrow-heads, etc. Further, in any case, such implements as hoes would be little likely to occur in caves or Swiss lake habitations, while they might be very abundant in valleys and the beds of streams. Lastly, the case of the American mound-builders shows that a people may use palæolithic stone instruments in their agriculture, while they have in other respects attained sufficient civilization to possess polished and often elaborately carved weapons, and implements and ornaments of metal, good pottery, and even textile fabrics. This, which was actually the case in America, was undoubtedly also the case in Egypt and probably also in Palestine.

In connection with this, it is interesting to reflect that the Scriptural history seems to imply the existence of a great

<sup>1</sup> Genesis iv. 17 ; v. 29 ; vi. 1 ; vi. 21.

agricultural population in antediluvian times in the valleys of certain rivers in Western Asia. If these people tilled the ground with rude stone implements before the extensive introduction of metals, and before the domestication of the ox, they must have left vast numbers of palæolithic implements to be swept away by the waves of the deluge, or buried in the river alluvia; and they must also have left behind extensive excavations and quantities of chipped stones in the localities where they quarried and manufactured their agricultural tools. All who attach an historical value to the Book of Genesis must be prepared for the discovery of such remains in beds far older than the oldest Assyrian monuments. We have perhaps a hint of the difficulties of the labour question in those days, in the saying attributed to Lamech on the birth of his son Noah, "This shall comfort us concerning our work and toil of our hands, because of the ground which the Lord hath cursed." Whatever the reason of the hope expressed, the saying is the groan of a man oppressed by the hard labour of manual husbandry, carried on perhaps with implements no better than the flint hoes of the ancient Americans.

We should not forget that the swarming population of ancient Egypt must have made a demand for implements which the moderate supply of the metals could scarcely meet, and that up to late times a great amount of work in stone and other materials had necessarily to be done with flint. The cheapness of material was a great element in this. When in Egypt in 1884 I saw women in the market at Assiout, with baskets of flint flakes on sale. I asked the use of these, and was informed they were for strike-lights. I asked, "Why do they not use matches?" The answer was, "Matches are too dear for the fellaheen. It is much cheaper to have a flint and steel, and a little fibre from the spathe of the doum palm to light their cigarettes." I afterwards verified this by examining the tobacco pouches of some of the people, and

exchanged with one of them a new flint for one that he had used so long that its front had been chipped into a semi-circular form, like that of one of those hollow scrapers one sees in collections of stone implements, and which are supposed to have been used for polishing shafts of spears, but some of which are possibly worn-out strike-lights of dubious antiquity. It may be observed here, that in the most primitive times, before steel could be obtained, the native iron pyrite was used for the same purpose, as evidenced by fragments of it found in very ancient burial-places and caverns of residence.

That the civilized Egyptians maintained the art of flint-chipping in great perfection, for sacred purposes at least, is evidenced by the supposed sacrificial knives found in temples. One of these, found at Kom Ombos, has been figured by General Pitt Rivers, and is a beautiful example of flint chipping.<sup>1</sup> The temple is of the date of Thothmes III., a little before the time of Moses, but was no doubt in use up to a much later time. On the other hand, the knife may have been a sacred relic handed down from a far earlier period than that of the great king to whom the founding of the temple is attributed. General Pitt Rivers has also directed attention to those curious ball and ring flat concretions of flint found in the limestone near Thebes, and of which I obtained many specimens.<sup>2</sup> They have been well described by Newbold, and their origin explained as a peculiar modification of flint concretion formed by the aggregation of a secondary rim of flint in the plane of the bedding around an original rounded nodule.<sup>3</sup> The Arabs call them "nuktah" or "drops," and

<sup>1</sup> Petrie found a similar example in a temple of the ancient Arsinoe, which he regards as of the time of the 19th dynasty, the period of the Hebrew oppression.

<sup>2</sup> "Journ. of Anthropol. Inst.," 1887.

<sup>3</sup> "Journ. Geol. Soc. of London."



they are often mistaken by imaginative travellers for artificial objects. General Rivers connects these curious concretions with the circular or ring knives sometimes found, and which may possibly have been worked out of these nodules, but, in whatever way worked, are a triumph of Egyptian flint-chipping, quite equal to that of the best ancient flint workers of Central America. They can scarcely have been used, as some have supposed, as bracelets, but may have been fastened on battle-clubs, or used as knives, or possibly were only curiosities worked by cunning artists in flint, as specimens of their skill.

To bring to a close this long chapter, which might easily be extended to much greater length, I may merely add that nearly all the gems and ornamental stones were worked in very early times by the Egyptians. I have ring-stones, scarabs, utas or sacred eyes, figures of gods, religious emblems and beads, in carnelian, jasper, moss agate, onyx agate, rock crystal, chalcedony, Lydian stone, lapis lazuli, garnet, turquoise, emerald, hematite, alabaster, calcareous spar, fluor spar, serpentine, and a variety of other stones, as well as in coral and amber. The working of many of these stones also displays a great amount of skill and industry, and so far as known, most of them were used in very early times. It is in accordance with this that we find Abraham, like the modern travellers who haunt the Cairo bazaars, procuring "jewels of gold and jewels of silver" in his visit to Egypt, that we find the Hebrew emigrants in the time of Moses receiving these from the Egyptians, and offering them for the golden calf and for the adornment of the Tabernacle, and that we find goldsmiths and jewellers in the Hebrew camp capable of such elaborate work as the breastplate of the high priest.

What, however, has all this to do with Egypt in its relation to the earlier history of the Bible? In the first place, it proves that the early colonists of Egypt were observant and cultivated men, yet they were such within a very few generations, or per-

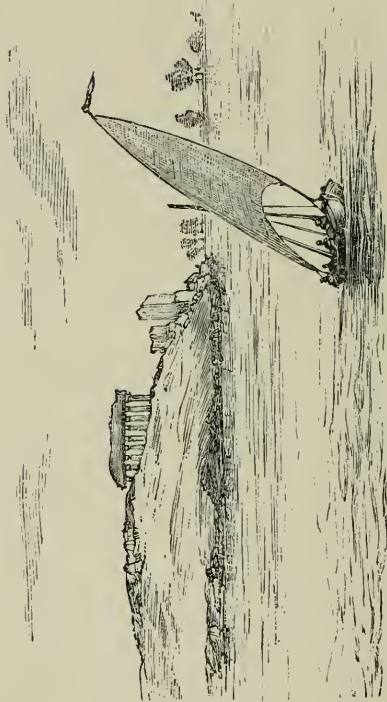
haps only a single generation, after the deluge. Consequently, their knowledge was that which had grown up in the antediluvian time. Had they been savages, they would probably not have been up to this time more advanced than the negroes of Central Africa are to-day. Further, if we compare their early progress and development of the resources of their country, even with that of the most prosperous modern colonies, we shall have good reason not to be ashamed of the primitive Egyptians. In short, we have no ground whatever to theorize as to long ages of gradual ascent from a savage state, but, on the contrary, to believe in the inheritance by these people of an old civilization, and this the work of great inventors of the antediluvian age. It is useless to argue, as some have done, that the only alternatives are the suppositions of a spontaneous and slow growth of humanity, or, on the other hand, of a miraculous inspiration. The Bible story gives us the rational solution of the problem in the God-given gifts of great inventors, advancing humanity, and in the continuation of the advance thus gained by the succeeding generations of civilized men.

Next, we have to take into consideration the fact that the Egyptian economic stones we have been considering speak of other arts and knowledge than that directly relating to themselves. The artificial wants to be supplied by architecture and sculpture presuppose a high civilization; and the existence of the agricultural arts of irrigation, drainage, and tillage, and domestication of animals, imply an orderly, settled, and industrious people, and security of life and property under a stable government. Let us observe that these are the facts affirmed by the Bible in relation to Noah and his family, and to the earlier populations of Chaldea, Palestine, and Egypt. The history of Abraham presupposes all these things in his time; and the monuments of Egypt and Chaldea agree with this, and carry them back still farther.

Finally, it thus follows that all we have learned from the Bible as to antediluvian man, and early postdiluvian man, is vindicated not only by our studies of the cave men, and the physical geography of the post-glacial world, but by the testimony of those Egyptian stones which open their mouths to reply to the shallow historical criticism and materialistic evolution which have sought to place Bible history at variance with that of the older nations, and to evolve, by countless ages of slow advance, civilization out of brutal rudeness.

These facts being so, we may rest content to allow the antiquarians to settle in any way that they please the disputed lists of Egyptian kings, and may hold that the Hebrew Scriptures give us the best means of unravelling the questions connected with primitive man and the places of his earlier habitation.

I have taken Egyptian stones to teach these truths, because I have made them a special study; but other kinds of early art in Egypt tell the same story, and so does what we know of the early condition and history of Chaldea and Phenicia.



KOM OMHOS. — An Egyptian temple built on the old alluvium of the Nile, above the level of the present inundation.

## CHAPTER VI.

### *EGYPT AND ISRAEL.*

OUR chapter on Egyptian stones, while relating to questions as to the connection of the antediluvian and post-diluvian ages, naturally leads us to Egypt itself, that cradle of early civilization and school of the Hebrew race ; and we shall have occasion to see in its natural features and monumental history much that has left its impress on the Hebrew sacred books, and through them on the world.

The often-quoted saying of Herodotus, that Egypt is a gift of the Nile to the Egyptians, is perfectly true, if taken in a modern and superficial sense, and is fully warranted in that sense by the arguments used by the old historian himself. It is, indeed, as we shall see, to some extent true, even with reference to those older rocks which were formed before the Nile existed. Herodotus saw that the present Delta must once have been a shallow bay of the Mediterranean, and that the filling up of the bay has produced this expanse of cultivable land ; and his estimate of twenty thousand years for the process, though excessive, in so far as the modern period is concerned, is even smaller than that which some later observers have ventured to make. But Herodotus knew nothing of the nature of the rocks which formed the Nile sediment, or of the elevations and depressions which the country has experienced in Tertiary and recent times, or of the great geological agencies which were shaping the valley of the Nile long before man existed. For this reason, his ideas as to the sculpture of the

Nile valley and the creation of that most wonderful country which lies along its course were somewhat crude and inadequate, though not more so than those of the majority of modern travellers. To obtain more just and profound ideas, it will be well to transfer ourselves in imagination back to the time when the first ridging up of portions of the crust of the earth was laying the foundation of our continents. In this sketch, intended for non-geological readers, I shall adopt the historical method, and shall refer only incidentally or in notes to the physical evidence of the facts stated.

In that early period of the earth's history, when the older crystalline rocks had been deposited, and were beginning to yield to the effects of the contraction of the mass of the earth, so as to fold and wrinkle, certain great plications were formed in the regions now constituting Palestine, Arabia, and Egypt, ridging up the crust in mountain ranges and masses of gneiss and other old crystalline rocks. The remains of these constitute at present the high triangular mass of Sinai, bounded by the two depressions of the gulfs of Akaba and Suez, on the opposite sides of which are the two similar ranges running down the east and west sides of the Red Sea. (See Geological Map.)

In Egypt, the western of these old folds constitutes the Arabian range, extending between the Nile valley and the Red Sea, and widening out to the southward into the mountains of Abyssinia. The traveller, ascending the Nile, first meets with these old rocks at Assouan, the ancient Syene, where their hard ridges, crossing the river, produce the first cataract.

The margins of this original nucleus of Egypt continued for long ages to be the theatre of volcanic action; and quantities of molten rock, granites, porphyries, and greenstones were introduced as dykes, and poured out as sheets along the sides of the gneisses and schists of the original ridge. The land was thus probably widened and extended, but we have no fossili-

ferous rocks to give us any succession of life in the region through a great space of the earth's earlier geological history.

At length, in the Carboniferous age, that in which the great coal formation of Europe was deposited, there came a quiet time. The old land was clothed with the quaint trees of that period, and the sea around tenanted with its marine animals, while the slow waste of the granitic mountains, and the action of streams and torrents, filled up the shallow margins of the sea with beds of sand now constituting the lower part of the "Nubian sandstone" of Egypt and the "desert sandstone" of the Sinaitic peninsula.<sup>1</sup> During this time a shallow sea covered nearly all of Syria and Egypt; but there may have been wide tracts of swamp and forest at the base of the insular belts of land. There is no evidence, however, of the accumulation of beds of coal within this region.

So far as known, the same geographical conditions continued until the Cretaceous age, that of the English wealden and chalk, when new sandstones were added, and parts of the old sandstones worked over, constituting the Nubian sandstones, properly so called, of Egypt and the east side of the Dead Sea, in Palestine.

In the later portion of the Cretaceous period, and in the succeeding Eocene age, long-continued and widespread submergence of all the continental areas in the northern hemisphere occurred, and it is doubtful if anything except a few of the highest peaks of our ancient Egyptian land remained above water. At this time, in seas swarming with marine life, were deposited the great limestones and marls, probably

<sup>1</sup> I base this conclusion as to age on the *Dadoxylon* found in the Nubian sandstone in Egypt, and the fossils found by Schweinfurth in the sandstones of Wady Arabah near the Red Sea, and the discoveries of Bauerman and Hull in the Sinai region. In the map I have ventured to refer to this age, portions of the sandstones skirting the Arabian range, and constituting the lower Nubian sandstone of Zittel.

three thousand feet in thickness, and full of fossils, which constitute the mass of the rocks of Egypt, Northern Arabia, and Syria, and which are seen in all the cliffs along the Nile and the Gulf of Suez. The deposition of these rocks must have required a long time, and within this time there were local elevations and depressions to such an extent that in some parts of Egypt and in the Lebanon we have evidence of low lands covered with vegetation, and shallow bays swarming with fishes.<sup>1</sup> These thick limestones belong, in fact, to two of the great geological periods—the Cretaceous and the Eocene Tertiary; but in the countries now under consideration, the physical conditions in both were similar, and so far continuous, that it is sometimes very difficult to separate the deposits from one another. In all these long ages the Atlantic and the Indian and Pacific Oceans were one, and the same animals ranged from England to Australia. The traveller who ascends the Mokattam hill, near Cairo, or Jebel Attaka, on the Gulf of Suez, will find these fossils in the beds all the way to the summit, in evidence of the wide extent of the Cretaceous and Eocene seas. All the limestone rocks forming the cliffs on the Nile from Jebel Mokattam to the sandstone rocks at Silsileh, belong to these periods, and they lie nearly flat, so that the Nile valley and its transverse wadies have been cut out of them, first by the formation of two series of north-and-south, and east-and-west cracks or faults, and next by the action of the sea in times of submergence, and by the streams, when the climate was more moist than at present.

Great and important changes occurred in the Middle Tertiary, or Miocene, and in the succeeding geological ages. At this time all Northern Africa and Western Asia were raised out of the sea, leaving the Mediterranean and Red Sea only a little larger than at present, and subsequently rendering them

<sup>1</sup> The lignitiferous beds near Edfou and in the Lebanon, also the fish beds of Lebanon and Judea, to be noticed in the sequel.



even smaller than they are now. That this was really an elevation of the land, and not merely a recession of the sea, is evidenced by the bulging up of the originally flat limestones in great rounded arches, and by the formation of extensive faults, with the beds unequally raised at opposite sides, as we find in that long fracture of the Jordan valley to be described in the next chapter, and which extends all the way from the Gulf of Akaba into the Lebanon. Many such fractures of minor importance extend through the rocks of the whole region. In this way, and at this time, were produced the beginnings of the north-and-south valleys of the Nile and the Jordan, and many transverse east-and-west valleys crossing them. The valley of the Nile, indeed, runs along a fault or fracture similar to that of the Jordan, but less pronounced in

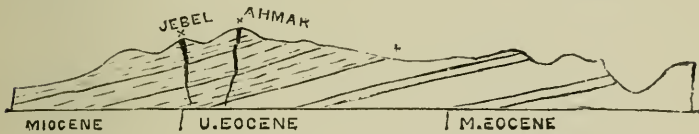


FIG. 20.—Section at Jebel Ahmar, near Cairo, showing Miocene sandstone and quartzite resting on Eocene limestone and marl. × × Openings of former siliceous springs. † Position of fossil trees.

the extent of the vertical movement of its sides. At the same time, the form of the eastern end of the Mediterranean basin, and the relation to it of the drainage of Western Asia and Northern Africa were fixed.

While these elevations were going on, perhaps slowly and by repeated efforts, new banks of sand and marly material were deposited. These are seen in the sandstones of Jebel Ahmar, near Cairo, which rest on the Eocene rocks, and in beds occurring in the Isthmus of Suez. From the fossil remains found in these beds we learn that the new land was clothed with forests, and that land animals similar to those found in beds of this age in Europe abounded.

A curious result of these movements was a renewal of volcanic activity, evidenced by the ejection of the trappean rocks, described by Schweinfurth, near Abou Zabel on the Sweetwater Canal, and by the traces of hot mineral springs, or geysers, having existed near Cairo. It is to this period that the so-called petrified forests, near Cairo, which attract the attention of travellers, belong. The explanation of them is shortly this:—In the Middle Tertiary the valley of the Nile was forest-clad, bearing exogenous trees allied to those of Central Africa,<sup>1</sup> and also palms and pines. Trunks of these trees drifted to the shore, became embedded in the sand, and were afterwards penetrated by siliceous waters, and their wood completely replaced by silica, so that they became permanently preserved. A little later, the soft sandstone containing these trees was swept away by water, leaving the trees exposed on the desert surface. In some places, as at Jebel Ahmar, where the sand itself was cemented into a hard rock, it remained, and the fossil wood may be seen in place; a convincing proof that it really belongs to this formation.

We may pause here to note that in all this long making of Egypt, preparation was being made for civilized man, and that not only the river and its alluvia, but all the rocks, from the old granite and gneiss of Assouan to the sandstone of Jebel Ahmar, were the inheritance of the Egyptians—those Egyptian stones already referred to, of which their great works are constructed.

And now comes a period of Egyptian history in which strange vicissitudes occurred to the country. First, at the close of the Miocene and beginning of the Pliocene, it must have been raised somewhat high above the waters. This is the first “Continental period” of Lyell, and affected Western Europe as well as Africa. Much remark has been made re-

<sup>1</sup> Species of *Nicolia*, etc.

specting the precipitous limestone cliffs along the Nile and the deep wadies which lie at its sides. The formation of these in a rainless country has seemed inexplicable. But we must remember that the excavation of the valley and its branches has been going on ever since the first elevation of the country, and especially throughout the long Pliocene period, during which the land was from time to time higher and lower than at present, and there must have been many changes of climate. In the succeeding Pleistocene age it is likely that what was a period of cold,—the Glacial period,—in Northern Europe, was here a time of great rain and moisture. If we could have visited Egypt at this period, I have no doubt we should have found much of the cutting of the Nile valley and of the sculpturing of the country actively going on, or already accomplished.

The material thus washed out of Egypt was probably largely deposited in the bay which occupied the place of the present Delta, and constitutes the lower part of its deposits, the original foundation of sediment by which the bay was shallowed and fitted to receive the Delta deposits. It is, however, not unlikely that in one part of the Pliocene Continental period, the bay may have become dry land, and the Nile may have flowed eastward into a series of lakes or lagoons, occupying the present Isthmus, and extending toward Palestine.<sup>1</sup> The deposits of the isthmus contain fresh-water shells of species living in the Nile, proving a connection with that river either in Pliocene or Pleistocene times, or perhaps at two distinct periods, one Pliocene, the other Pleistocene. Little is known of the land life of Egypt in this period; but we have reason, from some bones in the isthmian beds, to suppose that, as in Europe, its fauna and flora were rich and varied, but perhaps in the late portion of the period assuming a more temperate character.

<sup>1</sup> See Chap. II.

In the latter part of the Pliocene or in the Pleistocene age occurred a great subsidence of the land, contemporaneous probably with that of which we have evidence at this time all over Europe and America. In Egypt and Palestine the proofs of this are very decided. In the base of the Mokattam hill, behind Cairo, and in the corresponding rocks of the Pyramid plateau at Gizeh, on the other side of the river, we have, at an elevation of two hundred feet above the sea, old cliffs penetrated by boring or lithodomus shell-fishes (*Lithodomus*), and beds of oysters, scallops, etc., of modern species, which show that at this time all the Nile valley, as far up as Silsileh, was under water.<sup>1</sup> (Fig. 21.) At the same time the isthmus was submerged, so that Africa was an island, and the low plains or the Palestine coast were all under water. Nay, more, there is a terrace with sea caves on the Mokattam hill, about five hundred feet above the sea, and which may indicate a still more profound depression. There can be no question that much rock cutting was done at this time, both by the sea and streams, and that much superficial sand, mud, and gravel were deposited, and now lie in part under the modern river mud. Such deposits have, as we shall see, been found in the deeper borings in the Delta and Nile valley, and also exposed on the margins of the valley. These beds are well seen between Cairo and Helouan, and were found by Girard near Assiout; and the gravel and hard marl of Jebel Assart, near Thebes, also belong to this period. Old sea beaches of Pleistocene age also occur on the coast of the Red Sea. The greater extent of sea at this time also, and the cooler climate, would tend to a large rainfall.

Of the shells found on the sea beaches of this age, while all are modern, some appear to be Red Sea species,<sup>2</sup> while others

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Schweinfurth has since my visit traced these marine deposits farther up the Nile than Gizeh.

<sup>2</sup> *Ostrea Forskali*, *Pecten erithraensis*.

are Mediterranean. This agrees with the fact that at this time there was a free communication between the two seas. The

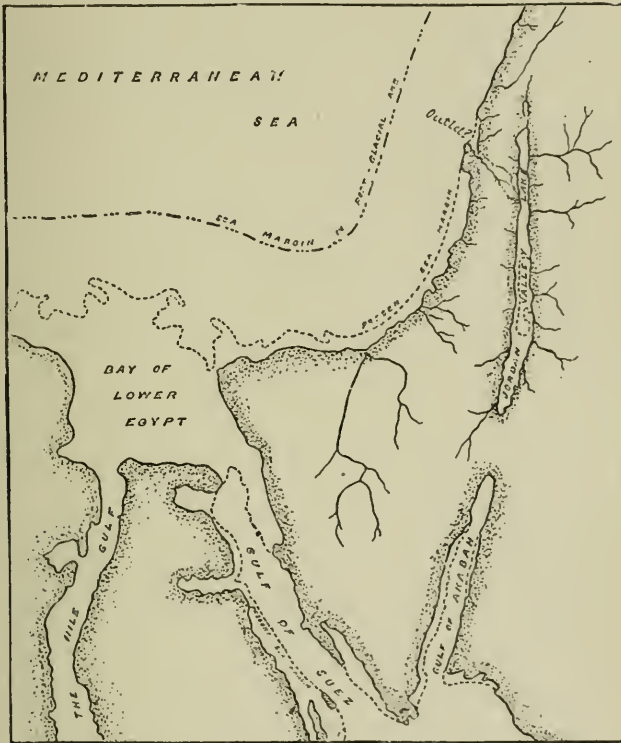


FIG. 21.—Map of Egypt and Syria during the Pleistocene submergence; showing also the present coast line, and approximately that of the post-glacial age. (Adapted from Hull.)

present separation by means of the isthmus occurred later. Let it be observed, however, that in the Eocene age the Mediterranean and Indian Oceans were confluent, that they

were entirely separate in the Continental period of the Pliocene, that they again became confluent in the Pleistocene depression, and were finally separated in the modern time. At present they are not only separate, but scarcely any species are common to the two. This does not, however, indicate that the species have changed by any evolutionary process, but merely that when communication ceased, the climatal conditions allowed only Atlantic species to continue on one side of the isthmus and those of the warmer Indian Ocean on the other. The theories which have been promulgated respecting transmutation of the species are purely gratuitous and unnecessary, and are disproved by the fact that the shells found fossil in the old sea margins or raised beaches, both on the Red Sea and the Mediterranean side, are identical with recent forms. The case is an interesting one, however, of the contemporaneous existence of two distinct marine faunas, close to each other, on the two sides of a narrow neck of land, and this difference established within a very recent time.

But to return to our history. The great Pleistocene subsidence was followed by a re-elevation, restoring the land to its former height and contracting the Mediterranean within its present limits, as explained in another connection in the second chapter. (See Fig. 1.) This brings us to the post-glacial, second continental, or antediluvian age. At this time the great bay of Lower Egypt had been so filled up with deposits swept from the land, and was so raised up, that it probably became a desert, and was covered with wind-blown desert-sand. The Nile, unable as yet to cut its way to the Mediterranean, may have again turned eastward, and spread over what is now the isthmus, perhaps finally running into the Red Sea—thus reproducing conditions which had existed before in the Pliocene period, and traces of which continued in the important branch of the Nile flowing eastward to the Red Sea in early modern times.

It was at this same continental period that Britain was united to the continent of Europe and to Ireland, and that Africa and Europe were connected by a second isthmus by way of Sicily and Malta, as stated in a previous chapter. This was also the period of the earliest or palæocosmic men, who were contemporary in Europe and Asia with the mammoth and hairy rhinoceros, and of whom we had something to say in previous chapters. It was the antediluvian age, an age of great continents, of varied climate, of gigantic animals, of vigorous and long-lived men. It was great in everything except the elements of piety and humanity. That world was swept away by the Noachian deluge, the great post-glacial flood; and if there were men in Egypt at this time, they probably lived along the maritime plain then skirting the Mediterranean beyond the limits of the present delta, and have left no remains accessible to us.

We now come to that modern deposit which is really and practically the land of Khemi,<sup>1</sup> the Egypt of the agriculturist, that Egypt which is the gift of the dark-brown mud deposited by the river, and still in process of distribution. It is necessary that we should understand the origin and nature of this deposit, in order that we may appreciate either the antiquity of Egypt in relation to Bible history, or the reason of the place which Egypt has held among the nations of the world.

The first point that strikes us here is, that the Nile flows through a region practically rainless, and that no tributary streams enter it from its mouth up to the Atbara, which flows into it from the mountains of Abyssinia, nearly a thousand miles from the sea. Consequently, neither the water nor the mud of the Nile can be derived from the rainless district through which the river flows, but from the well-watered regions of interior Africa. The White Nile, which carries

<sup>1</sup> Khemi, corresponding to the biblical Ham, is one of the native names of Egypt.

scarcely any sediment, is a somewhat constant stream, draining a country of lakes, swamps, and forests. The Blue, or Dark, Nile and the Atbara drain the mountainous country of Abyssinia, deluged with rain in the wet season; and it is these streams, swollen by violent inundations, that supply the Nile with its sediment, the quantity of fresh material carried into the river below the confluence of the Atbara being very small, as the results of the microscopic study of the sediment sufficiently prove. I have found by my own examinations of the Nile mud, that its composition is essentially the same along the course of the Nile all the way to the Delta,<sup>1</sup> though with some local differences in the fineness of the sand and the proportion of argillaceous matter. Thus both the water of the inundations and the material of the alluvial deposit come from a region of copious rains, and where decay of rocks may be supposed to proceed under the ordinary conditions.

Further, the rocks whose *débris* is borne down by the Blue Nile and Atbara are old crystalline formations, yielding to the water no soluble ingredients. Consequently, the waters of the Nile are, like those of a mountain stream, pure almost as rain water. Hence their celebrated "sweetness," in comparison with the more or less brackish waters which issue from springs and wells in the neighbouring desert. Thus we find a sufficient cause of the freedom of the Nile water from saline matter, in its derivation from a country of siliceous and crystalline rocks. If we compare it with the water of the Thames and other streams draining sedimentary districts, we shall find that they are all much more highly charged with saline matter in solution. It is rather to be compared with the water of the lakes and streams of the Scottish Highlands and similar districts of the older crystalline rocks. Dr. Sterry Hunt has described and referred to its true cause, a fact of

<sup>1</sup> See also Prof. Judd, "Report to Royal Society," 1885.



the same kind, in the case of the Ottawa and St. Lawrence. The former, rising in a region of crystalline rocks, has little more than one-third of the saline matter in solution that is found in the latter, which drains principally a sedimentary country. The proportions in 10,000 parts are, for the Ottawa, only 0.6116, and for the St. Lawrence, 1.6055.<sup>1</sup>

Another effect of this source of the sediment is, that the Nile mud contains very little true clay or kaolin, but rather excessively fine sand. The explanation is, that the current of the river is sufficiently strong to wash out all the more finely comminuted argillaceous matter, and to carry it in its turbid waters to the sea. In connection with this, every voyager on the Nile when it is falling must have observed how the mud-banks are constantly being undermined by the river, and their material carried down to be redeposited. This work goes on even more energetically in the time of the inundations. Thus any given quantity of sediment on its way from Abyssinia to the Delta is lixiviated thousands of times, and necessarily deprived of its lighter and finer constituents.

But the quantity of kaolin need not originally have been large. The older gneisses and schists do not kaolinize after the manner of Cornish granites, but, when decomposed so as readily to crumble into sand, they still contain much of their more refractory felspar in a perfect state.<sup>2</sup>

These facts are further illustrated by the agricultural qualities of the Nile alluvium, as they have been explained by Schweinfurth and others. If the alluvial soil were a stiff clay, it would be practically incapable of cultivation in the circumstances of Egypt. If it were mere quartzose sand, it would be hopelessly barren. It is, in fact, an impalpable sand, highly absorbent of water, crumbling readily when moistened, and

<sup>1</sup> Logan's "Geology of Canada," 1863, p. 565.

<sup>2</sup> The same fact applies to glacial and lacustrine clays derived from the waste of crystalline rocks in Canada.

containing not merely quartz but particles of various silicates and of apatite and dolomite, which, though unaltered when under water, are gradually dissolved by the carbonic acid present in the cultivated soil, yielding alkalies, phosphates, etc., to the crops.<sup>1</sup> In connection with this, recent microscopic examinations by Dr. Bonney of the old crystalline rocks of Assuan, which are probably similar to those farther south, show that, like those of Canada and Norway, they contain numerous crystals of apatite or calcium phosphate, a most important ingredient in fertile soils. Under the microscope a soil of this kind appears, not as a mere mud, but as a congeries of little crystals and crystalline fragments of various siliceous minerals shining like gems, and capable of being distinguished under polarized light. So fine is this material, that while the coarser grains fall quickly when the muddy water is allowed to stand for a short time undisturbed, some of the finer material will remain in suspension, giving a slight turbidity, even after thirty-six hours. The mud of the old lake basin, which is now the alluvial plain of Manitoba, shows similar characters, having been derived, like that of the Nile, in great part from the waste of crystalline rocks. Thus it happens that the Nile mud is not mere clay or flinty sand, but a rich mixture of various minerals, capable of yielding to the roots of plants, alkalies and phosphates and soluble silicates suited to nourish the richest crops. I was much struck with this when riding across the alluvial plain, here about eight miles wide, between the Nile and the ruins of the ancient Thinis or Abydos, the site of the tomb of Osiris, and the traditional earliest settlement of the Egyptians in the Nile valley. This plain must have been in tillage for at least 4,000 years, and its principal manure has been the Nile water, laboriously spread over it in millions or little rills by the

<sup>1</sup> See Analyses in Appendix.

industrious fellaheen. At the time of my visit, in January, it was covered with vast fields of beans (*Faba vulgaris*), said to be a native of Egypt,<sup>1</sup> and still largely cultivated there. These beans were, in many places, five feet in height, and showed by their strong growth, the great fertility of the soil, even after this long-continued cropping—a fertility literally inexhaustible so long as the fertilizing waters are supplied.

Thus we see, what at first sight seems to be the strange anomaly, that the river of Egypt comes charged with the elements of fertility to the fields of the husbandman, yet offers to him water like that of a mountain stream, pure and refreshing. No wonder that the fellah loves his river, and that his forefathers made it an object of worship, and that the Israelites loathed the brackish waters of the Arabian desert.

To the geologist and the historian, one of the first questions that arises out of these facts relates to the antiquity of Egypt and the comparison of the dates assigned to it with the chronology of the rocks and of the Bible. The subject is one on which historical and chronological reasoning have been lavishly expended, but, so far, with results less satisfactory than could be desired. Some would, on these grounds, extend the history of Egypt to tens of thousands of years, while others are content with the more modest estimate of about 3,000 years B.C., a date which forms the starting-point of the more orthodox schools of history. If, according to a very fair estimate, we reckon the three hundred and thirty kings who are said to have reigned in Egypt, at fifteen years each,<sup>2</sup> we shall obtain 4,950 years as the duration of the Egyptian monarchy before the Christian era. Such a date would, however, give to Egypt an antiquity much greater than that of any other ancient nation, and it is liable to the

<sup>1</sup> According to De Candolle, the Caspian district may also claim it.

<sup>2</sup> See Berry, "World's Jubilee Century," 1889. Also Appendix.

abatement, that of the twenty-six dynasties of the Egyptian chronologer Manetho, according to some estimates five, and according to others, as many as twelve were contemporaneous. And it would seem that on dates before the twelfth dynasty very little certainty can be obtained. This being the state of Egyptian chronology, it may be pardonable to inquire what light geology throws on the question, with the aid of the facts already stated in reference to the character of the Nile sediment and the result of its accumulation. It would seem, then, that when Menes, the first king, ascended the throne, the Nile valley was approximately in its present state. I say approximately, for though the alluvial plain, as far north as Memphis, permitted the existence of a city there, we have reason to believe that the Delta was for a long time in the condition of a mere swamp, and it is at a much later time that we find cities and large centres of population in the northern parts of the Delta.<sup>1</sup> An Italian engineer, Figari Bey, estimated, as the result of borings, that the alluvial deposits of the Nile are sixty feet in depth; but so many patches of sand project above the surface of the Delta that a geologist would, from examination of the surface, estimate the average at a much less amount. Besides this, the lower part of the deposit consists of sand and gravel, which may have been laid down before the present levels were inaugurated, and which probably belongs to the time of Pleistocene subsidence. The shafts and borings sunk in 1832 to 1835, under the direction of the late Mr. Leonard Horner, showed various depths of Nile mud, reaching from zero to a maximum of fifty feet, and, as a rule, resting on quartzose sand, having the characters of

<sup>1</sup> "The Egyptians told me," says Herodotus, "that the first man who ruled over Egypt was Men, and that in his time all Egypt, except the Thebaic canton, was a marsh, none of the land below Lake Moeris then showing itself above the water. This is a distance of seven days' sail from the sea up the river" (Rawlinson's "Herodotus," Book II., Chap. 4).

the blown sand of the desert. Still more recent borings, probably more accurate than those of Figari, have been made by the British engineers, under Colonel Ardagh, and with the aid of a grant from the Royal Society. Before considering the results of these, we may recapitulate the beds which ought to exist in that great Egyptian bay which afterwards became the Delta. Assuming that the original bottom consists of the Eocene limestone, or of the Miocene beds overlying this, the first deposit should represent the equivalent of the isthmian beds deposited in the period of elevation in the Pliocene; these may either have been mere desert sand, or in part marls and clays, with calcareous bands and concretions, like those of the isthmus. On these should rest the marine or estuarine deposits belonging to the time of Pleistocene submergence; and since this was probably a period characterized by great rainfall, and in which much erosion took place, it should be a somewhat thick deposit, containing more calcareous matter than the present Nile mud, and locally containing gravel beds. Next, we might expect deposits of more sandy character, corresponding to the Second Continental period; and if man had reached Egypt in this period, his remains or implements might possibly occur. Next, we should have the diluvial deposits, corresponding to the loess of Europe; and lastly, the mud, deposited within the historical period. All this we should have a good right to expect in the material filling this great and ancient depression. It is to be observed, however, that we may expect these deposits to vary very much in thickness and quality in different places, and some of them to be locally absent, while old channels, subsequently filled, might give a great depth of uniform mud; and localities near the margin of the plain would show desert sand mixed with the true Nile deposit.

Let us now take one of the principal Delta borings, as reported on by Professor Judd in the Proceedings of the Royal

Society.<sup>1</sup> In this we shall, I think, find evidence of three, at least, of the beds above postulated.

*Summary of Boring at Tantah, in the Delta.*

I. Samples 1 to 5.—Brown clay and loam, being ordinary Nile deposit, top to 31 to 40 feet. Mud with from 171 to 39.43 per cent. sand—the latter in the bottom.

II. Samples 6 to 10.—Sand ranging from 99.53 sand to 59.09, with some mud; average 87 per cent. sand, or omitting No. 10, 93 per cent. sand. This represents a desert period and Pleistocene submergence, 31 to 40 feet to 58 to 68 feet.

III. Samples 11 and 12.—Reddish brown and ash-grey clay and loam. Rounded grains of quartz and various minerals, with calcareous concretions and coarse sandy mud. Pleistocene and Pliocene?<sup>2</sup>

The first of these groups of samples I regard as representing the modern deposit, properly so called. The second represents the deposits of the deluge and the sand of the arid conditions of the post-glacial; and the third has the characters of the deposits of the Pleistocene subsidence. The boring may still have to penetrate two other series of loose deposits before reaching anything of the nature of solid rock.<sup>3</sup> Now, if we assume forty feet for the thickness of the strictly modern deposit at this place, and bearing in mind that in certain parts of the Delta it diminishes to nothing, assume thirty feet as its average thickness, we may make the following calculation of

<sup>1</sup> Vol. xxxix. Nov. 19, 1885.

<sup>2</sup> The borings have since been continued to a much greater depth, I believe, in material on the whole similar to No. III., but with some gravel in the lowest portion. This should locally be of great thickness, representing as it does that Pleistocene and Pliocene scouring out of the valley and its tributary wadies, referred to above.

<sup>3</sup> This was my anticipation in 1884, published in 1886, and has been verified by the continuation of the borings which have not reached the rocky bottom.

its age. We may assume the average rate of deposition at one-fifteenth of an inch per annum, which is not an extreme allowance,<sup>1</sup> and this would give say 5,300 years. But from this we must deduct something for the probably greater deposit in the earlier part of the modern period, and for the less amount of mud swept out to sea than at present. Making these deductions, we may fairly assume for the time occupied in the modern deposit, in round numbers, say 5,000 years. It is certain that some portion of the mud had been laid down before the arrival of the first colonists, so that we cannot assign to their appearance in the country a greater antiquity than 3,000 B.C.

This measure of time is the more reliable, since we know, from the geological history already given, that there was no Delta, but only a desert where it now is, in the antediluvian period. If there was any Delta deposit at that time, it is now under the Mediterranean. Thus the Delta mud, properly so called, is strictly a post-diluvian deposit, and it gives a fair measure for the history of Egypt, assuming that this begun shortly after the deluge. We may further note that this agrees with the dates assigned to the beginnings of most ancient nations, and to the close of the post-glacial period, as now deduced from such physical changes as the recession of the Falls of Niagara and the rate of denudation of the continents generally.

Thus, whatever may be the conclusions of historians respecting the chronology of Manetho, geological evidence will

<sup>1</sup> M. Girard, in the "Description de l'Égypte," estimates from the deposits since certain dates on the old Nilometers, five inches per century, or say  $\frac{1}{20}$  of an inch per annum. Horner, from localities at Heliopolis and Memphis, in both of which the deposit was probably exceptionally small, allows only  $3\frac{1}{2}$  inches per century. The deposit, however, must have been greater in early times, and must have continually diminished, especially on the higher and marginal localities.

scarcely allow us to claim for any possible post-diluvian settlement of the Delta, a greater antiquity than that above stated. A corroboration of these views as to the date of the Nile alluvium may be found in the proofs of the cutting back of the river channel, as I have explained it in the little work already referred to.<sup>1</sup> Though the Nile valley depends primarily on causes anterior to the erosion of the modern river, that erosion has been potent in removing obstructions in its course. The sandstone ridge at Silsilis must have dammed up the Nile waters to the south, and the height of this obstruction is shown by the high banks of old Nile mud above that place. On one of these the temple of Kom Ombos is built (see Fig. facing this chapter); and as it is at least as old as the time of Thothmes III., this barrier must have been cut through in very early times. The cutting of the gorge at the first cataract must have been later, and above it there are similar high banks of the old Nile mud. But Lepsius has shown that there is evidence that as late as the time of Usertes III. of the twelfth dynasty, the river at Wady Halfa rose twenty-four feet higher than now, so that at that time the first and second cataracts were not cut down to their present levels. This brings before us the fact that within historic times, and subsequent to the foundation of the older Egyptian cities, there may have been great and rapid removal and redistribution of sediment, and perhaps, violent debacles tending greatly to increase the deposition in the lower parts of the river, and to make the Delta and its vicinity more important relatively to the portion of the river above the first cataract. Such changes might have caused, in early times, movements of population of which we have no historic records. In any case, this fact indicates the liability to exaggerate the time required for the deposit of the modern alluvium.

<sup>1</sup> "Egypt and Syria."



The uncertainties attending such calculations are also shown by the controversies which arose respecting Horner's estimate of time taken from his shafts and borings near Memphis. It was objected by Sharpe that the area of the old temple of Memphis had been guarded for ages by embankments, and that consequently the mud accumulated there had all come in since they had been ruptured or overflowed. Lubbock replied to this, that it made no difference, since this sudden filling merely brought the area up to the general level outside. This reply was accepted by Lyell as sufficient,<sup>1</sup> but it evidently is not, since the site of Memphis must originally have been a place of unusually thick deposit, raising it as early as the time of Menes above the inundation, while subsequently it must have been an area of minimum deposition, during all the time of Egyptian history subsequent to the erection of the dam built by that old king, some distance to the northward. It is curious that the site of Heliopolis, also tested by Horner, is liable to a similar objection, being in a position where, on the edge of the desert, the deposit of mud must have been small, and perhaps for a long time absent altogether. Neither of these sites, therefore, furnishes an accurate criterion. The borings more recently undertaken give better data, but they require to be extended more widely. It would be a very interesting field of investigation for geologists and archaeologists resident in Egypt to explore the raised banks of sediment above Silsilis, and to ascertain if they contain any works of man, and of what date.

The most patent objection to thus shortening the dates claimed by some Egyptologists, is that founded on the very early development of the arts, and of great public works in Egypt. Of course, if we are to suppose all this to be the result of a slow advance from barbarism by a gradual and

<sup>1</sup> "Principles of Geology," chap. 18.

imperceptible evolution, we should have to push back the first settlement of Egypt to a time long before we have any evidence of the existence of man. We have already seen, however, that civilization must have been advanced by sudden bounds under the influence of great inventors, that, according to the Bible narrative and geological probability, it had made great advances before the deluge, and that the first post-diluvian settlers in Egypt were probably civilized men, well acquainted with the working of wood, stone, and metal, and proficient in that art of husbandry by irrigation, of which we have a hint even in the primitive description of Eden. Let us take, however, a crucial case.

The pyramids of Gizeh have been objects of wonder and speculation, from the time of Herodotus until now. That they were royal tombs, no reasonable person can now doubt. That they exhibit wonderful perfection in the art of building, and the command of an enormous amount of skilled and unskilled labour, is most evident. That they were erected by the early kings of Manetho's fourth dynasty is undisputed; and if we are to accept the Bible chronology, we cannot place the time of these kings more than a few centuries after the deluge. The names of these pyramid kings, thanks to the imperishable nature of their monuments, are well known, and a life-like portrait statue of one of them, Kephren, now sits enthroned in the Boulak Museum, nearly as perfect as when it left the sculptor's hands, and presents to us the countenance of a grave and thoughtful man, of genuine Egyptian type.<sup>1</sup> The funeral eulogium of another, "Menkera, living for ever," may be read on the cover of his coffin in the British Museum. There are older pyramids than even those of Gizeh, though some of them are much ruder, and all are much smaller. They are all legitimate successors to the funeral mound, which

<sup>1</sup> See figure in last chapter.

is the oldest mode of sculpture of great men in nearly all parts of the world ; and Osiris, the great patriarch of the Egyptian race, who came thither with his children, or whose remains were brought with them, is reported to have been buried under a mound at Abydos, the earliest settlement of that band of immigrants who came into Upper Egypt from the Red Sea.

The pyramid attained to its maximum for all time in that of Kufu, or Cheops, the "Great Pyramid," *par excellence*, 482 feet in height, and a miracle of skilful masonry in the construction of its internal passages and chambers, the accurate levelling and measurement of its sides, the perfection of its form, and the beautiful fitting of its external casing.<sup>1</sup> It has endured in all its magnitude to our time ; and, but for wanton destruction, its outer surface would have presented to this day all its pristine beauty. Yet Kufu, or Cheops, the builder of this magnificent tomb, was probably buried in it not more than 300 or 400 years after the first settlement of Egypt.<sup>2</sup> At first sight this seems incredible ; but there are other parallel facts. The growth of the Israelites from a single family to 600,000 footmen took place in this same country in less time. The increase of the population of the United States of America to fifty millions, and the works they have produced, are vastly greater. It is true, the circumstances were different ; but in the case of Egypt, we have all that could be desired in abundance of food and other resources, so that everything was favourable to the rapid increase of population, and there were probably no foreign enemies to contend with. In such circumstances the numbers and wealth of the people must have grown with marvellous rapidity, and the government, after providing for the maintenance of canals and embankments, must have had a large surplus. It is likely, also, that advan-

<sup>1</sup> Petrie, "Pyramids of Gizeh." Maspero has discovered the ruins of another pyramid, which may have been as large as that of Kufu.

<sup>2</sup> See note at end of chapter.

tage was taken of the peculiar circumstances of Egypt in relation to obtaining workmen at certain seasons. Herodotus was informed that 100,000 men were employed, for three months at a time, for twenty years, in building this pyramid. This, as Mr. Petrie has well pointed out, agrees with the physical conditions of Egypt. During the inundation—that is, from the middle of August to the middle of November—little agricultural labour can be done. At this season any number of workmen can be secured. It is also the best season for the transport of heavy stones. If, therefore, the king employed this season of the year, and took care to provide abundant food for his levies, he might give employment to his subjects at a season otherwise unprofitable, while he erected his own monument. In this early period also, work was not done by foreign slaves. These were introduced under the great conquering dynasties of a later time. We may thus understand how great public works might be constructed in the time of the early monarchy, with benefit to the people. It is pleasant thus to be able to regard the pyramids as public enterprises, undertaken, not to oppress the people, but rather for their profitable employment, and to disperse among them the contents of an overflowing treasury.

But the early Egyptians were not solely occupied with the erection of tombs and temples. There can be no doubt that the canals and embankments for irrigation were commenced at an early time, and were pushed forward by degrees, as population increased; so that it is probable that by the time of the twelfth dynasty, when all Egypt became consolidated under one government, and the Egyptian kings took possession of the extreme east and north of the Delta, the arrangements for the distribution of the water of the Nile were as perfect as at any subsequent time; certainly better than at present, when the British government has undertaken, under the skilful management of Sir Colin Scott Moncrieff, a worthy successor

of King Menes, to restore and perfect those great works—an enterprise which, if completed, will be one of the greatest benefits conferred by the British upon Egypt, and will much increase the productiveness and wealth of the country.

One of the most remarkable of the great engineering works of the ancient Egyptians was that whereby the depressed area, now known as the Fayoum, the ancient Arsinoïte Nome, became one of the garden lands of Egypt. According to recent maps<sup>1</sup> this area consists of two depressed basins, lying west of the Nile, between Memphis and Beni-Suef. The lowest parts of these are as much as one hundred and eighty feet below the level of the Mediterranean, sloping up toward the hills west of the Nile. They are no doubt natural depressions produced by subsidence, like that of the Dead Sea in Palestine; and the northern hollow has at the present time a lake without outlet, the Birket el Queroum. The entire length of the two depressions from north to south is more than one hundred miles, and a portion of the high part of it, about forty miles in diameter, now constitutes the cultivated district of Fayoum. This depressed area communicates indirectly with the Nile by the long canal parallel to the river, called the Canal of Joseph. The waters of this are carried through a gorge in the bounding hills of the Nile valley, and after irrigating the Fayoum, the surplus evaporates from the lake in the lower part of the depression. It would seem, however, that in early Egyptian times an immense lake existed here, which was used as a storage basin for the surplus water of the inundation, and around which was a fine and cultivated country, rich and populous. The reclaiming and use of this district were attributed to a fabulous king, Moeris, but are now believed to have been the work of the great king Amenemhat III., of the twelfth dynasty. The district has

<sup>1</sup> Of Dr. Schweinfurth and Mr. Cope Whitehouse.

assumed many forms at different times, in accordance with the amount of water supplied to it, and the state of repair of its canals and embankments, but would seem to have attained to its maximum utility and value before the time of Herodotus. It excited the utmost wonder of the Greek historian, who however believed, contrary to the fact, that this depressed area was an artificial excavation. He describes it as a vast lake, 3,600 furlongs in circumference, with two colossal statues in the midst,<sup>1</sup> and cities and populous country around. This inland sea was formed by turning the surplus of the Nile inundation into a naturally depressed but desert area. This great work may have been effected, in part at least, as early as the time of Abraham, more than a thousand years before the time of the "father of history." It has recently been proposed again to use it in receiving the surplus waters of the inundation, and as a means of reclaiming the marshy parts of the Delta now lying waste. Of course the story that has been retailed, that this great basin is an artificial excavation, is ridiculous; but the utilizing of it as a storage basin for the Nile, and in connection with this, the conversion of a desert into a fertile land, so as to form a province of Egypt, was a very remarkable work of engineering skill.<sup>2</sup>

The determining element in such great works as those above referred to, is not mere lapse of time, but the energy and skill of an enterprising and industrious people, under an enlightened government, and free from foreign invasion. This was the old Egypt of the times of the Hebrew patriarchs, and before that great invasion of the barbarians from the East, known as the Hyksos or shepherd-kings.

To return to our geologico-historical sketch. It was pro-

<sup>1</sup> Petrie has recently shown that the so-called "pyramids" of Herodotus were pedestals of colossi of quartzite, each thirty-five feet high.

<sup>2</sup> It has, I believe, been estimated that to restore the "Fayoum" to its condition under the Pharaohs would cost about seven millions of pounds.

bably not many centuries after the great flood had passed away, and when the Nile had assumed its present characteristics, and its valley was already nourished by its deposits, and clothed with rich vegetation, that some early colonists made their way into Egypt, possibly by two lines of migration, one across the Red Sea into Upper Egypt, the other by way of the isthmus from Palestine.<sup>1</sup>

These first inhabitants must have found in the Nile valley a secluded dwelling-place, where they were to a great extent exempt from the vicissitudes of the outside world. They found a country rich in all that could minister to human wants, and in a space of time only paralleled by the growth of great nations in America in our own time, they became a rich and powerful people. At the same time the features of their country, in its strange aspect, in its mysterious inundations, its rainless climate, its gigantic and formidable beasts, and exuberant vegetation, gave them a tendency to that peculiar form of nature-worship and symbolism, which, founded on a primitive monotheism, grew up and flourished in Egypt in a manner unexampled elsewhere. In regard to their political organization, we can see in their history, as in that of some other ancient countries, first a limited nationality under a single king or patriarch, then a tendency to break up into separate small and rival kingdoms, and then a reunion of these, perhaps under the pressure of foreign invasions, into a great and powerful monarchy. In their religion we find an original worship of the Creator, localizing itself under different

<sup>1</sup> The Nile is sometimes called a sea in the Bible, owing to its great magnitude (Nahum iii. 8). The same usage exists in Arabic, in employing the word *Bahr* for the river. Another name in Hebrew is *Shekor*, the black river, derived perhaps, like *Nilus*, from the colour of its muddy banks. The word *Khemi*, the name of the people, is sometimes supposed to be of the same origin; but, according to the Bible, it comes from *Ham*, or *Khem*, swarthy, the name of a son of Noah.

symbols in different places, growing into a plurality of gods added to by worship of ancestors, heroes, and attributes of the divinity, and finally crystallized into a complex ritual and powerful priestly caste, till it became one of the grandest of the organized superstitions of the world. With all this, as we have seen in the last chapter, and as we shall see farther in this, there was a high civilization and a thorough mastery and use of all the resources of the country.

It seems to be rather an abrupt transition, to proceed from Nile mud to religion ; but I think it is Herodotus who remarks that the Egyptians did not need to worship the weather-gods of the Greeks, because the Nile fertilized their land without the aid of rain. There can be no question that this climatal difference had much to do with the peculiarities of Egyptian religion ; and Moses puts this truth in a different way when he reminds the Israelites that Egypt was not a land watered by the rains of heaven, but laboriously irrigated with the foot, like a garden of herbs,<sup>1</sup> which is exactly what one sees in Egypt to-day.

Menes, we are told, established Divine worship and built temples therefor, before the time of Abraham ; but at quite as early a time, the Chaldean king Uruk had erected a temple, apparently for the worship of the heavenly bodies, at Ur of the Chaldees, the still extant temple mound of Mugheir. Nearly at the same time, Abraham himself, the great prototypal dissenter and puritan, was making his protest against a plurality of gods, and fraternizing with Melchisedek, king of Salem, in offering sacrifice to the one Most High God (*Elo Elyon*).<sup>2</sup> These are probably the oldest historical facts respecting any organized form of religion, unless we go back to the primal worship of Cain and Abel ; but this was presumably identical with that subsequently revived by Abraham. The

<sup>1</sup> Deut. xi. 11, etc

<sup>2</sup> Gen. xiv. 18.



aboriginal worship introduced by Menes is said to have been that of Pthah, the Creator, who is more properly, perhaps, the Ruah of the Hebrews, the Pnuma of the Greeks, the Divine Spirit giving order to previous chaos, for it would seem that Ra was the supreme god of Egypt, as Il or El was of the Chaldeans and Hebrews. With this soon became associated the worship of Osiris, who was a deified ancestor, accepted by the Egyptians as the redeemer and judge of mankind. This was the aboriginal trinity of Egypt, and one cannot help seeing throughout the history of the people the supremacy of these gods ever cropping up, while there is reason to believe that a multiplicity of apparently distinct gods arose locally from mere difference of names and titles. With this the Egyptians retained in its full integrity that which is the common property of all religions worthy of the name—the doctrine of a spiritual life, a future judgment, a final resurrection. The temple halls and the tombs everywhere bear silent and impressive witness to the reality of this belief, which, however it may have been corrupted for mercenary purposes by a designing priesthood, still carried with it the Divine sanction of a high moral code and a final retribution. That this primeval religion should accept an endless variety of natural objects as emblems of the gods, and as even themselves subordinate divinities, was almost a matter of course in a country where nature, both inanimate and animate, is so pronounced in its appeals to man as in Egypt; but this, no doubt, belonged largely to the exoteric worship intended to attract the common people, as did also the majestic temples, the gorgeous ritual, and the imposing processions and ceremonies.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is now universally admitted on the best monumental evidence that the religion of the earlier Egyptian times was much less polytheistic than that of the middle and later kingdoms; but before the exodus it had attained to its full complexity.

This was the religion into the presence of which the simple children of Israel were brought from their pastoral life in Palestine, and these the people with whom their blood was largely intermixed in Egypt ; for we may be sure that the marriage of Joseph with Asenath was not a solitary case, though this gave to two of the greatest tribes of Israel a mixed Jewish and Egyptian parentage. Their history in Egypt, whether in the prosperous times of Joseph, or in the oppression which followed, is of the same type with what has been occurring in the East from time immemorial, and is still occurring. The court of Mehemet Ali, in his time of *quasi*-independence, was not unlike that of Pharaoh ; and the forced labour of hundreds of men, boys, and girls which one sees now on the Egyptian lands and dykes, is but a repetition of what the Hebrews suffered.<sup>1</sup>

To what extent the Israelites conformed to Egyptian religion we do not precisely know ; but the excavation of the temple of Pithom shows that the worship of the Egyptian gods was established in their midst by Rameses II., the king of the oppression ; and the readiness with which they accepted Aaron's imitation of the bull Mnevis in the golden calf, shows that this emblem of the great Ra of Heliopolis had some hold on their affections.

On the other hand, we shall find in the sequel that there is good reason to believe that the strange revolution whereby, about the time of Joseph, certain kings of Egypt seem to have abandoned the ancient Egyptian polytheism for a species of monotheism, the worship of Aten or Adonai, symbolized by the disc of the sun, may have been an effect of Hebrew influence ; and when the reaction against this, under the Theban priesthood, became triumphant, this may have tended

<sup>1</sup> Under British rule, I am happy to say this *corvée*, as it is called, has been abolished.

to render them and their religious ideas distasteful to the government and the people.

The fact of the revival of the old Abrahamic monotheism in its strictest form by Moses, and of its acceptance by a people reared in the presence of the gorgeous ritual of Egypt, is to my mind one of the most unequivocal examples in history of a Divine interference in the affairs of men. The circumstance that there is much in the arrangement of the tabernacle, in the vestments, and in the sacrifices of the Aaronic ritual that coincides with Egyptian modes, in no respect extenuates this; it even renders it more remarkable. The contrast in the results of the two systems is equally marked; the one reaching forward into Christianity, and developing a literature which has penetrated and revolutionized the whole world, the other expending itself in mere form and show, and hardening into a system of ecclesiasticism which went down and crumbled into dust before primitive Christianity. The history is one full of teaching for the time that now is. Living religion and living a religion constitute something entirely different from contriving hard and brittle systems without life and without tenacity.

Since the time when the iconoclast Cambyses made war on the gods of Egypt, the religion of the country has been the sport of a great variety of influences—Persian, Greek, Roman, Judean, Christian. It now lies crushed under a system which, though nominally monotheistic and iconoclastic, yet in its hard ritualism, its senseless bigotry, its narrow fatalism, and its denial of the rights of woman, is probably the worst and most demoralizing the world has ever seen. No one who has studied the state of society in the East can have failed to observe the fatal blight which, whether in its fanatical outbursts or in its decay, Islam casts on the populations under its shadow. Yet, under this, there lie remnants of all the faiths preceding it, from Coptish Christianity back

to the old Pthah-worship of Menes, embers which may yet be fanned into a flame under the influence of Christian missions and modern education.

It is characteristic of the early times, that Menes, the first king, was occupied with the making of canals and otherwise improving the drainage and irrigation of the country, and that he is said to have been devoured by a crocodile. It is equally characteristic, that some of the greatest works in canals, temples, and tombs, and some of the noblest art, belong to those earlier dynasties under which the country was growing in power and was united; that a period of much confusion and doubt follows the disintegration into petty kingdoms; that great works reappear when the whole became reunited; and that the invasion of the Hyksos raised up powerful and despotic kings, who not only reigned over the whole country, but carried the arms of Egypt into foreign lands. We shall see, further, that the emigration of the Hebrews and the mixed multitude that followed them permanently weakened the nation, and paved the way for its final subjugation by foreigners.

The ethnological type of the ancient Egyptian is well seen by the early statues that have been preserved to our time. In the Boulak Museum, at Cairo, are many statues of the earlier dynasties, representing priests and public officers and dignitaries; and since, in art, this was an age of careful portraiture, and not of that idealized conventionalism which came into fashion in the later periods, we can see in these statues the veritable features of men and women removed only a few centuries from the date of the great flood of Noah. (See Fig. 17, Chap. V.) Judging from these figures, the originals were people of moderate stature, of plump and rounded figure, with well-formed heads, somewhat full faces, of mild aspect, and with a very moderate development of the jaws, cheek bones, and nasal bones. Their style of counte-

nance is indeed much that of the modern Copts, among whom one often sees faces strikingly like those of the most ancient statues. I think we have a right to infer that the genius and capacities of the people were also not unlike those of the Copt of to-day—industrious, peaceful, patient, light-hearted, uncomplaining, with much mental acuteness and mechanical skill, but not endowed with the more rugged and aggressive powers of the more northern nations. They were by no means negroid in aspect, though brown in colour, and with a certain fulness of lip and breadth of nose; but they show little of the salient features characteristic of the Semitic and the purer Aryan races, or of the flat and broad face of the Turanian. Among European populations their nearest allies were the Iberians of the West, and the old Etruscans, and they have certain points of resemblance to some of the older populations of Arabia. They are intermediate between the Cushite and the Aryan, or between the finer type of Turanian and the Aryan. In short, the oldest style of Egyptian is in colour and form a somewhat average type of humanity, and equally distinct from the negro populations of the South and the Syrian peoples of the North. This is the primitive and finest type of Egyptian; and though it is much obscured in the later history by mixtures of foreign races, it still persists in a marked manner among the Copts, who are at the present day the best and most useful and progressive of the native Egyptians, and those who retain most of the capacity of the old race for culture and advancement.<sup>1</sup>

At an early period of their history, that of the dynasty called the fourteenth, the Egyptians came into unpleasant contact with a very different race—that of the Hyksos or

<sup>1</sup> I am aware that Virchow, after visiting Egypt, has affirmed conclusions in some respects different from the above; but my own observations convince me that the conclusions of the German physiologist are based on imperfect data and to be received with much abatement.

shepherd-kings. These people entered Egypt from the Asiatic side, and apparently took possession of the whole of the Delta without a struggle, and established their headquarters at Zoan, a city perhaps originally built by Asiatic immigrants, since in the Bible it is placed in connection with Hebron, as founded seven years later.<sup>1</sup> Perhaps they came little by little in successive hordes, and so gradually occupied the country; or, perhaps, on the contrary, they came in so great force and so well prepared for war, that resistance seemed hopeless, and the royal family and principal public officers fled into Upper Egypt.

Terrible stories were told of these people; and in the time of Joseph every shepherd was an abomination to the Egyptians; but it is difficult for us now to learn much respecting them. They were probably a people at first destitute of the Egyptian ideas of building and monumental commemoration; and when, later, in the period of 500 years<sup>2</sup> through which they are said to have ruled, they executed statues and other permanent monuments, these seem to have been industriously destroyed or buried out of sight when the time of revolution came. Thanks, however, to the laborious researches of Mariette Bey and Maspero, there are in the Boulak Museum a few representations of these people, more especially a sphinx with a human head, supposed to represent one of the kings, Apepi by name, whose cartouche is sculptured on it. A few representations of these people have also been found here and there in European museums.<sup>3</sup> As one looks on the grand old diorite face of Apepi, it is not impossible to read

<sup>1</sup> Numbers xiii. 22.

<sup>2</sup> This period is probably exaggerated, and may not have exceeded 150 years.

<sup>3</sup> Tomkins, "Times of Abraham." More recently a head ascribed to Apepi, and of Turanian type, has been found at Tel Basta, the ancient Babastis. (Rept. Egypt. Exploration Fund, 1890.)

thereon the whole history of the Hyksos. Stern, broad, with high cheek bones and firm, strong mouth, prominent straight nose and furrowed brow, it has that hard, stolid expression which is bred in men by generations of struggle with man and nature. The form is not Semitic or Aryan, but Turanian,



FIG. 22.—Head of a Hyksos sphinx at Boulak (after Tomkins).

and is altogether different from that of the native Egyptian kings of previous and succeeding dynasties (Fig. 22). In the old world it resembles nothing as much as the face of some of the Northern tribes of Asia and Europe; and to one familiar with the countenance of the natives of America,

it recalls some of these. The face of Big Bear, a Cree chief concerned in a recent outbreak in Western Canada, is very similar, though a trifle coarser; that of his ally, Poundmaker, approaches to the same style; and the



FIG. 23.—Red Pheasant, a Cree chief.

face of Red Pheasant, a Cree chief who took part in the Manitoba disturbances of 1885, is of the same type (Fig. 23). That these were just the sort of people fitted to trample on the quiet, industrious Egyptians, no one



can doubt. The wonder is, how they were expelled; and this, I fancy, is to be accounted for by the probability that in the course of time they had become weakened by luxury, and perhaps intermixed with their subjects, and had lost the more vigorous qualities of their ancestors. These people were certainly not, as was at one time supposed, Hebrews. The time of their appearance in Egypt was at least as old as that of Abraham, and not unlikely they belonged to a series of waves of migration westward and southward, of which that of the family of Abraham was a part. Their movement into Egypt may indeed have opened the way for his entrance into Palestine. Nor were they Canaanites or Amorites. The features of these people, as represented on Egyptian monuments, and in the modern fellaheen of Syria, were of a different pattern, and more like those of the Jews and Phenicians. The only people referred to in the Bible, who can be supposed to represent them, are those prehistoric peoples, the Anakim, Emim, Zuzim, etc., whom Moses represents as associated with the Hittites, and preceding the Canaanites in Syria. It is curious also that these people are called Nephalim, the same term used for the gigantic antediluvians whom in feature they resemble, and with whom they agree in bodily vigour and disposition. It is also worthy of note that the Hyk or Huk for king may be identical with the *og* or *ag*,<sup>1</sup> applied to the kings of these prehistoric people, and which is identical with *og* and *ogama*, terms used in the same way by certain American tribes. Another derivation is from *hak* or *hek*,<sup>2</sup> a name for prince, which appears in the

<sup>1</sup> Og, King of Bashan, Num. xxi. 31. Agag, King of the Amalekites, Num. xxiv. 7; 1 Sam. xv. 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Hac* may be derived from the familiar root "hack," either as implying the holder of a battle-axe, or something cut or inscribed, as a decree, and hence a lawmaker. Og is possibly the old Turanian exclamation, "ugh," implying wonder.

Book of Judges, in the song of Deborah. It is reported that a race still exists in the marshes of Lake Menzaleh, which has some of the physical peculiarities of these ancient people. If we inquire as to their origin, two theories are possible. Either they were the old prehistoric Palestinians, already referred to, driven into Egypt by Semitic aggressions, or they were an Altaic people from the North, carrying with them fragments of Hittite and other populations in their march,



FIG. 24.—Head of Rameses II., the Pharaoh of the Oppression, from a photograph of his mummy now in the Boulak Museum.

and passing through Palestine.<sup>1</sup> It would be an important revelation could anything be discovered as to their language, and this may yet be hoped for.

The influences of the Hyksos and of the war of expulsion were permanent in Egypt. Henceforth there is a great

<sup>1</sup> By some the Hyksos are supposed to have been altogether a Hittite people; but this does not agree with their physical characters, and it is more likely that Hittite tribes were carried with them in their migration, or driven before them.

mixture of races, Ethiopian, Egyptian, and Asiatic; and the type of the royal and noble families of Egypt shows a divergence from that of the earlier times. After the Hyksos period the pure Egyptian type seems to exist only in the common people of lower and middle Egypt; and the rulers became animated by a lust of conquest and animosity against the Asiatic races not previously so evident. At the same time the government became more concentrated, and religion and



FIG. 25.—Head of a modern Coptic scribe, showing a type of profile resembling that of Rameses. From a drawing by Dr. Schweinfurth.

social life more corrupt. The great kings of the nineteenth dynasty, whose mummies we now have access to (Fig. 24), have salient features of Asiatic rather than African type; and Seti, the founder of this dynasty, was probably a foreigner. Still, this type of face exists to-day among the Copts (Fig. 25), though by no means dominant, and in strong contrast to the old Egyptian features seen in the most ancient sculptures.

The invasion and expulsion of the Hyksos naturally lead us to think of the relations of the Egyptians with the Abra-

hamidæ, the children of Israel who sojourned in their country for more than two hundred years.<sup>1</sup> The first contact of the Hebrews with the Egyptians was when Abraham went down into Egypt with his clan or tribe, which is usually supposed to have been in the time of the Hyksos. This is rendered the more probable by the fact that Abraham was on friendly terms with their kindred in Palestine ; but Abraham's sojourn was short at this time, and it was in the days of his grandson and great-grandson, that the more permanent connection was established in the person of Joseph.

Huxley, I believe, says somewhere, that the Bible is the best guide-book to Egypt ; and one of our Canadian boatmen on Wolseley's expedition, in writing home, expresses the same idea by saying that he thought he had walked into the pictures of an old family Bible at home, when he found himself on the banks of the Nile. There can be no doubt that both are right, and that Egypt and Palestine, the Egyptian and the Hebrew, had much in common ; and it is a curious inquiry to ask, How much did the Hebrew learn from the Egyptian, and how much the Egyptian from the Hebrew ? Here we have before us the remarkable Egyptian colouring of the older books of the Bible which, as some eminent Egyptian scholars have well shown, entirely invalidates the argument of that school of critics who would assign the composition of the Pentateuch to a comparatively late date, since it is plain that Egypt, its geography, its power, its government, and its customs have, in the eyes of these writers, the same prominence which those of Assyria and Babylon have in the later books. This consideration will grow in importance in the next chapter <sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> I take the 430 years of Moses to go back to Abraham.

<sup>2</sup> I find the Egyptian character of the Pentateuch has been well exhibited in a recent article by Poole, in the *Contemporary Review*, Sept., 1887, and also in papers by Rev. Dr. Lansing, an American Missionary in Egypt.

It would be interesting in this connection, from a scientific as well as biblical point of view, to know more than we now do of the private and social life of the common people of Egypt, among whom the Israelites so long sojourned. To

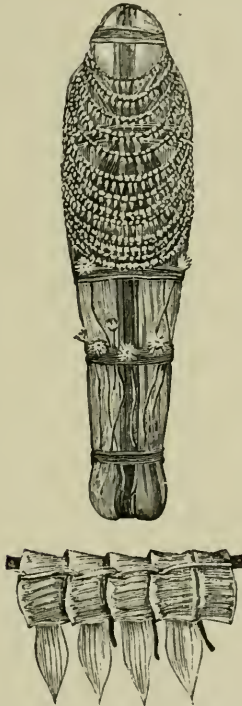


FIG. 26.—Mummy decorated with garlands; and portion of garland of lotus petals and *Persea* leaves, natural size (after Schweinfurth).

this subject Maspero has recently directed attention, and we can notice not a little of home life, simple like that of the modern Egyptians, but having more comforts, and probably more cultivation of taste than that of the modern peasantry.

One point alone I may here note, and that is the utilization of great numbers of flowers, seeds, and fruits, wild and cultivated, as offerings to the dead (Fig. 26). The mummies of great personages were often enwrapped in long wreaths, most artificially prepared, of the leaves of the persea and the lotus sewn together, and forming long garlands, perhaps like the Persian ones referred to by Horace in the lines,—

“No pomp of Persian feasts for me,  
No garland woven curiously  
With linden bark,”

and of which we have examples also in the Bible, not in natural flowers, but in the golden ornaments of the tabernacle and temple; though these presuppose natural garlands as used by the people. With these were flowers in their natural state, and often a great variety of things beautiful or valuable, furnished by the vegetable kingdom, and which might be supposed useful or pleasing to the spirit of the departed. Schweinfurth<sup>1</sup> enumerates forty-six species employed in this way in the royal and other mummies at Boulak; and in a later paper he notes a great number of useful plants buried with the humbler dead at Gehelen, near Erment, and at Abou-l-negga, near Thebes. Among others he notes the onion and garlic, which were held in high estimation in Egypt, and venerated even as Divine things, or as symbols of certain gods. The onion (*Allium Cepa*, L.) was largely cultivated, and is still, and also the garlic (*A. Sativum*, L.); and these are supposed to be the species referred to as *Bezolim* and *Chirimim* by Moses, in Leviticus xi. Besides these, however, there is found in the tombs a species of leek (*Allium Porrum*), probably a variety of a native species (*A. ampeloprasum*, Lin.). Pliny remarks on the veneration of these plants in connection with oaths, and Juvenal ridicules the Egyptians for cultivating

<sup>1</sup> “Trans. German Bot. Society,” 1882.

their gods in their gardens. With reference to the onion and the garlic, as well as to the vine, Schweinfurth speculates on the probability of the early colonists of the Nile valley having brought them from their earlier homes in the valley of the Euphrates. In any case, these plants, like the cereals and various leguminous species, were among the common inheritances of the Noachidæ before they separated to form distinct peoples; and the early agriculturists and botanical experimenters who discovered the capabilities of those plants, and developed them into useful varieties, deserved the apotheosis which was perhaps implied in the Divine honours awarded to the products of their skilful manipulation of vegetable species.

The family of Jacob was settled in the land of Goshen, in lower Egypt,<sup>1</sup> and there can now be no question that this was mainly the strip of fertile land extending eastward through the desert from the Nile, near Bubastis, to L. Timsah—at one time the valley of an important branch of the Nile, perhaps in a prehistoric time of the main river, and later, in historic times, traversed by a canal now represented by the Sweetwater Canal, which carries the fresh water of the Nile as far as Suez on the Red Sea. This was for them the natural avenue of an entrance into Egypt. It was and is a country of great fertility and beauty, and it has pasturage lands at the edge of the desert on each side, while it is on the main line of commercial intercourse between Egypt and the East. I am strongly inclined to believe that the people named “Aperiu” in the Egyptian inscriptions are really the Hebrews. The fact which furnishes the strongest argument against this identification,—namely, that these people are found to be in the east of Egypt after the Exodus,—is, after all, not a valid objection, since it must have been that a Hebrew minority preferred the

<sup>1</sup> According to recent discoveries of Naville, Goshen or Gesem would seem to have been a town at the west end of the Wady Tumilat, and from which the whole district obtained its name.

flesh-pots of Egypt, or were prevented from joining in the Exodus ; and it is also possible that even after the settlement in Palestine, Hebrew prisoners, or prisoners of some of the allied races, may have been transported to Egypt, and known by this name.<sup>1</sup>

Recent discoveries in Egypt have thrown much light on the Exodus, and this has more especially been the effect of Naville's great find of the site of Pithom. With the view of verifying and elucidating these important discoveries, I spent some time, when in Egypt, in studying the topography of the districts referred to in the Book of Exodus, with results which I have stated in a little work published in 1885,<sup>2</sup> and to which I shall refer in the following chapter, confining myself here to a short statement of the synchronism of events in Hebrew and Egyptian history, taking, however, the Hebrew genealogies and dates as a dominant guide, as they are now known to accord very closely with the more fragmentary records of the Egyptian monuments.

I have already stated the probability that the Hyksos were in Egypt in the time of Abraham. Their dominance may be roughly stated at two hundred years,<sup>3</sup> and Abraham may have been in Egypt many years before their final expulsion. They were succeeded by the eighteenth dynasty of native Egyptian kings ; and it is not improbable that Joseph came into Egypt, and that Jacob and his family settled there in the time of Thothmes III., one of the greatest kings of this dynasty.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is to be noted here that Aperiu corresponds to "Hebrew," not to "Israelite," and that the Edomites, Moabites, Ammonites, and other tribes were children of Eber or Heber as much as the Israelites, and are likely to have been associated with the latter by the Egyptians.

<sup>2</sup> "Egypt and Syria, Byepaths of Bible Knowledge."

<sup>3</sup> Manetho makes it much longer ; but there is reason to doubt his correctness in this, unless he includes times of early aggression and of final retreat.

<sup>4</sup> If the reading by M. de Rougés of the name *Iaakab*, as representing



Some have supposed that the shepherds still reigned in the time of Joseph; but many things in Joseph's history make this improbable, and the chronology of the Bible accords better with that above stated. Thothmes was succeeded by Amenophis III., and after his time the remaining kings of the eighteenth dynasty seem to have deviated from the ordinary worship of Egypt, and to have introduced a Syrian worship of Aten or Adonai, the Hebrew or Semitic word for Lord, and in regard to which it may be suspected that Hebrew, or at least Syrian influence had some share in its adoption. However this may be, a revolution occurred, introducing a new dynasty, the nineteenth, of which Rameses I., Seti I., and Rameses II. were the earliest kings. It was the kings of this dynasty who "knew not Joseph," and they were powerful, aggressive, military leaders, and oppressors of subject races. In the reign of Rameses II. the oppression of the Hebrews seems to have come to its height. Rameses, after a long reign, was succeeded by his son Menephtah, who reigned only eight years, and was followed for only two years by Seti II., who seems to have been displaced by a usurper, and he again, after a few years, by one Siptah,<sup>1</sup> who also reigned only a few years, when, according to the Harris papyrus, there occurred a great emigration from Egypt, followed by anarchy, from which Setnek I., the first king of the twentieth dynasty, rescued the nation. Somewhere in the four short reigns that succeeded Rameses, the Hebrew exodus occurred; and one of these four kings must have been the Pharaoh who seems to have perished with his army in the Red Sea. The weakness of these kings, as

a place which submitted to Thothmes in the seventh year of his reign, is correct, and if it corresponds to Jacob, then the patriarch must have been in Canaan at this time, and tributary to Egypt, before his settlement in that country.

<sup>1</sup> Both Seti II. and Siptah seem to have been surnamed Menephtah, which has led to some confusion.

evidenced by their short reigns, accords with the Hebrew story, and strong reasons have lately been advanced in favour of the belief that the Exodus Pharaoh was Siptah, a king of whom little is known, except that he was the last king of the eighteenth dynasty ; that he had a queen Ta-user or Thuoris, who appears in some lists as the last of the dynasty, and who possibly survived him and reigned as queen ; and that he left an unfinished and unoccupied tomb, from which what is known of his history has been learned.<sup>1</sup> Still another curious note of coincidence with Bible history is that of Rameses III., of the twentieth dynasty, who carried on a war in Palestine, and broke down the power of the Canaanites and other peoples of Syria at a time when Israel was in the desert ; thus very effectually preparing their way.

In this chapter we have traced Egyptian history from the Laurentian age to the Exodus, and if we have been unable to extend the human period in Egypt as far back as some historians, we have more than made up for this by tracing the annals of the country back, it may be for millions of years, to the ancient Eozoic period, when, though man was not, the first animal life made its appearance on our planet. In the next chapter we must endeavour to ascertain what light modern science has thrown on the Exodus, and more especially on its topographical features.

<sup>1</sup> Kellog, "Princeton Lectures on Abraham, Joseph, and Moses."

NOTE TO PAGE 231.—I observe that in some quarters the curious misapprehension which refers the great sphinx of Gizeh to an age long anterior to that of the pyramids, still prevails. The sphinx is really a portion of the natural limestone rock left in quarrying ; and as the earliest quarrying at Gizeh was for the material of the pyramids, the sphinx must be coeval with these.





VIEW OF JEBEL SUFSAFEH,—the Mount of the Law and the plain of Er Raheb in front of it, from a photograph of the Ordnance Survey.

The character of the mountain, as formed of old crystalline rocks, in part stratified, and its contrast with the plain, composed of recent deposits, are well exhibited by the photograph, reproduced here on a reduced scale.

## CHAPTER VII.

### *TOPOGRAPHY OF THE EXODUS.*

MODERN science has approached the Books of Exodus and Numbers along three lines of investigation. The higher criticism has sought to distribute their authorship among a number of writers, extending from the time of Moses to that of the later kings of Judah, and to represent the work as a compilation from different sources, made in times long posterior to those of which it treats. The writer has no inclination to enter into these questions. They are foreign to the departments of science which he has specially studied, and their value appears to him rather subjective than objective. They serve rather to show the speculative tendencies of certain minds in modern times than to throw any actual light on the subject to which they relate. Their results are also, to all appearance, contradictory to those established by other lines of scientific inquiry. More especially they are obviously at variance with the evident intimacy of the writers with the minutest facts of the history and conditions of Egypt under the eighteenth and nineteenth dynasties, and with the Egyptian influence in names and other particulars perceptible in these books, to whose writers Egypt is evidently the great civilized and military power of their time, and not Syria and Assyria and Chaldea, which assume their place in the later history.

A second line of investigation, of a more promising nature, is that of archæological research, which seeks to deduce from Egyptian monuments some contemporary evidence for or

against the Hebrew history. This has, in modern times, yielded valuable and positive results. We know with some certainty that the migration of Jacob into Egypt occurred either toward the close of the rule of those foreign kings known to the Egyptians as the *Hyksos*, or shepherd kings, or more probably, at the beginning of the dominancy of the native Egyptian dynasty which succeeded them, known to historians as the eighteenth. They evidently long enjoyed much consideration in Egypt, were regarded as a valuable bulwark of that country from invaders on the East, and probably furnished portions of the armies with which Thothmes III. and other great Egyptian sovereigns of that dynasty carried on their extensive and successful campaigns. It further appears that toward the close of the eighteenth dynasty the Hebrews either attained such dominance as to attempt to reform the religion of Egypt; or, what is perhaps more likely, that some astute statesman had conceived the idea of assimilating and simplifying the religious beliefs and practices of the different races inhabiting Egypt, by one of those acts of uniformity which have so often been attempted by rulers, but with so little success. Queen Taia, said to have been a fair-complexioned woman, with foreign features, and her son Amen-hotep IV., or Kuen-aten, have been handed down to us on Egyptian monuments as the leaders in this revolution; and the worship supposed to have been introduced was that of Aten or Adon, Adonai, symbolized by the solar disc; one of those monotheistic religions akin at least to the patriarchal beliefs of the Hebrews, and to which it is probable that in Egypt they at least partially conformed.<sup>1</sup> Though vilified in later times by

<sup>1</sup> The name Adonai (signifying Lord or "Lords" by a plural of majesty), as applied to God, first appears in the Bible in the time of Abraham (Gen. xv., xviii., xx.), who is represented as addressing God by this name; and it was no doubt in common use among the Hebrews in Egypt, since, in the interview with God at Horeb (Exod. iv. 10 and 13),

the Egyptian priests, we now know that this king was a great and beneficent ruler, holding a wide sway in Asia, as well as Africa, and that many of his chief officers were Semites. These facts are evidenced by the large collection of clay tablets exhumed from his record-chamber at Tel-el-Amadna, his capital city, and which consist of correspondence from his vassals and officers in Western Asia,<sup>1</sup> and those of his father Amen-hotep III. This religious innovation was, however, followed by a time of strife and confusion, instigated by the priests of Ra, out of which emerged the nineteenth Egyptian dynasty, one of the first kings of which, Seti, seems to have been himself of shepherd or Hebrew race,<sup>2</sup> and to have been introduced by marriage into the royal family. But with him ceased the privileges of the Hebrews. His son, Rameses II., the Sesostris of the Greeks, was a tyrant, who, through a long and mostly successful reign, ground with the direst oppression, not only the subject and foreign races, but the common people of

Moses addresses Him by this title, so that we may class Moses himself as originally a worshipper of Adon or Aten. This name no doubt served as a common title for God to the Hebrews and Cannanites. Abimelech, king of the Philistines, for instance, uses it (Gen. xx. 4). It may also have served in the time of Joseph and of the so-called heretical king Kuen-aten, to ally the Hebrews and Egyptians religiously; and when the high-churchmen of Thebes had finally overcome this innovation, the Hebrews and many of the common people of various origins may have continued to be dissenters from the State religion, and may have still worshipped Aten or Adonai. One reason of the substitution or restoration by Divine authority of the name Jahveh, which seems to have fallen into some disuse in the patriarchal time (Exod. vi. 3), may have been to break up the connection with Egyptian ritualism and idolatry implied in the worship of Aten.

<sup>1</sup> Papers by Sayce in *Academy*, *Contemporary Review*, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Under the term Hebrew I would here include all the races descended from Abraham, as the Edomites, etc. The countenance of Seti, as seen in his mummy and contemporary portraits, is certainly Semitic rather than Egyptian, and this accords with the historical statement that he was of foreign origin.

Egypt. He seems to have been "the king who knew not Joseph" of the Bible narrative; and in the troubled reign of his successor, Menephtah, who reaped the harvest of his father's misdeeds, or in that of one of his immediate successors, occurred the Exodus of the Israelites, from which time the power of Egypt and its foreign conquests manifestly declined. From the archæological investigations which have afforded these results, much may yet be hoped which may throw light on the biblical history; and what is known tends to raise our ideas of the power and importance of the Hebrew people during their sojourn in Egypt.<sup>1</sup>

The third line of investigation above referred to is that of topographical surveying and exploration. Much has been done in this way by successive travellers, who have traced out the probable route of the Hebrews from Egypt to Palestine, and endeavoured to identify the sites of the greater events of the Exodus; but these investigations have for the most part been so hasty and imperfect, that the greatest doubts have rested on the subject, so that even the precise site of the Mountain of the Law has been a matter of controversy. Recently, however, owing to the liberality of a number of gentlemen interested in geographical and biblical research, a thorough topographical survey of some of the more important parts of the peninsula of Sinai has been made by officers of the British Ordnance Survey; and, probably for the first time since the Exodus, a party of skilled surveyors has followed on the track of the Israelites, and subjected the whole question to the test of accurate measurement. The results of this survey have been most interesting and important, and have been sumptuously published in four folio volumes of letterpress, maps, and photographs; which picture, in a manner never before accom-

<sup>1</sup> For authorities, see Lenormant and Chevallier, "Manual of Ancient History;" Kellog, "Lectures on Abraham," etc.



plished, that wilderness into which the ancient Hebrews plunged themselves in quest of civil and religious liberty.<sup>1</sup>

Still more recently, the happy discovery and exploration of the site of Pithom, by M. Naville, under the auspices of the Egypt Exploration Fund,<sup>2</sup> has thrown a flood of light on the earlier stages of the Exodus, not comprehended in the scope of the Ordnance Survey; and the topography of the Wady Tumilat, now recognised as the ancient land of Goshen, has been admirably illustrated by the labours of Colonel Ardagh and the engineers of the English army of occupation, as well as by the explorers of the "Fund." Under the stimulus of the Pithom discovery, I gave some days of the time at my disposal to an examination of the ground between Cairo and Ismailia, and thence southward to Suez and Jebel Attaka,—a district now very accessible by means of the railway between Cairo and Suez,—with the view of carefully weighing in the light of this discovery, and of the actual conformation of the ground, the probable route of Israel.

On the east side of the Delta of the Nile, about fifty miles north-east of Cairo, a narrow valley of cultivated soil extends eastward, with desert on both sides, for about eighty miles, or nearly as far as the town of Ismailia, on the line of the Suez Canal where it crosses Lake Timsah. This valley, known as Wady Tumilat, and anciently as the land of Goshen, or Gesen, or Ramese, is wide at its western end, and gradually narrows towards the east. As the desert sand is, however, encroaching on it from the south, and has, indeed, in places overwhelmed an ancient canal which at one time probably ran near the middle of the valley, it must formerly have been more extensive than at present. Recent surveys also render it certain that

<sup>1</sup> "Ordnance Survey of the Peninsula of Sinai," published by authority of the Lords Commissioners of Her Majesty's Treasury, Ordnance Survey Office, Southampton, 1869.

<sup>2</sup> See also Naville's later volume, "Goshen."

this valley once carried a branch of the Nile, which discharged its waters into the Red Sea. This branch, or a canal representing it, must have existed in the time of Moses. At present the valley is watered by the Sweetwater Canal, running from the Nile to Suez; and though probably inferior to the land of Goshen in its best days, it is still one of the most beautiful districts in Egypt, at least in its western part, presenting large stretches of fertile land covered with luxuriant crops, numerous cattle and sheep, large groves of date-palms, whose fruit is said to be the best in Egypt, and numerous populous villages; while it must always have been, what it now eminently is, a leading line of communication between Egypt and the countries to the east.

The relations of this valley accord admirably with the scriptural notices of it. It would be the only way of convenient entrance into Egypt for Jacob with his flocks and herds. It was separated to a great degree from the rest of Egypt, and was eminently suited to be the residence of a pastoral and agricultural people, differing in their habits from the Egyptians, and accustomed to the modes of life in use in Palestine. Possibly it may have been thinly peopled at the time, owing to the then recent expulsion of the Hyksos. The wonder is that the Israelites could have been induced voluntarily to leave so fine a country for the desert; and this can be accounted for only by the galling nature of the oppression which they were suffering. It is certain also that, before the time of the Exodus, the Hebrews must have spread themselves, to some extent, in Lower Egypt. This is apparent from the offices assigned by Pharaoh to the brothers of Joseph, and from the fact that the mother of Moses resided near the court of the king, probably in Zoan or its vicinity (see map, fig. 27).

Such being the theatre of the events recorded in the early chapters of Exodus, the time was in the reign of Menephtah, or of Siptah, or some one of the four short-lived kings who suc-

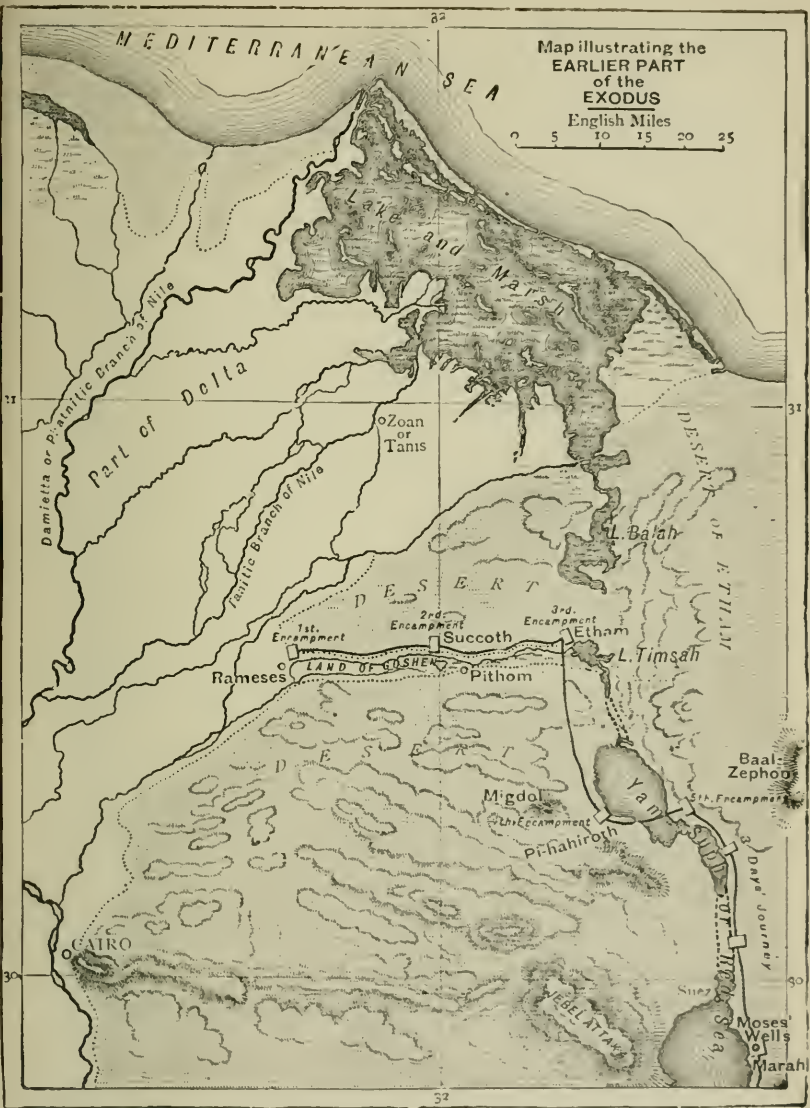


FIG. 27.—Shaded portion desert, unshaded Nile Alluvium.  
 (From "Egypt and Syria.")

ceeded to the long and iron reign of Rameses II. ; and the court of the Pharaoh was held at the ancient city of Zoan, or Tanis, about twenty miles north of the Wady Tumilat, and near the northern margin of the Delta. We know from contemporary Egyptian sources that it was not unusual for the Egyptian kings at this period to reside at Zoan, especially when they had affairs of state in hand with the Semitic peoples in the Delta, or with the subject provinces in Western Asia. At the time in question the disaffection of the Hebrews was itself a good reason for the royal residence being fixed at this place. Zoan was a town having historic associations with the Hebrews. It was built, presumably, by an Asiatic (possibly Hittite or Anakim) colony seven years after Hebron ; and this note in the Book of Numbers<sup>1</sup> constitutes an intimation to us that while the Egyptians were occupying the Delta from the south, other peoples were pressing into it from the east. It had probably been the capital of the Hyksos Pharaoh who so hospitably received Abraham when driven by famine into Egypt. It had not unlikely been the head-quarters of Joseph when providing for the seven years of famine. Its ruins, so well excavated and described by Petrie,<sup>2</sup> show that, though built on a mere sand-hill in one of the lowest parts of the Delta, now, by the gradual settling which is taking place, almost submerged, it was one of the most magnificent cities of Egypt in its public buildings ; and we know that it was the centre of a district thickly peopled, and of exuberant fertility and great agricultural beauty, even as the "Garden of the Lord." The following graphic description of it, by Miss Edwards,<sup>3</sup> may give some idea of the city to which Moses was sent on his mission of deliverance, and may enable us better to sympathize with his hesitation in accepting such a commission :—

<sup>1</sup> Numbers xiii. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Report on Tanis, Egypt. Exploration Fund.

<sup>3</sup> *Harper's Magazine*, 1886.

“Let us suppose a stranger to have hired a skiff a mile or two below Tanis, and to approach by way of the river. The banks are bordered by gardens and villas, and the stream is alive with traffic. He is put ashore at the foot of a magnificent flight of steps, from the top of which he sees the great temple—a huge pile of buildings showing high above a line of massive wall. It stands on the east bank of the Nile, facing westward. A paved roadway leads from the landing-place to the gateway. This pile of buildings—more like a huge fortress than a temple—looks quite near; but it is full half a mile from the water-side. Around it, beyond it, lies a flat, verdant, limitless panorama, divided by the broad river. This plain is dotted with villages, each embowered in clumps of sycamores and palms. Here and there a gliding sail betrays the course of an unseen canal, while far away to the northward, whence a mass of storm-cloud is driving up from the coast, a pallid, far-distant gleam tells the story of the sea. As yet there is no lake Menzaleh; as yet there is no desert. The great natural dike which shuts out the waters of the Mediterranean on the one hand is still intact; the bounteous Nile is not yet canalized on the other. A time will come when the one shall be let in and the other shall be barred out; but for the present all is corn-land and meadow grass where hereafter there shall be salt lake and sand.

“Even at this distance the stranger’s quick sight detects the tops of a forest of tapering obelisks, and the twin towers of a series of massive pylons. One object, shining, solitary, towering high above the temple and its surroundings, fixes his attention. It is ruddy, as if touched by sunset; it glitters, as though the surface were of glass. It is not an obelisk; neither is it a tower. It cannot be a statue; that is impossible. Yet, as he draws nearer, his shadow lengthening before him, the paved dromos blinding white beneath his feet, that glowing, glittering, perplexing thing grows more distinct, more shapely,

more like that into which it presently resolves itself—a godlike, gigantic figure, crowned, erect, majestic, watching over the temple and the city.” (This is the great monolithic granite statue of Rameses II.) “A single figure fourteen times the height of the living man—a single figure cut from a single stone of the precious red granite of Syene.

“The giant stands alone, not in the middle, but to the side of a large courtyard, so leaving an unbroken vista from the door of the first pylon to the door of the sanctuary. His attitude is that of walking, with the left foot forward. His right hand grasps a short truncheon, his left holds a massive staff of state. The face is serene and noble, and on the head towers high the double crown of Upper and Lower Egypt. The figure alone, with its crown, stands over 90 feet in height, and weighs at the least 900 tons. Crown, plinth, and pedestal all counted, it stands 120 feet above the level of the pavement. After this, no miracle of art, no pomp of decoration, can greatly move the wonder of the pilgrim stranger. He goes on through a courtyard surrounded by a colonnade, and bisected by an avenue of single-stone columns thirty-six feet high; thence through another gateway, across an open space, and along a magnificent avenue bordered on both sides by monuments of many kinds and many ages. This avenue is the *Via Sacra* of Tanis. It is about 375 feet in length, and within that comparatively short distance, arranged so as to produce the subtlest play of colour and the greatest diversity of effect, are ranged a multitude of red granite obelisks, yellow sandstone colossi, portrait statues in red, black, and grey granite, shrines, sphinxes, and doubtless many smaller works in the more rare materials, such as diorite, alabaster, green serpentine, and the like.”

But Moses, strong in faith and fortified by Divine promises, dared to enter on his great mission, and to act as the inter-

mediary between the oppressed, discontented, yet fickle and uncertain multitude, and the great king, strong in his well-organized army and in the support of the nobles and priesthood of Egypt.

It would seem that the Hebrews had so far acquiesced in the counsels of their leaders as to assume an attitude of passive resistance, and had probably gathered around the city of Rameses and in its vicinity, a most convenient rallying-place, both for those in the land of Goshen and those scattered over other parts of Egypt. There seems little reason to doubt that this Rameses was not, as some have supposed, Zoan itself,<sup>1</sup> though that city has sometimes been called by the name Rameses, but a store city or garrison town at the western end of the Wady Tumilat, at or near the places now called Abou Hamad and Saft el Henneh.

Moses and Aaron passed to and fro between Zoan and Rameses, acting as ambassadors of their people, and it is evident that this state of things continued for some time, neither party venturing to take a decisive step. The reason of this it is not difficult to understand. The king's chariot force, and probably other troops assembled at or near Zoan, commanded the land of Goshen, as well as the northern route leading to Canaan from Lower Egypt. Any movement of retreat to the east on the part of the Hebrews could be checked by an advance on their flank. The Hebrews, therefore, could not move without the king's consent. Knowing this, and knowing also that the beginning of actual civil war might be the signal for rebellion among other subject Asiatic peoples, the king thought it best to temporize. It seems also very probable that the invasions of enemies from the west, which we know occurred in the reign of Menephtah, had obliged the king to deplete or remove his garrisons on the

<sup>1</sup> See "Goshen" by Naville. (Egypt. Exploration Fund Publications.

eastern side of Egypt, thus giving a comparatively easy means of departure to the Israelites. Some such supposition seems necessary to account for the attitude taken up by the fugitives and the policy of the king. In such cases of political deadlock, Divine Providence often cuts the knot. It was so in this instance.

The continued plagues inflicted on Egypt at length produced such discontent among the people that the king was forced to let the Hebrews go. The mandate was no sooner given than it was acted on at once and in haste. It was in anticipation of this that the people had been collected, and it is with reference to this that they are said to have been driven out at the last. No time was to be lost, for if Pharaoh should change his mind, he still had the Israelites in his power for two days' march at least. Beyond that, they might hope to be out of his reach.

The camp at Rameses was therefore broken up; and, gathering their countrymen, and their flocks and herds as they passed along the Wady Tumilat, and receiving from the Egyptians gifts and contributions in lieu of the property they had to leave behind, the host hurried on to the eastward, executing apparently in one day a march of twelve to fifteen miles; though perhaps it is not necessary to suppose that the several halting-places were merely at the end of single day's marches. They are said to have reached the district of Succoth, and to have encamped within its limits, probably to the west of Pithom;<sup>1</sup> and there is no more likely place for this encampment than the neighbourhood of Kassassin, where there is abundance of forage and water, and a defensible position, reasons which weighed in our own time with Sir Garnet Wolseley in selecting this as a halting-point in his march on Tel-el-Kebir. Meeting with no molestation or pursuit, they

<sup>1</sup> The district around Pithom is now known to have borne this name, Tukoth in the Egyptian inscriptions.



continued their march on the following day, and encamped at Etham, on the edge of the desert, or on the edge of the desert of Etham, at the eastern end of the Wady Tumilat.<sup>1</sup> We learn from Numbers xxxiii. 8 that all the desert east of the present Suez Canal was called the desert of Etham; and the "edge" of this desert on the route followed by the Israelites must have been near the present town of Ismailia, at the head of Lake Timsah, then perhaps truly a lake of crocodiles, as its name imports, and sweetened by the waters of the Nile.

Probably the encampment was not far from the present Nefish station, a little west of the town of Ismailia; and it is worthy of note that here the desert presents, in consequence of its slight elevation above the bottom of the wady, a better defined "edge" than usual. From elevated portions of the desert surface at this place the bold front of Jebel Attaka can be seen in the distance, with the intervening lower range of Jebel Geneffeh, and the green and now partly swampy flat of Wady Tumilat in the foreground. When at Ismailia we rode over this ground, and could imagine the Hebrew leader looking out from the sand-hills behind his encampment with anxious eyes to the east and south, where his alternative lines of march lay, and to the west, whence Pharaoh's chariots might be expected to follow him.

At this point the desert portion of the journey direct to Palestine begins; and here, between Lake Timsah and Lake Ballat, is the highest part of the isthmus, that now called El Guisr, and in some places eighty feet above the sea, and the best road out of Egypt to the east.<sup>2</sup> Here the people

<sup>1</sup> The name Etham is supposed by some to have reference to a chain of fortified forts held by the Egyptians on the border of this desert, but is more likely the designation of the desert near Lake Timsah.

<sup>2</sup> The ancient road leading eastward by this route has been re-discovered and described by Holland. It is no doubt that called in Exodus "The way of the Philistines" rather than the more northern road by Pelusium and the coast.

would be for the moment safe. Pharaoh could no longer attack them in flank; and if he approached them from the west, a few resolute men could hold him in check, while the rest should flee eastward into the desert.

But here a new and at first sight strange order is given to the fugitives. They are not to go any farther eastward in what seems the direct road to Canaan, lest, as we are told, when opposed by the Philistines,—at this time subject to or allied with Egypt,—they should not have courage to advance. They are to turn to the south, at right angles to their former course, along the west side of Lake Timsah and the Bitter Lakes, the latter then probably the northern end of the Yam Suph or Red Sea. This would have the temporary advantage of keeping them a little longer within reach of water and pasturage; but, if Pharaoh should pursue them, it would interpose the sea between them and their objective point, and enable their enemy to cut off their retreat northward, and shut them in between his army and the Red Sea, that is, if the Red Sea then extended up into the Bitter Lakes, which we shall see in the sequel is probable; for if there had been a pass south of the Bitter Lakes, at Chalouf, as at present, there could have been no difficulty. The only explanation of the order given to Moses is, that by this movement, "God will be honoured on Pharaoh and his host," while Pharaoh himself obviously thought that the fugitives had involved themselves in inextricable difficulty, and that the dread of the wilderness had driven them to this suicidal course.

It is to be observed that in executing this apparently retrograde movement, the Hebrew leader may be supposed, as heretofore, to have had in view the wisest means to protect his people from sudden attack, and to have acted without reference to any possible miracle. In moving to the south his flank would again be exposed for a time, but in the course of a few miles he would enter the narrow pass between the eleva-

tion known as Jebel Geneffeh and the Bitter Lake, and would again be protected on both flanks against the attack of a chariot force. This position of vantage he might reach in one day's march, and beyond this he would still be protected for several miles, until the flat country opens out into the desert of Suez, and he would again be exposed to attack from the west, and would besides be in a district destitute of water. There can therefore be little doubt that he must have halted somewhere in the narrow plain between Geneffeh and the Bitter Lake, where he could hope for a time to make a stand against his pursuer and wait the development of events. Here accordingly, as we are informed in the narrative, at the close of the day's march in the evening, the chariots of Pharaoh were seen advancing in pursuit. Pharaoh had no doubt watched by scouts the march of the Israelites, and when he learned that they had turned to the south he at once decided to pursue them, interpreting their change of direction as caused by dread of the desert, which had "shut them in," and judging that, hemmed in by the sea, they were entirely at his mercy.

A very grave and serious responsibility was now upon the leader of the Exodus. He had, it is true, passed over the perilous open country between Etham and the defile of Geneffeh; but here he must make a stand. If he could repel the attack of Pharaoh, protected as his flanks were by the sea on one side and the mountains on the other, he might hope to gain time to transport his people over the narrowest part of the sea to the south. But if he failed in this he would be driven into the open and waterless desert to the southward, and would be at the mercy of his foe, unless he could force his march thirty miles farther, and take up a position on the heights of Jebel Attaka, where, however, he would be destitute of water. But the children of Israel were in no mood to fight for their liberty; and it appears from Exodus xiv. that they were prepared rather to surrender and return to Egypt.

Moses remonstrated, and assured them that the Lord would fight for them ; and it is implied in the narrative that they were urged to defend themselves ; but it was of no avail, and when he "cried unto the Lord" the order was given to plunge into the sea and cross it. The people who would not fight were willing to flee, even into the depths of the sea. They had faith in God as the ruler of nature and as the God of their fathers, though their long bondage had made them cowards as regarded the Egyptians ; and their faith was rewarded by a miraculous passage, in regard to which a "strong east wind," driving the waters before it, is especially mentioned as a secondary cause. This was in all probability a north-east wind rather than due east, and, co-operating with a receding tide, would tend to produce an unusual recession of the waters. But here arise several questions which deserve our attention. Before attending to these, however, let us summarize the narratives in Exodus and Numbers, that we may fully understand the movements of the Hebrews and the strategy of their leader, as above described.

The command to depart was given by Pharaoh "in the night," and the people were "thrust out, and could not tarry," so that they broke up early the next morning. "And the children of Israel journeyed from Rameses to Succoth, about 600,000 men, besides children" ; and a "mixed multitude" of Egyptian slaves went with them. They "pitched in Succoth," that is, within the boundary of that district. "They departed from Succoth, and pitched in Etham, which is in the edge of the wilderness" of the same name. But God led them not "the way of the land of the Philistines," "lest peradventure the people repent when they see war, and they return to Egypt. But God led the people about, the way of the wilderness of the Red Sea." So they were commanded to "turn" or "turn back," and to march to "Pi-hahiroth," which is near the sea "between Migdol and the sea," or "before

Migdol," and "over against" or opposite to "Baal-zephon," which was probably on the opposite side of the sea. Here it was that the Egyptians came upon them.

A preliminary question here is, as to the cause of the despair of the Hebrews, when they found that they were pursued. The force employed against them was not very large. It is stated as six hundred chariots, each probably carrying two men. It must, however, be borne in mind that this kind of force was the most formidable known at the time, and that the Egyptians were accustomed with it to rout great hosts of half-disciplined and poorly-armed infantry. It was also, in all probability, only the advance guard of a much larger army, and intended to bring the Israelites to bay until the Egyptian infantry could close upon them. There was cause therefore for alarm, though Moses had evidently at every stage of the march selected positions suited to give his army, if it may be so called, the greatest possible advantage.

A still more important question is as to the precise point where the Hebrews were overtaken, and where the crossing of the sea occurred. It is evident, in the first place, that no important town or city existed at the locality. This is implied in the description given, and in the character of the names employed. The place of this great event was so important that care was taken to define it by mentioning three points, presumably well known to the narrator; but this method implies that there was no one definite name for the locality. All the names employed are Semitic, and not Egyptian, except perhaps the prefix "Pi" in one of them. Pi-hahiroth may have been a village, but its distinctive character is that of "place of reeds"—a reedy border of the sea, perhaps near the embouchure of fresh water from the Nile, or Sweetwater Canal. Naville conjecturally identifies it with a town named Pikerehet, not far from Pithom, where there was a temple of Osiris, and a "farm" of the Egyptian king. It seems to have been

nearer the sea than Pithom, and a place of grass, reeds, or pasturage. This may perhaps account for the fact that the Septuagint translates Pi-hahiroth by the words "the farm," that is, probably, the farm of Pharaoh, the same, perhaps, in which Joseph's brethren had been appointed overseers, and which may have continued under the management of Hebrews. But "τῆς ἐπαιλέως" of the Septuagint perhaps rather means a fold for cattle, such as would be connected with pasture lands, than a farm. Migdol cannot have been, as supposed by some, a fortified place. It would have been madness, with Pharaoh in their rear, for the Israelites to have encamped near such a place. It must rather have been a commanding height, used, as the name implies, as a watch-tower, to command an extensive view or to give signals. It is stated by some writers that there were many Migdols or watch-towers on the Egyptian frontier, which is probably true, but this must have been an object, and probably a natural one, sufficiently conspicuous and prominent to fix the locality in the time of the writer. Baalzephon—"the Lord of the North"—is generally understood to have been a mountain, though both Jebel Attaka and the northern peak of Jebel-er-Rabah may lay claim to the title. In any case, the place so named by Moses was "opposite" to the camp of the Israelites, and consequently across the sea. And not unlikely it was a high place sacred to some Semitic god, for the name Baal implies a Semitic rather than Egyptian divinity.

After somewhat careful examination of the country, I believe that only one place can be found to satisfy these conditions of the Mosaic narrative, namely, the south part of the Bitter Lake, between station Fayid on the railway and station Geneffeh. Near this place are some inconsiderable ancient ruins, and flats covered with *Arundo* and *Scirpus*, which may represent Pi-hahiroth. On the west is the very conspicuous peak known as Jebel Shebremet, more than 500 feet high,

commanding a very wide prospect, and forming a most conspicuous object to the traveller approaching from the north. Opposite, in the Arabian desert, rises the prominent northern point of the Jebel-er-Rabah, marked on the maps as Jebel Muksheih, and which may have been the Baal-zephon of Moses. Here there is also a basin-like plain, suitable for an encampment, and at its north side the foot of Jebel Shebremet juts out so as to form a narrow pass, easy of defence. Here also the Bitter Lake narrows, and its shallower part begins, and a north-east wind, combined with a low tide, would produce the greatest possible effect in lowering the water.<sup>1</sup>

It may further be observed as an incidental corroboration, that the narrative in Exodus states that after crossing the sea the Israelites journeyed three days and found no water. From the place above referred to, three days' journey would bring them to the Wells of Moses, opposite Suez, which thus come properly into place as the Marah of the narrative, whereas the ordinary theory of a crossing at Suez would bring the people at once to these wells. They are also said to have journeyed or three days in the wilderness of Etham, and then to have come to the wilderness of Shur, or "the wall," whereas the wilderness of Shur is directly opposite Suez, and not three days' journey to the south. The three days' journey from the place of crossing would not be long journeys, the whole distance being about thirty miles; but there was now no reason for haste, and the want of water would not be favourable to long marches.

<sup>1</sup> It has been suggested that the strong north-east wind occurring with an ebb tide, may have laid bare one of the sand-banks crossing the head of the gulf, forming a road for the people, while the water on both sides protected their flanks as a wall of defence. A change of wind to the west, immediately following their passage, would bring back the waters on their enemies; and that this change actually took place is shown by the fact, stated in Exodus, that the bodies of the Egyptians were cast up on the east side of the sea, which could only have taken place with a west wind.

The question has often been raised whether, at the time of the Exodus, the Red Sea extended farther north than at present. In answer to this, it may be stated, in the first place, that the terms of the narrative in Exodus imply, and the geological structure of the country proves, that there must have been a land connection between Africa and Asia north of Ismailia, at the place which is now the highest point of the isthmus. Further, without entering into details, I may say

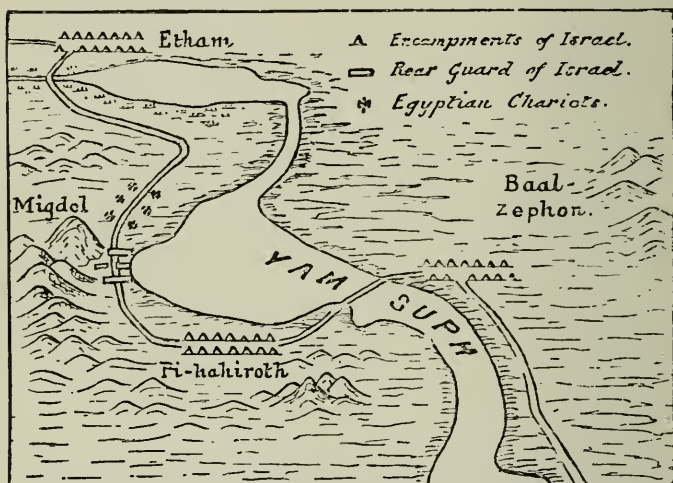


FIG. 28.—Bird's-eye View illustrating the Crossing of the Red Sea.

that there are some geological reasons for the belief that there has been in modern times a slight elevation of the isthmus on the south side, and probably a slight depression on the north side. It seems also certain that in the time of Moses a large volume of Nile water was during the inundation sent eastward toward the Red Sea. There is therefore nothing unreasonable in supposing that, as assumed in this chapter, the Bitter Lakes at the time of the Exodus constituted an extension of the sea.



Further, such an extension would be subject to considerable fluctuations of level, occasioned by the winds and tides. These now occur towards the head of the sea. Near Suez I passed over large surfaces of desert, which I was told were inundated on occasion of high tides and easterly winds, and at levels which the sea now fails to reach there are sands holding recent marine shells in such a state of preservation that not many centuries may have elapsed since they were in the bottom of the sea. Since my return to England I have found that Professor Hull takes nearly the same view with reference to the condition of the isthmus at the time of the Exodus, which has also been advocated by Ritter, and by Mr. Stuart Poole. M. Naville favours a locality still farther north, between the Bitter Lakes and Lake Timsah. Not being aware of this when on the ground, I did not give any special attention to this as a crossing-place; and the only objection to it seems to be, that it is too near to the encampment at Etham, and too far from the Wells of Moses to accord exactly with the narrative in Exodus. Naville quotes Linant Bey as favouring this view on different grounds from himself.

Finally, to fulfil the precise conditions of the story of the fourteenth chapter of Exodus, we must go one day's march southward from the edge of the desert near Ismailia, and halt in front of an eminence with or serving as a watch-tower, with Pharaoh's pastures and cattle-folds in front, and the mountain shrine of Baal-zephon exactly opposite on the east side of the sea. We shall then be in a position to march straight forward to the crossing-place. I believe these conditions are most fully realized at the south end of the Bitter Lakes, near Jebel Shebremet, but they may possibly also be approximated by the line south of Lake Timsah, suggested by M. Naville.

In the above narrative of the Exodus, which is in the main identical with that given in my work, "Egypt and Syria,"<sup>1</sup> I

<sup>1</sup> Religious Tract Society (2nd edition, 1887).

have stated in the briefest possible way the conclusions at which I arrived on the ground as to the movements of the Israelites; but as very different views as to the place of the crossing of the Red Sea have been advocated, I think it necessary here to take up the subject a little more in detail under the following heads:—(1) The structure and present state of the Isthmus of Suez, and the changes which it has experienced in historical times. (2) The historical evidence as to a former greater extension northward of the Red Sea.

The facts relating to the movement of Israel from Egypt to Palestine render necessary some reference to the structure of the Isthmus of Suez, respecting which and its existence at various periods as a connecting link between Asia and Africa, there have at different times been very diverse opinions. Perhaps the best way to understand its nature will be to suppose it reduced to its condition in former geological periods, as explained in the previous chapter, and to note the changes which it must have undergone. If we suppose Egypt, Arabia, and Palestine reduced to the land of which we have evidence in the Mesozoic or early Tertiary age, it will appear as three rocky islands, with fringing belts of sand, and two straits connecting what are now the Red Sea and the Mediterranean. In the cretaceous time, when the great limestones of Palestine were deposited in the sea, and when the similar limestones of Egypt were also formed, this was the condition of the land, and this continued substantially to the Eocene period; but at the close of this, the eastern strait, that of the Gulf of Akaba, became closed. The western strait, that of which the Gulf of Suez is a part, continued through the Miocene; and if the raised beaches, already referred to, near Cairo, are of Pliocene or Pleistocene date, then up to this time there must have been free communication between the Red Sea and the Mediterranean, though probably with an interval of land in the Pliocene. In evidence of this, we have shells

identical with or near to those of the Indian Ocean, in the raised beaches at Cairo and Gizeh. The present isthmus is, therefore, a very modern thing; and it can scarcely have existed earlier than the first Continental period of the Pliocene. But at this time the isthmus must have attained to a great development, and some cause must have obstructed the issue of the Nile into the Mediterranean, for we find extensive deposits of marly beds of lacustrine origin containing Nile shells, one of them, *Ætheria caillaudi*, now confined to the Nile above Assouan, and bones of hippopotamus, crocodiles, and fishes belonging to the Nile.<sup>1</sup> There must, in short, have been a sort of lake or lagoon where the isthmus is now. (See maps.)

At this time, no doubt, the separation of the Mediterranean fauna from that of the Indian Ocean and Red Sea began, and would be accelerated by the different temperature of their waters, established so soon as the isthmus was formed. But the great Pleistocene submergence next occurred, and again the waters of the Red Sea and Mediterranean probably intermixed freely for a time. This was succeeded by a re-elevation, partially restoring the conditions of the first Continental period, and finally connecting Asia and Africa. It may be that the duration of the Pleistocene submergence was not long, so that little time may have been given for mixture of fauna. But in any case, so soon as the isthmus was re-established, there would be a divergence, because the Red Sea is supplied with the warm waters of the Indian Ocean, and the Mediterranean with the cooler waters of the Atlantic. For this reason the Indian Ocean fauna reaches up to the head of the Red Sea, and the Atlantic Fauna to the head of the Mediterranean. We have already seen that there is no necessity whatever for supposing that the shells of the two seas have been modi-

<sup>1</sup> Schweinfurth describes the freshwater beds around Lake Timsah as indicating an old mouth of the Nile.



FIG. 29.—SECTION OF THE ISTHMIUS OF SUEZ.—(a) Modern Deposits with Mediterranean shells. (b) Modern Deposits with Red Sea shells. (c) Isthmian Deposits (Pleistocene). (d) Miocene Tertiary.

fied since the isthmus was established; the question is one not of modification, but of migration. Certain it is that at present the shell-fishes of the Red Sea are quite distinct from those of the Mediterranean, and nothing can be more curious than to gather the beautiful Indian Ocean shells and corals so abundant about Suez, and then to go over to Port Said and note the entire difference of the Mediterranean animals. It has been said, that a geologist studying the beds now being deposited in the Mediterranean and Red Sea, would consider them to belong to different geological periods by reason of the difference of the shells; but this would be the case only if he were ignorant of the geographical conditions, and also of the contemporary animals and plants of the land.

Let us now look at this curious isthmus, thus singularly built up to unite Asia and Africa, with the aid of the section (Fig. 29). It will thus be seen that the oldest part of the isthmus is formed of the Miocene beds at Chalouf, near the head of the Red Sea, which are not, however, now more than two or three yards above that sea, and which are covered in part by old Nile deposits and in part by sands, with shells of Red Sea species. The highest part of the isthmus, however, and that which may in historical times be called its original part, is that of the rising grounds of El Guisr and the Serapeum,

which are composed of old Nile deposits. Thus it would seem that the Nile, before it began to build up its own delta, was occupied in filling up the strait between Africa and Asia, and in constructing that isthmus which in our time M. de Lesseps has cut through.

With reference to the former extension westward of the Gulf of Suez, we have indisputable evidence in the marine beds with Red Sea shells extending toward the Bitter Lakes; and at a very slight elevation above the present level of the sea, not, I believe, anywhere exceeding twenty-seven feet along the line of the canal. These shells are of recent Red Sea species, and therefore belong to the time succeeding the Pleistocene submergence, that is, to the early modern period. It is true that the oldest rock known along the line of the canal exists at Chalouf, near the present head of the sea, and that the ridge cut by the canal is twenty-six feet above the sea; but of this only the lower part consists of the Miocene beds, the upper part being modern; and the evidence of the shells and raised beaches shows that in the early modern period this ridge must have been lower than the sea-level, that is, there has been modern elevation.<sup>1</sup>

The question to what extent this condition of extension of the Red Sea existed at the time of the Exodus is one depending on the historical evidence, to which we may now turn, beginning with the great fact on which the whole hangs, the identification of Pithom by M. Naville.

The site of Pithom is distinctly visible from the railway, about twelve miles west of Ismailia, and presents the remains of fortifications and extensive granaries of crude brick, some portions of which probably date from before the Exodus, though the site was occupied down to Roman times as the chief town of Succoth, and an important frontier post. During

<sup>1</sup> For further facts see Prof. Hull's Report to Palestine Exploration Fund.

the construction of the Sweetwater Canal, it was also selected as a principal station, and at present it is occupied by Arabs, who cultivate the ground in its vicinity. It possessed a temple to the god Ra in his aspect of Tum in which he represents the setting sun, erected by Rameses II.,<sup>1</sup> and some of the objects connected with this temple exist in a remarkable state of perfection, and are of great interest as monuments contemporary with the residence of Israel in Egypt, and in the transport and placing of which the Hebrew bondsmen were no doubt employed. Among those transferred to the square of Ismailia, and accessible to every traveller, are three sitting figures in Syene granite, rather larger than life. The central one is Rameses himself, and the gods Ra and Tum sit at either side. There is also a monumental stone of the same granite, inscribed with the record of the building of the temple, a monolithic sanctuary and sphinx, cut in the brown quartzite of Jebel Ahmar, and two large sphinxes in the porphyritic diorite of Assouan. All these objects are in the best style of the art of the nineteenth dynasty, and as set up in one of the chief cities of Goshen, were badges of the subjection of the Hebrews to the king and to his gods.

But Pithom existed long after the time of Rameses, and is shown by the inscriptions discovered by Naville to have been an important garrison town in the Greek and Roman times, and to have been identical with a town known as Heroöpolis in those times and whose site was previously unknown. Now, as Naville has shown, Heroöpolis was a town described by many ancient authorities as near to the Arabian Gulf, and as eight and three-quarters or nine miles from a seaport on that gulf known as Clysma, and he actually found a Roman milestone which indicated this distance from Clysma. All this has been puzzling to geographers, and will continue to be so till

<sup>1</sup> The name "Pithom" represents Pi Tum, the abode of Tum.

they admit the former northern extension of the Red Sea, even in historic times. The whole argument of M. Naville is well summed up in the following extract from a paper by Professor Gillett of New York.

“The importance of the milestone which Naville found, and which gives the distance from Ero or Heroöpolis to Clysma as nine miles, has been questioned. According to the testimony of ancient geographers, Clysma was a port on the Red Sea at its upper end. If, then, the sea extended north of Suez and included Lake Timsah, the place must have been situated near that lake. When this arm of the sea was dried in part by the rising of the ground at the south of the isthmus, the head of navigation was transferred, and with it the Red Sea port, which thus carried the name southward with the trade and fame. Thus, on this theory, the milestone bears witness to the nearness of the sea.

“In his geography mention is made of the city of Heroöpolis by Strabo, of which he says (Book xvi., ch. iv., § 2, and xvii., iii. 20) that it was ‘situated in that recess of the Arabian Gulf which is on the side of the Nile’ (toward the Nile); and incidentally he speaks (xvi., iv. 4, 5) of those who sail from Heroöpolis to Ptolemaïs. In the same work he says (xvii., i. 26), ‘Near Arsinoë are situated, in the recess of the Arabian Gulf toward Egypt, Heroöpolis and Cleoptris; harbours, suburbs, many canals and lakes are also near.’ In another place he speaks of the sea as the ‘Heroöpolitan Gulf.’ Now the distance of the site of Heroöpolis from the sea is sixty miles or so; and if the sea never came nearer we must take the choice between two, either the milestone and Strabo pervert the truth (without any motive, or through ignorance), or we have no clue as yet to the location of the ancient Heroöpolis. What would be the sense of calling a harbour after the name of a city sixty miles distant, across an arid plain, and with which it had no connection by water? and how could so

circumstantial a recorder of travels as Strabo be so far mistaken as to speak of 'sailing from Heroöpolis'? The question is really a simple one on the single assumption that formerly the sea came farther north, and has been dried or driven back by the rising of the ground, which has cut off the present Bitter Lakes and Lake Timsah. This would harmonize all statements of Strabo, the milestone, and the Septuagint and Koptic versions of the Bible. It is a peculiar fact, that the Septuagint (Gen. xlvi. 28) says that Jacob met Joseph at Heroöpolis, while the Koptic version gives Pithom as the place of meeting. If, now, as the work of Naville shows, Pithom and Heroöpolis were one and the same place, it is a striking proof of the correctness of the men who made the versions."

There are some further correlations of the geological with the historical evidence, which are deserving of notice. The modern shells on the south side of the height north of Ismailia, show a recent extension of the north end of the Red Sea on the south, while at the same time there is evidence that the whole northern side of the isthmus has been subsiding, and that districts formerly cultivable, are now under the waters of Lake Menzaleh. Nothing is more illustrative of this than the present state of the once beautiful district around Zoan. I am indebted for the following evidence of this to a paper by Miss Edwards, already quoted. She quotes the following passage from Mas'oudy, an Arab traveller and historian of the tenth century, with reference to Lake Menzaleh.

"The place occupied by the lake was formerly a district which had not its equal in Egypt for fine air, fertility, and wealth. Gardens, plantations of palms and other trees, vines, and cultivated fields met the eye in every direction. In short, there was not a province in Egypt, except the Fayoum, to be compared with it for beauty. This district was distant about one day's journey from the sea. . . . But in the year 251 of the era of Diocletian (A.D. 535) the waters of the sea flowed



in and submerged that part of the plain which now is called the Lake of Tennis; and every year the inundation increased, so that at last it covered the whole province. All the towns which were in the lowest levels were destroyed, and only those which were built on rising grounds remained unharmed. The total submersion of this part took place one hundred years before the conquest of Egypt.

“Thus,” adds Miss Edwards, “the whole face of the country was changed, and the rich flats across which the Great Colossus had been visible from afar off in the palmy days of Tanis, were again devoured by that same hungry sea from which nature had reclaimed them, inch by inch, in ages long past. As time went on, the towns thus islanded in an unhealthy lagoon languished, were deserted, and became the haunts of myriads of wild-fowl. Meanwhile, the vapours from this vast foul lake poisoned and blighted the vegetation of the surrounding country, which has been finally ruined by the canalization of the river, and the shutting off of the annual inundation. Now all is desolate—a province laid waste, a temple in ruins, a city in ashes; on the one hand, a wilderness of waters; on the other, a wilderness of desert. ‘The rest is silence.’”

This is perfectly natural. The delta has been built up by successive additions of mud derived from Egypt and interior Africa, as we have already seen; while no such depositions have been going on in the Red Sea basin. All such areas of great deposition tends to be areas of subsidence, so that while they gain by additions on their surface, they lose by settlement, sometimes gradual, sometimes suddenly started by earthquakes. In this way the high land of El Guisr has, in modern times, been the axis on which the isthmus has revolved, the south side rising, the north side sinking.

The history of the Wady Tumilat itself confirms this conclusion. The maps of the military engineers show conclusively

what a geological traveller can see for himself, that the Wady Tumilat once carried an important branch of the Nile to the Lake Timsah and the Red Sea. Silting up and elevation to the south had been diminishing this even before the time of Moses ; and we find at that very era Seti I. and Rameses II. re-establishing the communication by a canal. Still later, this work had to be done over again by Necho and later Egyptian kings, by Darius in Persian times, by the Ptolemies, and by Hadrian in the Roman time. All this testifies to the increasing difficulty of keeping up this communication, until at length the latest canal had to be carried all the way to Suez. It is not unlikely that this elevation is still in progress, or might recur spasmodically in case of earthquakes shaking the district ; and that the levels of the Suez Canal and the Sweetwater Canal may yet be disturbed by it.

In conclusion of this part of the subject, a word may be said of the names of the Red Sea. In the Bible, the sea crossed by the Israelities is the "Yam Suph," or sea of weeds. This name I would attribute to the abundance of the beautiful green waterweed (*Ceratophyllum demersum*), which now grows very plentifully at the mouth of the Sweetwater Canal, and was probably much more abundant when a branch of the Nile ran into the narrow extension of the Red Sea now forming the Bitter Lakes. The name Red Sea is of later origin, and seems to have been derived from the colour of the rocks bordering its upper part. The Eocene and cretaceous limestones assume by weathering a rich reddish-brown hue ; and under the evening sun the eastern range glows with a ruddy radiance, which in the morning is equally seen on the western cliffs, while these colours contrast with the clear greenish-blue of the sea itself. Such an appearance would naturally suggest to early voyagers the name "Red Sea."

The recent revelations of the Egyptian records give us the right to affirm in this connection that a remarkable preparatory

provision was made in the providence of God for the deliverance of His people by political and military events altogether beyond their control. The campaigns of Rameses II. in Western Asia, extended as they were all the way to the banks of the Orontes, must have greatly weakened the Hittites and other nations of Canaan, while at the same time they created depletion and discontent in Egypt itself. The few years of the reign of Menephtah were harassed with the invasions of the Delta; and though these were repelled, this must have been with much loss to the Egyptians, and the eastern fortresses which held the Israelites in subjection must have been depleted of their garrisons. Further, the death of Menephtah led to an unsettled period, and apparently to usurpation leading to those very short reigns, the last of which, that of Siptah, may have been cut short by the catastrophe at the Red Sea. In any case, it seems now certain that the anarchy which led to the rise of the twentieth dynasty was directly or indirectly a consequence of the Hebrew Exodus. All these circumstances must have conspired with the increasing severity of the oppression to facilitate the mission of Moses and Aaron.

In tracing the farther progress of the Israelites from Egypt to Sinai, I shall avail myself almost exclusively of the work of the Ordnance Survey, which leaves nothing to be desired so far as topography is concerned.

The party employed in this important work consisted of Captains C. W. Wilson and H. S. Palmer, R.E., under whose joint direction the survey was conducted, four non-commissioned officers of the Engineers, the late Mr. E. H. Palmer of St. John's College, Cambridge, as Linguist and Philologist, Mr. C. W. Wyatt as Naturalist, and the late Rev. F. W. Holland, who devoted special attention to the geology of the country. The objects of the expedition are stated in the introduction to the Report to have been to "bring the material appliances of the Ordnance Survey to bear on the questions at issue, by subject-

ing the rugged heights of the peninsula to the unreasoning though logical tests of the theodolite and land-chain, of altitude and azimuth compasses, of the photographic camera, and the unerring evidence of the pole-star and the sun." It was not hoped to obtain any actual monuments of the march of the Israelites, but to determine the sites referred to, and ascertain the correspondence or differences of the localities with the historical narrative, and to fix the limits of the native tribes mentioned. With reference to all these subjects there seems to have been entire agreement of the members of the party on essential points, and such complete coincidence of the actual features of the country with the requirements of the Mosaic narrative as to prove it to be a contemporary record of the events to which it relates, unless, indeed, we can believe one of the later narrators, supposed by some recent critics, to have had access to a survey as complete as that now in our possession.

Modern geographical exploration has gone over the ground traversed by ancient expeditions, or famous from wars and sieges, with various results as to the historical credibility of the narrators of these events. Bible history has often and in many places been subjected to this test, and has certainly been remarkably vindicated by the spade and the measuring-line. But perhaps no instance of this is more remarkable than that afforded by the magnificent report of the Ordnance Survey of Sinai, both because of the positive and clear character of its results, and of the antiquity and obscurity of the events to which it relates.

Some three thousand years ago, according to a history professedly written by contemporaries, the Hebrew people, migrating from Egypt, sojourned in this inhospitable region for forty years on their way to Palestine. No one in the intervening ages is known to have followed their precise route. Arab and Christian traditions have, it is true, ventured to fix the sites of

some of the leading events of the march. Travellers have passed hastily over portions of the ground, and have given to the world the impressions produced on their minds by crude observation without accurate measurements. The results arrived at were so various and discordant that any one of half a dozen theories might be held as to the actual route and its more important stations, and sceptics might be pardoned for supposing that the writer of the history knew less of the ground than many of the subsequent visitors. But now science intervenes with its special methods. A *corps* of trained surveyors, armed with all the appliances of their art, and prepared to make observations as to climate, geology, and natural history, enter the peninsula at the point where Moses is represented to have entered it, and prepare to follow in his footsteps. They first endeavour to settle approximately the crossing-place of the fugitives,<sup>1</sup> and inform us of the precise circumstances which must have attended that event, not omitting the strong east wind which still sometimes blows with terrific force down the gulf. They examine the Wells of Moses and test their water, and describe the structure of that remarkable *Shur*, or wall of rock, from which the locality derives its Bible name, and which barred the way of the Israelites towards the east and caused them to make a long *détour* to the south. They proceed southward from station to station and well to well, noting remarkable coincidences heretofore overlooked, with reference to the characteristics of the terrible wilderness of Sin, the various ways by which the table-land may be penetrated from the coast, the apparently devious course of the Israelites, and their "encampment by the sea." They show how the host must have turned abruptly to the east by Wady Feiran, and how this brought

<sup>1</sup> They had not the advantage of beginning their journey at the west end of Wady Tumilat, or of knowing the precise positions of Pithom and Succoth. Hence they are content to place the crossing at the present head of the Red Sea.

them into conflict with the Amalekites. They explain the tactics of the battle of Rephidim, with the effect of the victory in opening the way to a junction with Jethro and the Midianites, and to the great and well-watered plain of Er Rahah in front of Mount Sinai. They show how this plain and mountain fulfil all the conditions of the narrative of the giving of the Law, and explain the necessity for the miraculous supply of water before the fight with the Amalekites, and the supplies of water and pasture to which that battle gave access.

As we follow the laborious investigations of the surveying party, and note the number and complexity of the undesigned agreements between their observations and the narrative in Exodus and Numbers; as we study their account of the geology, productions, and antiquities of the country, trace its topography on their beautiful maps and photographs, and weigh their calculations as to the supplies of water, food, and pasturage at different stages of the journey, we feel that the venerable narrative of the Pentateuch must be the testimony of a veracious eye-witness, and all the learned theories as to a late authorship and different documents disappear like mist. The writer of Exodus and Numbers had no idea that after thirty centuries his veracity was to be subjected to the test of a scientific survey; but he has, nevertheless, so provided for this that even his obscurities, imperfect explanations, and omissions now tend to his vindication.

All this would be of extreme interest were the Exodus merely an old story, like the siege of Troy or the tragical history of Mycenæ. But it is much more than this, much more than even a national movement in assertion of the rights of the oppressed and of the sacredness of freedom. The Exodus was a new departure in the higher life of humanity. It was a great revival of Monotheistic religion at a time when it seemed likely to perish. It restored the hopes of a coming Saviour. It initiated a religious literature which reached back to the

Creation, and which culminated in the New Testament. The roots of all that is most valuable in religion to-day lie in the Exodus. Therefore, it is of the highest importance to know whether the history of this event, preserved to us in the Hebrew Scriptures, is accurate and trustworthy. If it is a myth or an historical novel, or even a well-meant compilation of traditions and documents by an editor living long after the event, we might feel that its authority in all respects was shaken. As it is, we may rejoice in the possession of at least one true and carefully written history, however we may regret that so many volumes of learned historical criticism have been reduced to waste paper. The authors of the report on the Sinai Survey make no pretensions to be either critics or expositors of the Bible, and they are prepared to state what they see, independently of the consequences to any one. Hence it is most instructive to observe how, as they unsparingly sweep away old traditions and the conjectures of travellers and historians, ancient and modern, the original record stands in all its integrity, like the great stones of some cromlech from which men have dug away the earth under which it has been buried.

To those who have placed reliance on such theories of the Pentateuch as those of Graf, Kalisch, Kuenen, or Wellhausen, the disclosures of the Survey of Sinai must come like a new revelation. Henceforth the only rational theory as to the composition of the historical parts of Exodus and Numbers, is that they are contemporary journals of the events to which they relate, and that they have not been subsequently revised or altered even to such an extent as to explain facts obscure to any one except a contemporary, or to remove seeming contradictions requiring knowledge of the ground for their solution. It is even startling to find that the apparent omissions, repetitions, and inconsistencies which have been ingeniously employed to sustain theories of a composite and late authorship become, when studied on the ground, the most convincing

proofs of contemporary authorship and the absence of any subsequent revision. Had these writings been subjected to any considerable revision between the date of the Exodus and that of the Ordnance Survey, they could scarcely have failed to present less of a photographic truthfulness than that which at present characterizes them. This must at least be the theory which will commend itself to every intelligent student of the report of the Sinai Survey; and it is to be observed that the facts of this report are final in a scientific point of view, and cannot be invalidated by any critical process, so that, in so far as the central books of the Pentateuch are concerned, the occupation of the disintegrating and destructive critics is absolutely gone, or can be valued only by those bookworms and pedants who are determined to shut their eyes against scientific evidence.

It is impossible even to summarize the facts of this elaborate survey without the reproduction of the maps, sections, and photographs which illustrate it. The following may however be selected as leading topics. (1) The correspondence of the recorded route of the Israelites with the topography and geology of the country; (2) The site of the battle of Rephidim, and the meeting of Moses and Jethro; (3) The Mountain of the Law, and the plain before it.

The members of the expedition select the vicinity of Suez as the place of the crossing of the Israelites in preference to the basin of the Bitter Lakes, as advocated above, and suggested by Mr. Poole and M. de Lesseps, and by the engineers of the Suez Canal, and in preference also to the wider part of the gulf farther down, as held traditionally by the Arabs, and supported by some of the older authorities. The practical difference will be, as compared with the view advocated above, that the three desert marches without water will, as already stated, intervene before the halt at the Wells of Moses, which our explorers take as the immediate starting-point after the passage of the sea.



The passage of the sea, with its terrific accompaniments of darkness, wind, and rain, almost paralleled according to the reports of the Survey by the wild north-easterly storms that sometimes, at the present day, rage at the head of the Gulf of Suez, must have deeply impressed the timid multitude; and the reaction to the tumultuous joy of deliverance is grandly expressed in that song of Miriam, which is the first song of victory in the Bible, and whose refrain is:—

“Sing ye to the Lord, for He hath triumphed gloriously,  
The horse and his rider hath He thrown into the sea.”

But the weary march of three days through the wilderness that followed, must have sorely tried the patience and endurance of the people, coming as it did in the reaction after a great excitement; and even the abundant water of Ayun Mousa must have tasted bitter and brackish after the sweet water of the Nile.

When at length, foot-sore and consumed with thirst, they reached the Springs of Moses, they may have drunk the water with avidity, but it soon palled on their taste, and the name *Marah*—“bitter,” expresses the sense of its inferiority to that of the beneficent stream of Egypt. The water in these wells is abundant, but more or less bitter and saline, varying in quality in different wells and at different seasons, the mineral matter present being apparently largely the carbonate of soda. The Israelites naturally murmured, and Moses was instructed to work a miracle for their relief. It is curious to observe that this sweetening of the water by throwing into it the branches of a tree is, from a chemical point of view, one of the most remarkable miracles on record, since soda is one of the last possible bases to be precipitated from water by any natural means. This miracle is, therefore, less explicable by natural causes than even the crossing of the Red Sea, or bringing water out of the rock. It is amusing to notice the

expedients by which learned and well-meaning writers seek to explain the sweetening of the waters by natural agencies. One informs us that branches thrown into saline water form nuclei for the deposition of the salts, apparently not knowing that this implies a saturated solution, and could never render it potable. Another gravely says that the Arabs at present know no means of sweetening the water. He might have added that the best chemist would be equally at fault. Neither the nature of the result nor the means employed are at present explicable. We only know that the effect was temporary, as the waters have returned to their original salinity, which is mitigated only by the removal of some saline matter by microscopic organisms, and by the dilution which takes place in the wet season, when the water is somewhat sweetened.<sup>1</sup>

From the Wells of Moses the Israelites, if they intended to go to Sinai, had but one course open to them, and this accompanied with many difficulties. Before them, and nearly parallel with the coast, runs the precipitous wall of rocks which

<sup>1</sup> With reference to other miraculous elements in the narrative of the Exodus, no scientific explanation can be given of the water issuing from the smitten rock or of the manna. With regard to the latter, though a saccharine manna is produced by a tamarisk (*T. mannifera*) and by the camel's thorn, both found in the peninsula of Sinai, the property of putrefaction when kept, ascribed by Moses to the manna, shows, as Johnston long ago noticed, that it was not a merely saccharine matter like the vegetable mannas, but contained nitrogenous material, which would also account for its nutritive quality, so that we know of no natural source whence it could have been derived. On the other hand, the supply of quails would merely require an unusual determination of the ordinary migration of those animals. The same remark applies to other miracles in which natural agencies are mentioned. It is to be observed, however, that no biblical miracle is necessarily a contravention of natural law, but only a determination of natural causes in ways beyond our control or comprehension; and that, just as is the case in the early history of Christianity, miracles are more abundant in the initial and critical periods of the great movement of Israel.

forms the edge of the great desert table-land in the centre of the peninsula, the Badiet et Tih, or Desert of the Wanderings. The escarpment of the Tih consists of nearly horizontal beds of limestone, of the Cretaceous and Eocene periods, or of the same geological age with the limestones of Palestine and Egypt, and which spreads over a great area in Arabia, resting on an older sandstone, equivalent to the Nubian sandstones of Egypt.

These are all marine formations, and they yield in most places a dry barren soil with many flints, of which there are great numbers in the limestones. From this rocky wall the district in which the Israelites had entered probably derives its Scriptural name of Wilderness of Shur, or of the wall.<sup>1</sup> The great escarpment thus designated not only presented an obstacle to the direct route to the eastward, but the desert above it was no doubt occupied by formidable bands of Amalekites. Hence we find the Israelites turning to the south, along the plain between the Shur and the sea.

“As the Israelites, leaving Ayun Musa, turned their faces southward, away from the land of their bondage and the scene of their great deliverance, they must have gazed on the same features which now strike the eye of the traveller on his way from Suez to Jebel Musa, for the general aspect of the desert can have altered little. On their left would be the long level range of Er Rahah, an unbroken wall except where the triple peak of Jebel Bisher breaks the monotony of the outline; in front, the terraced plain, several miles broad, sloping gently down to the bright blue sea, and beyond the sea to their right the picturesque line of cliffs, on one point of which the name of Ras Atakah (Mount of Deliverance) still lingers.”

A little farther on are Wady Gharandal and Wady Useit,

<sup>1</sup> I prefer this explanation on local grounds to that which considers the “wall” to be the artificial barrier erected by the Egyptian Kings.

one of which must be the Elim of Scripture, with its wells and seventy palms—how pathetic and eye-witness-like the counting of these trees by people who had only recently left Goshen with its abundant palm groves! but these were probably the only ones in a long stretch of desert journey. From Wady Gharandal two roads lead toward Sinai, one inland, the other near the coast, the second being the easier; and the writer of the Book of Numbers, no doubt aware of this double road, informs us that the way towards the shore was followed by the Israelites, and that after leaving Elim they encamped by the sea (Numbers xxxiii. 10).

This part of the journey, extending from the Wells of Moses about eighty miles to the southward, is through a desert country with no general verdure except a few herds and shrubs, sufficient to afford browsing to Arab flocks, and supplies of water at only a few places, including the Wells of Moses—Wady Useit and Wady Gharandal being the only places where it is good and plentiful. The country so far is sufficiently open to afford no serious impediments to men and animals, or even to carts.

Beyond the encampment by the sea the Israelites entered on a new and hard stage of their journey—the “Wilderness of Sin,” identified with the desert plain of El Marka, which is characterized by Captain Palmer as one of the most dismal spots in the whole peninsula. It is, he says, in great part, a “wretched, desolate expanse of flints and sand, nearly destitute of vegetation.”

Here the Israelites approached one of the mining districts and smelting works of the old Egyptians. In the plain of El Marka and in neighbouring wadys are still to be seen extensive heaps of slag; and copper ores as well as turquoise mines were worked in the sandstone east of the plain, as well as in the gneissic ridges beyond. It appears from the inscriptions discovered that these mines had been worked long before the

Exodus, and that they were probably abandoned at the time of the passage of the Israelites ; or if not, the slaves employed in them would fraternize with the mixed multitude which followed the camp. The name "Sin," applied to this wilderness, is derived by some Hebrew scholars from a root signifying "to be sharp," and from which it is conjectured that Sinai itself may come ; and that this may mean the sharp or peaked mountain. As to the plain, it may have been called Sin from its thorny bushes ; or, as these are common everywhere, perhaps, more likely, from its peculiar abundance of sharp flints, making it painful to the feet.

In this wilderness of Sin the Israelites, as was but too natural, seem to have reached an uncontrollable stage of discontent and murmuring, saying, "Would to God we had died in the land of Egypt." The following extract will show something of the reason of this, as appreciated by the officers of the Survey in passing over this plain.

"To journey over these low, scorching plains in the full glare of an Arabian sun, is something more than trying, even in the winter months. . . . From about nine to eleven in the morning of a bright day, when the sun's power is not yet tempered by a cooling sea breeze, travel is almost intolerable. Heat is everywhere present, seen as well as felt. The waters of the gulf, beautiful in colour, are mirror-like, almost motionless, only breaking upon the beach in a sluggish, quiet ripple. The sky, also beautifully blue, is clear and hot and without a cloud ; the soil of the desert is arid, baked, and glowing. The camel-men, usually talkative and noisily quarrelsome, grow pensive and silent, the camels grunt and sigh, yet toil along under their burdens in a resolute, plodding way. The Europeans of the party, half roasted, half suffocated, become languid and feverish, and wish themselves anywhere out of the exhausting heat and glare. Even the Bedouins, usually indifferent to the sun's rays, now draw their *thaubs*, or white linen tunics, over

their heads and shoulders, and tramp along under the lee of their camels, glad to avail themselves of the niggard scraps of shadow."

It is interesting to observe that the murmurings of the Israelites in this wilderness are not for water, which exists in springs along the inner margin of the plain, but for food; and it was here that the quails and the manna were first given to them.

From the wilderness of Sin the Israelites, in order to reach the Sinaitic Mountains, must have turned eastward, inland, by the valley now known as Wady Feiran; and they may either have entered directly the mouth of this valley, or crossed over by the Egyptian mining settlement of Magharah. The former is thought the more probable route, unless a portion of the less encumbered of the host may have separated and crossed over by the latter. To have gone farther south would have involved them in a still more formidable desert, with less practicable means of access to the objective point of their march.

Along the Wady Feiran, the host marched until it was arrested for a time by the Amalekite resistance at Rephidim.

The battle of Rephidim evidently arose from a mustering of the Amalekite and other Arab tribes to oppose the entrance of the Israelites into the heart of the peninsula, where their own towns and pasture lands were situated. The scouts of these people must have watched from the eastern ridges the progress of the Hebrews southward, uncertain perhaps of their ultimate intentions; but when they turned inland along the Wady Feiran, the main and most accessible route to the interior, their object must have been at once understood; and an immediate muster would take place of all the available force of the Amalekites to bar their further progress, while it appears that parties were also sent to cut off stragglers in the rear, or to make flank attacks from the lateral wadys, so as to impede their advance,—a mode of warfare suited to the character of the country, and referred to in Deuteronomy xxv.

18:—"How he met thee by the way, and smote the hindmost of thee, all the feeble behind thee, when thou wast faint and weary." This passage is thus perfectly connected with the account of the battle in Exodus.

The ground for the decisive contest was well chosen by the desert tribes, long accustomed to defend their country against the Egyptian armies; and it may be well to describe the scene of the battle somewhat in detail.

The lower part of the Wady Feiran is dry and desert; but its upper part, above the entrance of the lateral valley of Wady Aleyat, is comparatively well-watered and verdant, and was no doubt very valuable to the native tribes. At the commencement of this fertile portion there is a strong position flanked by hills, and affording good means of retreat in case of defeat. The defenders of such a position would also have the advantage of water and pasturage, while their assailants must march for three days through an arid waste. On the one hand, the Amalekites were here defending the frontier of the habitable country, under favourable circumstances; on the other, the Israelites, after the dreary march through the wilderness of Sin and the lower stretches of Feiran, would hope, when they reached the upper part of the valley, to enjoy comparative ease and plenty. How bitter, then, would be their disappointment, when, arriving faint and thirsty, they found the pass occupied by their enemies, ready to bar their entrance, and so situated that defeat or retreat would be equally fatal to the assailants. There was no way of flanking the position of the enemy. They must conquer, or return to perish in the thirsty desert through which they had been marching. Accordingly, the biblical narrative informs us that, on reaching this place, where they had no doubt expected to find rest and water, the Israelites "chode with Moses," and gave way to the utmost alarm and irritation. It was here that the rock was smitten to give water to the people; and surely there never was greater need of

a miraculous intervention. Refreshed and strengthened, a chosen band under Joshua attacked the position of the Amalekites, and after a protracted fight, extending throughout the day, and apparently after several repulses, succeeded in storming the position and putting them to flight. Moses watched the fight from a neighbouring hill, and prayed to God for the success of Israel; and when the battle was decided, he raised an altar to Jehovah, calling it Jehovah Nissi (The Lord my banner), and he is said to have written a memorial of it in "the book"—that book of records which we now have in Exodus and Numbers. The explorers identify a hill, Jebel et Tahûneh as the "Gibeah" on which Moses must have stood to witness the fight; and not far below the field of battle is one of those rocks which the Arab traditions indicate as the smitten rock from which the water flowed.

It is worthy of note that before reaching Rephidim the Israelites would have passed over the outcrop of the cretaceous limestone, and of the underlying sandstone, now known to be of carboniferous age, and would have entered on the much older gneiss and slate underlying the sandy and gravelly bed of the wady, and flanked on either hand by the high granitic or syenitic masses of Serbâl and Banât, the whole constituting a wild and alpine scenery altogether strange to the greater part of the people, and fitted to impress them with awe and terror. On the other hand, the walking is now good, and generally over a clean granitic gravel, the deeper colours of the old rocks are less glaring in the sunlight, and there are many high cliffs, giving the "shadow of a great rock in a weary land." The scenery of this first of the battles of the Lord's host is so vividly sketched by Palmer that it would be wrong not to quote a part of his description.

"The road now lies wholly among the older rocks whose sombre lines and varied outlines afford a pleasant change and relief to the eye after the glare and sameness of chalk, and the



somewhat over-rich colouring of the sandstone cliffs. The ranges, especially on the left, here take fanciful forms, and rise in long serrated ridges, now and then surmounted by graceful cones." (He then describes the banded appearance of the higher hills, caused by dark-red, purple, and olive-green dykes of dolomite and diorite traversing the dull brownish gneissic bedded rocks.) "From a point almost a mile farther on, the character of the route gradually changes, and the scenery increases in grandeur at every mile. We are now entering the intricate labyrinths of the Sinai mountains, approaching the huge clusters of which Mount Serbâl forms the crowning feature; the hills draw closely in on either hand, the wady becomes more and more winding the higher you advance, and its bed ere long contracts to but half or even less of its former width. High banks of alluvial deposits, cut through by the passage of torrents, guard the mouths of tributary valleys; chalk *débris* disappears and gives place to boulders of gneiss and granite; shade is now abundant, the air cool and bracing, and the spirits of the scorched traveller, half depressed it may be by the fatigue and exposure of his march, now rise to buoyancy and even to enthusiasm." Here occurs Hery el Khattatin, according to Bedouin tradition the scene of the miracle of water in Rephidim, where is a large block of fallen granite covered with pebbles, placed there by the Bedouins in commemoration of the event. In this neighbourhood are also many of the Sinaitic inscriptions, which, however, the explorers do not believe to be of great antiquity. Above this place the scenery of the pass becomes so wild and grand as almost to overwhelm the mind; here and there stupendous cliffs rise perpendicularly above the path, elsewhere the slopes are covered with immense slides of disintegrated rocks; and the devastating effects of winter torrents are plainly seen in the main valley and its tributary glens. The rocks, from the hill tops to the valley's level, are to all appear-

ance absolutely bare. At the mouth of Wady Umfûs the traveller halts to enjoy a glance of Jebel el Banàt, a towering ridge of red granite, of matchless depth of colour, and the yet more magnificent view of Jebel Serbâl, now near at hand. A mile farther on we came to the little oasis of El Hesweh—palms, water, and Bedouin dwellings—a bright spot of living green in the midst of stern desolation, and just where a wide rugged valley, Wady Aleyat, descending from the eastern slopes of Serbâl, comes in from the south-east, we get our first view of the great palm grove of Wady Feiran, a rich mass of dark green foliage winding through the hills.”

It was in front of this Eden of the Sinai desert that the Amalekites are supposed to have posted themselves; and we may imagine the discouragement of the people when they found the sword of the desert ranger excluding them from their paradise and threatening to drive them back into the wilderness, and the earnestness of Moses in his prayer that success might be granted to the arms of Joshua.

The battle of Rephidim opened to the Israelites a comparatively fertile and watered country leading to the great plain before Sinai. Further, it enabled them to open communication with the Midianites dwelling on the east side of the peninsula, on the Gulf of Akabah, and who were friendly to Moses and his people. Accordingly, we find that immediately after the battle, Jethro, the priest-chief, was able to meet Moses and to bring to him his wife and sons, who for safety had remained in Midian; and advice and guidance were obtained from the friendly Midianites.

The whole route traversed, with the localities of water, may be reviewed as follows:—

|                                      |           |                 |
|--------------------------------------|-----------|-----------------|
| Place of crossing to Ain Mousa . . . | 30 miles, | brackish water. |
| To Ain Ilawarah . . . . .            | 78        | „ saline water. |
| „ Wady Gharandal . . . . .           | 85        | „ water.        |

|   |           |                                  |
|---|-----------|----------------------------------|
| To Wady Useit . . . . .                         | 91 miles, | water.                           |
| „ Wady Shebakah . . . . .                       | 106 „     | some water by the way.           |
| „ Sufsafeh, the “Mount of the<br>Law” . . . . . | 188 „     | abundant water near<br>Sufsafeh. |

The actual position of Mount Sinai has been a subject of keen controversy, which may be reduced to two questions: 1st, Was Mount Sinai in the peninsula of that name, or elsewhere? 2nd, Which of the mountains of the peninsula was the Mount of the Law?

As to the first of these questions, the claims of the peninsula are supported by an overwhelming mass of tradition and of authority, ancient and modern; and though Dr. Beke has adduced very plausible reasons in favour of a position east of the Gulf of Akabah, our explorers show conclusive geographical evidence against this view. They think, however, that his suggestion that some portion of the forty years' wandering took place in the great Arabian desert, merits consideration, and that this extensive desert region deserves careful exploration in this connection.

If this question be considered as settled, then it remains to inquire which of the mountain summits of that group of hills in the southern end of the peninsula, which seem to be designated in the Bible by the general name of Horeb, should be regarded as the veritable “Mount of the Law.” Five of the mountain summits of the region have laid claim to this distinction; and their relative merits the explorers test by seven criteria which must be fulfilled by the actual mountain. These are: (1) A mountain overlooking a plain in which the millions of Israel could be assembled. (2) Space for the people to “remove and stand afar off” when the voice of the Lord was heard, and yet to hear that voice. (3) A well-defined peak distinctly visible from the plain. (4) A mountain so precipitous that the people might be said to “stand under

it" and to touch its base. (5) A mountain capable of being isolated by boundaries. (6) A mountain with springs and streams of water in its vicinity. (7) Pasturage to maintain the flocks of the people for a year.

By these criteria, the surveyors at once reject two of the mountains, *Jebel el Ejneh* and *Jebel Ummalawi*, as destitute of sufficient water and pasturage. *Jebel Katharina*, whose claims arise from a statement of *Josephus* that *Sinai* was the highest mountain of the district, which this peak actually is, with the exception of a neighbouring summit twenty-five feet higher, they reject because of the fact that it is not visible from any plain suitable for the encampment of the Israelites. *Mount Serbâl* has in modern times had some advocates; but the surveyors allege in opposition to these that they do not find, as has been stated, the *Sinaitic* inscriptions more plentiful there than elsewhere, that the traces of early Christian occupancy do not point to it any more than early tradition, and that it does not meet the topographical requirements in presenting a defined peak, convenient camping-ground, or a sufficient amount of pasturage.

There only remains the long-established and venerated *Jebel Musa*—the orthodox *Sinai*; and this, in a remarkable and conspicuous manner, fulfils the required conditions, and besides illustrates the narrative itself in unexpected ways. This mountain has, however, two dominant peaks, that of *Jebel Musa* proper, 7,363 feet in height, and that of *Ras Sufsafeh*, 6,937 feet high; and of these the explorers do not hesitate at once to prefer the latter. (See cut facing this chapter.) This peak or ridge is described as almost isolated, as descending precipitously to the great plain of the district, *Er Rahah*, which is capable of accommodating two millions of persons in full view of the peak, and has ample camping-ground for the whole host in its tributary valleys. Magnificent photographs of this plain and the mountain are given in the work which leave

no reason to doubt that it is just such a theatre of the giving of the Law as the most sanguine and vivid imagination would conceive. "From the time when the traveller enters the plain, the peak of Sufsafeh stands out sharp and clear against the sky," and he never loses sight of it for a moment till "he crosses the dry wady bed at its foot and gazes up at the tremendous cliffs in front of him, and which is sufficiently steep to be described as a mountain that may be touched." Further, it is so completely separated from the neighbouring mountains, that a short and quite intelligible description would define its limits, which could be easily marked out. Our illustration, reduced from one of the photographs of the Survey, is sufficient to show the character of the mass of granite, diorite, and gneiss constituting the mountain, and its strong contrast with the flat plain formed of recent deposits. This plain is itself at some elevation above the sea-level (nearly 5,000 feet), giving a comparatively temperate climate and mountain air, while the peak of Ras Sufsafeh rises abruptly from its upper part to an elevation of 6,937 feet.

Another remarkable feature is, that we have here the brook descending out of the mount referred to in Exodus, and besides this five other perennial streams in addition to many good springs. The country is by no means desert, but supplies much pasturage; and when irrigated and attended to, forms good gardens, and is indeed one of the best and most fertile spots of the whole peninsula. The explorers show that the statements of some hasty travellers who have given a different view are quite incorrect, and also that there is reason to believe that there was greater rainfall and more verdure in ancient times than at present in this part of the country. They further indicate the Wady Shreick, in which is the stream descending from the Mount, as the probable place of the making and destruction of the golden calf, and a hill known as Jebel Moneijeh, the Mount of Conference, as

the probable site of the tabernacle. They think it not improbable that while Ras Sufsafeh was the Mount of the Law, the retirement of Moses during his sojourn on the mount may have been behind this peak, in the recesses of Jebel Musa, which thus might properly bear his name.

Other interesting considerations are of a political and military nature. It was necessary for the Israelites to have a secure dwelling-place for some time, in order that their religious and social institutions might be fully organized before their march northward to Canaan. For this purpose the plain of Er Rahah and the region in its vicinity were admirably fitted. It is in the very heart of the peninsula, and approached only by passes easily defended, one of which the Israelites themselves had to force at Rephidim. It was too remote to be attacked by Egyptian expeditions, had these been sent against it, and the Amalekites, after their chastisement at Rephidim, were not likely to assault a place whose strength was so well known. It was on the borders of the territories of the friendly Midianites, with whom Moses had sojourned so long and was connected by marriage. It would thus give a secure abode, with supplies of water and pasture; and after the hardships already endured by the people, would appear to them a haven of comparative rest; while, on the other hand, it was sufficiently a wilderness to wean them from Egyptian habits and train them to the hardihood of a desert life.

In geological character the Sinai mountains, including the Mount of the Law, are of great antiquity and simple structure. They consist of a red syenitic granite associated with other ancient crystalline rocks, and on which rest mica schists and gneisses much older than the sandstone of the region, which is known to be of the age of our coal-formation rocks.

Thus the syenite of Sinai, though a rock of igneous origin, must have been cooled down in the far back Palæozoic age of geology. This effectually and for ever disposes of the theory

held by some interpreters of Exodus, that Sinai was a volcanic mountain, and that the terrific phenomena which accompanied the giving of the law were those of an eruption. It is to be observed also that "the thunders and lightnings and thick clouds" of the Mosaic narrative, rather resemble the appearances of an atmospheric disturbance than of a volcanic eruption.

Lastly, for the benefit of those who love to consider the purely human element in religion, Moses had sojourned in the region, and knew perfectly the way by which he was leading his people; a way which he had fully learned in his long exile. The place had been indicated to him by Divine revelation; but, independently of this, it is evidently one of those grand shrines of nature which man vainly tries to rival in his temples and cathedrals, and which strike awe into the human heart, and lead it to lofty thoughts and imaginings; and such a place must have had peculiar impressiveness to a people reared in the flats of the Egyptian delta, and who had just been stirred by the marvellous experiences and excitements of their flight from Egypt. It was thus one of the most fitting spots on earth to be the theatre of the revelation to man of a new and purer faith, unmixed with the figments of human invention, and leading to a worship of the one God, the Creator.

The expedition did not discover any certain indications of the sojourn of the Israelites. The Sinaitic inscriptions, so called, are now believed to be of less ancient date. There are, however, numerous Egyptian inscriptions indicating expeditions to work the mines of turquoise and copper, and dating as far back as the third or fourth dynasty, long before the time of the Exodus; and it is a curious coincidence that the latest king whose name has been recognised is that of Thothmes III., the last great king of the eighteenth dynasty, under which the Israelites flourished, and which was succeeded by that nine-

Ex.  
III. 1

teenth dynasty, under the early kings of which their captivity commenced.

The numerous round stone houses attributed to the Israelites by Arab tradition, are supposed by the explorers to have been the abodes of the Amalekites. They are built with thick walls of rough stone, and the roofs are made with overlapping slabs, and are said to be exactly similar to the ancient "bothans" or beehive houses of Scotland; and they are also similar, in so far as the overlapping stone arches and thick walls are concerned, to the peculiar houses of Peru and Central and Western America, as described by Squier and others. Some of them had been used as burial-places, and in these were found shell ornaments. There are also stone circles, like those in so many other countries, and which contain stone cists very similar to those found in ancient sepulchres in Europe. Those that were opened contained crumbling bones, with charcoal, shell beads, and flint weapons; and in one case, a bracelet of copper. All these are attributed to the Amalekites and other early races, and are to be carefully separated from the buildings and tombs of later dates, ruins of which abound in the peninsula.

That some of the more ancient sepulchral remains will yet be referred to the Israelites is not improbable; but it must be borne in mind that the region explored is only that of the three months' journey to Sinai, and of the encampment of about a year before the Mount. In this length of time little of a permanent character is likely to have been effected by the Hebrews; and if their dead were simply buried in the soil, no surface trace may remain of the graves of those who died. All the indications in Exodus are also at variance with the idea that the Israelites at this time either erected permanent buildings or commemorated their sojourn by durable monuments. The whole of the arrangements of Moses were based on the idea of a temporary sojourn and a preparation for a march into



Canaan; no mention is made of any inscription on stone except the tablets of the law; and the book in which Moses is said to have recorded the story of the fight at Rephidim (Exod. xvii. 14) was probably a roll of skin or papyrus.

The monuments of the children of Israel, if such exist in the peninsula of Sinai, are rather to be sought in those portions of it in which the longer sojourns of the forty years' wanderings occurred; and it is to be hoped that these may yet be subjected to scientific scrutiny similar to that already executed for the country between Suez and Sinai. As preliminary to this, a reconnoissance has been made by one of the party engaged in the Survey, Mr. E. H. Palmer; and the results have been given to the world in his interesting book—"The Desert of the Exodus."<sup>1</sup> He shows the hopeful character of the inquiry, by the suggestion that the numerous tombs at the Erweis el Eberig, the probable site of Kibroth Hattaavah—the "graves of those who lusted," may be those of the people who died in the plague at that place, after the second descent of quails. No excavations seem to have been made to test the truth of the suggestion, nor have detailed surveys been made of the regions extending from Sinai to Kadesh, and thence to the eastern border of ancient Edom, a region in which the long sojourn of forty years seems to have been passed—a sojourn which, as Mr. Palmer well remarks, is rather to be regarded as the residence of a numerous pastoral people in the country, than as a constant movement from place to place in a compact body.<sup>2</sup>

In the meantime the facts already stated, and still more the study of the maps and photographs of the Survey, cannot fail to impress us with the reality of this old Hebrew history. We have here no mere myth, illustrated by the fancies of enthusi-

<sup>1</sup> London, 1871.

<sup>2</sup> For some interesting facts on this and allied subjects, see Dr. Trumbull's "Kadesh-Barnea."

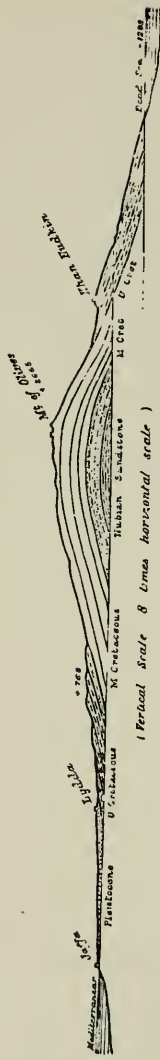
astic pilgrims ; but the itinerary of a hard and eventful march, through a country presenting the most marked physical features ; and this is now compared with the careful measurements and scientific observations of men who have traversed it, step by step, with as prosaic accuracy as if the object had been, not to follow the wanderings of an ancient people, but to work out a practicable line for a high-road or a railway. The result is unquestionably to show that the writer or writers of Exodus and Numbers<sup>1</sup> must have travelled through the region which is the scene of the history ; must have personally experienced the difficulties of the journey, and must have been better acquainted with the country than any other traveller whose works we possess, up to the date of the Ordnance Survey.

The Exodus of the Israelites is not a mere question of curious antiquarian research. In that journey they were representatives and examples for us and for all the ages of the world ; and their national migration was not only a grand protest against tyranny and injustice, but an important step in the development of God's plans for the salvation of our race. It is well, then, that this stirring and beautiful history is not a romance or even a legendary tale, but a true record which will bear the application of the severest tests of modern science.

<sup>1</sup> It seems not to occur to some critics of the Pentateuch (or Hexateuch as, with the Book of Joshua, it is now often called), that if Deuteronomy is a work of Moses, and Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers mainly the writing of successive scribes keeping records during the wanderings, this should be sufficient to account for differences of style. It is to be noted also that different modes of writing must have been in use in the Israelite camp. The most usual would probably be the Egyptian, as we have it in papyri of this period. But there may have been scribes who knew the Chaldean Script, then prevalent in Palestine, or the Hittite hieroglyphs, and Jethro and his people, and probably Moses himself, may have known the Minæan or old Phœnician alphabet. The journals of the way and the sections of the law may have been originally in more than one kind of writing, and subsequently transcribed into Hebrew.

## NOTE TO CHAP. VII.

Since revising this chapter I have seen Dr. Naville's interesting Address to the Victoria Institute (June, 1891), in which he discusses questions relating to the Route of the Exodus. His views harmonise in the main with those in the text, and he gives many additional facts in evidence, more especially in reference to the condition and circumstances of the Israelites, and the movements preparatory to the exodus. He still, however, holds that the most probable place of crossing the Red Sea was between Lake Timsah and the present Bitter Lakes. I have carefully considered his arguments in relation to this, in connection with the topography as I saw it, and must still hold it to be more probable that the place was somewhat farther south. The reasons which he gives against the continuation of the march of the Israelites through the pass between Jebel Shebret and the former extension of the Red Sea, are indeed precisely those which in my judgment would weigh with a leader like Moses in favour of that course. Dr. Naville's paper is, however, of great interest, and will go far toward a settlement of the question of the route of Israel, in the minds of those who are influenced by historical and philological arguments, but are less able to appreciate those derived from geology and topography.



SECTION FROM JAFFA TO THE DEAD SEA.  
(Topography from Palestine Survey.)



SECTION FROM BEYROUT TO ZAHLEH.  
(Partly from Diener.)

(a) Lower cretaceous limestone. (b) Lignitic and Trigonia sandstone (Cenomanian). (c) Lebanon sandstone (Senonian). (d) Upper cretaceous limestone with flints (Senonian). (e) Nummulitic (Eocene). (f) Pleistocene and modern.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### *PALESTINE, ITS STRUCTURE AND HISTORY.*

**P**ALESTINE, though pre-eminent among Bible lands, I have left to the last, because it may well be the summing up of these studies, and on surveying its varied natural features we shall have occasion to refer to most that has gone before, and shall end with the central point of Bible literature, Jerusalem, "the mother of us all," and the place of the Cross on which the world's salvation was achieved.

In Palestine, as in other countries, geological structure furnishes us with the best key to physical features and early history. A glance at the geological map of the eastern Mediterranean shows that the Syrian hills represent a longitudinal series of ridges crossing the great transverse Mediterranean depression referred to in Chapter II., and terminating it on the east. The visible material of these ridges is limestone, sandstone, and volcanic rocks, mostly belonging to the Cretaceous and Tertiary ages of geology, though there is good reason to assume a foundation of crystalline rocks below. We shall best perhaps understand this, and its relation to history, by tracing, in the same manner as we have done in Egypt, the series of processes by which this remarkable country came to be what it is, even though by so doing some appearance of repetition may be involved.

In the mountains of Sinai and in two narrow belts extending northward from them, along the sides of the Gulf of Akaba, and along the east side of the Arabah valley, nearly as far as

the south end of the Dead Sea, we have a mass of crystalline rocks belonging to the oldest formations known in the world. The older gneisses and granites of these hills are probably of the same date with the Laurentian of Canada and the similar rocks of Scandinavia and the western highlands of Scotland; and around these mantle schists and slates of scarcely more modern age, equivalents perhaps of the Huronian of Canada, or the Peibidian of Wales. These rocks culminate in the high mountains of Sinai, where they rise to an elevation of 8,500 feet above the sea-level, and constitute the nucleus and substratum of Syria, though appearing at the surface only in limited areas. They are, as explained in a previous chapter, connected below the surface with the long range of similar rocks which runs along the mountain ridge on the east of the Nile, and into the highlands of Abyssinia; the depression of the Gulf of Suez being apparently of great geological age, or at least much older than the valleys of the Jordan and the Nile. These rocks are, in short, part of the old crystalline foundations which underlie all the formations of our continents. In Palestine, as in Egypt, so far as known, a gap exists between these venerable rocks and those next in succession. The earliest picture that we can form of the palæo-geography of the country is in the Carboniferous age, the period of the great coal formation of Europe, when the older crystalline rocks of Arabia and Palestine formed islands, reefs, or shallows in the sea, around which were being deposited sand-banks and gravel-beds, and layers of limestone, holding a few fossil shells. These constitute the sandstone and limestone which border the northern base of the Sinai mountains, and form part of the table-lands of Edom and Moab.<sup>1</sup>

In the succeeding Mesozoic age the water became deeper, and beds holding Jurassic shells are found high up on Mount

<sup>1</sup> See Hull, "Report on Geology of Palestine."

Hermon,<sup>1</sup> but most of the deposits of this age seem to have been swept away or buried. Still later, in the Cretaceous or Chalk period, we have again shallow-water sandstones, the Nubian sandstone of Eastern Palestine; and then the whole of this area sunk down into that wide ocean which, in the Cretaceous age, covered all Western Asia, Southern and Western Europe, and Northern Africa. It was the age in which the great chalk beds of England and France were formed, and the thick limestones of the Lebanon and Judean hills. There were, however, some partial elevations in this age, in which the coaly beds of the Lebanon were produced; but the greater part of the area was under water and continued to be so in the early Tertiary, or Eocene. In the Miocene, or Middle Tertiary, a great change occurred. The cretaceous beds began to be bent into folds and heaved up above the waters, and then the distinction was instituted between the long range or the Judean and Lebanon hills, and the table-lands and mountains of Edom, Moab, and Hermon, with the Jordan valley and its extensions between. The latter was one of the most remarkable features of this elevation. It consists of a north-and-south fracture of the earth's crust, extending all the way from the Gulf of Akaba into Cœle-Syria, a distance of more than 350 miles. Along this great fault the crust fell in or subsided on the west side, so that as the hills of Western Palestine were gradually elevated on the one side as well as the table-lands and hills of Moab and Bashan, and Anti-Lebanon on the other, a great hollow was left, constituting the plain of Cœle-Syria<sup>2</sup> on the north, the valley of the Jordan

<sup>1</sup> I have not visited these exceptional Hermon deposits; but the fossils obtained from them, and of which numerous specimens exist in the Museum of the College at Beyrout, testify to their Jurassic age. They appear to occupy a very limited area, and, according to Fraas, are faulted against the cretaceous rocks; but their underground extension must be much greater than what this small exposure indicates.

<sup>2</sup> The modern *El Bekâa* or *Belkâa*, meaning "the valley," that is, the "Valley of Lebanon," as it is called in the Book of Joshua.

and of the Arabah, and that of the Gulf of Akaba farther south. The deepest part of this great depression is that of the basin of the Dead Sea, or more properly the "Salt Sea," which now lies 1,260 feet below the level of the Mediterranean, and rather more below the Gulf of Akaba (according to Hull, 1,290 feet). This great disturbance of level took place in the Middle Tertiary period, and from that time the general relief of Palestine has been similar to what it is at present, though with some great changes of level.

Thus, if we go back to the old Laurentian period, in which the foundations of the dry land were being laid, we find a succession of sea deposits, carboniferous and cretaceous, laid down upon these; and that in Cretaceous and Eocene times, Palestine was, with possibly the exception of a few points in the extreme south and north, a part of a vast oceanic area. But as Tertiary time went on, it was elevated along great lines of north-and-south ridging and fracture, till it assumed somewhat its present form.

The remaining deposits in the country are of later date than this great elevation and subsidence. In the Pleistocene or latest Tertiary age there was a lowering of the continents of the northern hemisphere, contemporaneous with the later part of the Glacial age in the north. In this Palestine participated, and, so far as we can judge from the deposits on its lower grounds, went down nearly 300 feet below its present level. At this time Africa was an island, the Isthmus of Suez being submerged, all the low country along the Palestine coast was under water, the Gulf of Akaba extended far north into the Arabah valley, and the Dead Sea stretched a long way to the south and north of its present limits, being nearly 200 miles in length. All this is proved by the extension of the Dead Sea deposits along the Jordan valley, north of the Lake of Gennesaret, and by the beds with recent shells that line the Mediterranean coast, and that of the Red Sea. The climate



at this time must have been much more cool and equable than at present ; and it is probable that many northern forms of animals and plants extended their range into Palestine, while permanent snow, and glaciers, rested on Lebanon and Hermon. (See map, p. 217.)

The next change that took place at the close of the Pleistocene reversed all this, and introduced that Second Continental period referred to in a previous chapter, in which the land of Palestine extended far into the Mediterranean, so that Cyprus was a part of the mainland ; and what had been the Bay of Lower Egypt, and is now the Delta, became a desert, with the Nile running eastward into a lake on the site of the present isthmus, while the gulfs of Suez and Akaba were greatly reduced in dimensions, and the Dead Sea shrunk to its present size, or perhaps became still smaller. This must have been a time of much heat and aridity in summer, with perhaps colder winters than now. In this age the plains along the Mediterranean were the haunts of the mammoth, rhinoceros, and bison ; and it was in this age, as we have already seen, that man made his way into Lebanon, and probably also into Southern Palestine. This was also the period of the closest land connection of Africa with Asia, and the time when African animals and plants of the Nile valley could pass most freely into Syria. On the other hand, it separated finally the marine animals of the Mediterranean from those of the Red Sea and Indian Ocean, so that, as already mentioned in the chapter on Egypt, at the present day we find an almost entire difference of marine fauna on the two sides of the isthmus. It is not necessary, however, to suppose, as some have done, that the animals have changed into different species since they were thus separated. We know on other evidence, for instance from the identity of the marine shells of the raised beaches of the pleistocene with those in the present sea, that they have not. All that is needed is, that the animals of the Red

Sea area, which may have extended through to the Mediterranean, ceased to find suitable conditions of existence there after this separation, and those of the Mediterranean in like manner disappeared out of the warmer waters of the Red Sea. Some of these are finding an opportunity to try the experiment over again by means of the Suez Canal, but we may be sure that few will succeed. This continental period was interrupted by the historical Deluge, which probably submerged, but for a short time, the whole of Palestine, and from which it rose with the diminished area of its present coast-line. We have seen in the last chapter how the same series of events affected Egypt. (See also map at p. 15.)

While these changes were going on, volcanic phenomena manifested themselves in Palestine, especially along the eastern side of the great Jordan valley fault, and produced the extensive basaltic formation and volcanic hills around Damascus and in the country of Bashan, the modern Hauran and Jaulan, and smaller patches in the hills of Moab. (See map, p. 325.) That these volcanic outbursts began in the Middle Tertiary age, we learn from their products resting on all the other formations of the country. These volcanoes have, however, been extinct in the historical period, so that we are limited to the Pliocene, Pleistocene and Post Glacial for their latest time of activity. Since, however, the basalts have been shown to be of different dates, these eruptions may have continued over a long time, especially to the southward, and it is even possible may have extended to the human period, and that antediluvian man saw the volcanoes of Bashan and Moab in action.<sup>1</sup> Hot springs are the present residual indications that the fires below are not yet quite extinct. We should notice here the important fact that in the course of these elevations and depressions, from the Miocene to the modern, the Cretaceous and

<sup>1</sup> Recent observations of Notling would indicate that some of the lava streams of Moab may be of early modern date.

Eocene limestones were being acted on by the waves, forming cliffs and terraces and inland sea beaches, and that they have also been eroded into ravines and valleys by the rivers and smaller streams. The latter action may have been much more powerful, both at those times when the climate was more moist, and at those in which the land was more elevated than it is now. Much of the erosion of Palestine no doubt occurred in the Pliocene period, and when the levels of the country were very different from those at present. This consideration, as we shall find, answers some puzzling questions which have been raised as to the erosion of the valleys opening into the Jordan valley and Dead Sea.

The best method for a geological traveller with limited time, who wishes to acquaint himself with the structure of a country like Palestine, is to traverse it at right angles to the general course of its formations. My own plan, with this in view, was to make two cross sections along lines of special interest and easily traversed; and those which I selected were that from Jaffa to the Dead Sea on the south, and that from Beyrout across the Lebanon on the north. What I saw on these sections I shall endeavour to state, with the aid of the representations of them at the beginning of this chapter and the geological maps, and thus to place the present condition of the country in connection with the sketch of its geological history already given.<sup>1</sup>

At Jaffa we have recent shelly sandstones and conglomerates with the species now found in the Mediterranean, and these are represented farther inland by gravels at such a height as to show that in the modern or Pleistocene period the coast has been depressed to that extent, or to the depth of at least two hundred and fifty feet below the sea. These beds are of the

<sup>1</sup> For further details the reader may consult Fraas, "Aus dem Orient"; Lartet, "Palestine"; Hull, "Report on Palestine"; Diener, "Lebanon."

same age with those which underlie the delta and alluvial plain of Egypt on the south, and extend northward with varying breadth at least as far as Beyrout.

Under and projecting through these, in the hill on which Jaffa stands, are somewhat older sandstones and clays. I was informed that a boring near Jaffa had passed through fifty-three metres of the sandstone, and entered clay said to contain a species of *Cardium* and other shells, which, however, I did not see. Hull has named this sandstone the "Philistian Sandstone." He had opportunities of studying it farther south, and thinks it may be as old as the Eocene. Its general relations would, however, I think, render probable a more recent date, possibly Miocene. These formations underlie all the plain of Sharon and Philistia, and extend thence into Lower Egypt, that is, if they are synchronous with the Miocene and Isthmian beds which there occupy a similar position.

From the higher parts of Jaffa one may obtain a good idea of the physical characters of the maritime plain of Southern Palestine. Along the shore stretch banks and dunes of yellow sand, contrasting strongly with the deep blue of the sea, and shading off on the east into the verdure of the plain. Near Jaffa this is covered with orange orchards, laden in February with golden fruit of immense size, and which forms one of the most important exports of the place. To the south the plain spreads into the fertile flats of ancient Philistia, interspersed in the distance with patches of sand, the advanced guards of the great Arabian desert. To the north it constitutes the plain of Sharon, celebrated in Hebrew song, and extends for fifty miles to where Mount Carmel projects its high rocky front into the sea. On the inland side, the plain is bounded first by the rolling foot-hills of the Judean range, the Shephelah or low country of the Old Testament, and then by the hill country proper, which, clothed in blue and purple, forms a continuous range, limiting the view eastward from Jaffa.

The Tertiary beds form an undulating plain often of great fertility. It is twenty-five miles wide near the frontier of Egypt, twelve to fifteen opposite Jaffa, and runs off to a point at Carmel. Its southern part was the headquarters of the Philistines, whose frequent wars with the Israelites of the inland hills occupy so large a portion of the Bible history. Along this plain was the great highway from Egypt to the north, traversed alternately by the armies of Egypt and Assyria, which naturally avoided the rugged and impracticable Judean hills. The maritime plain was also a granary for these invading armies, and it still produces much wheat and barley, though large portions of it are neglected and untilled, and the culture carried on is by means of implements as simple and primitive as they could have been in the days of Abraham. In February we found it gay with the beautiful crimson anemone (*A. coronaria*) which must at all times have attracted the attention of travellers over this plain, and may well have been the poetical "Rose of Sharon," while a little yellowish-white iris, of more modest appearance, growing along with it,<sup>1</sup> represents the "lily of the valley" associated with it in Solomon's Song.

As we approach on this section the Judean hills, and enter the foot-hills or Shephelah, we find limestones dipping to the west, and so presenting low ridges not more than about five hundred feet in height, with gentle slopes to the westward, and more abrupt escarpments to the east. These are Upper Cretaceous, with probably patches of Eocene here and there. Some beds are said to contain fossil fishes similar to those of the Upper Cretaceous of Lebanon. Many beds of this kind have been named cretaceo-nummulitic, and represented as holding both Cretaceous and Eocene fossils; but, so far as my observation goes, I have reason to believe that though there is no abrupt break between the Cretaceous and Eocene

<sup>1</sup> I suppose *Iris Caucasica*.

in this region, there is no very gradual passage, and that the Eocene beds occur in patches left by denudation in hollows of the cretaceous beds, or perhaps let down into them by small faults. Further, the Eocene, as a whole, is much less developed in Palestine than in Egypt, while the Cretaceous attains to a greater thickness in the former.

Passing the Shephelah country, we next enter the rugged Judean hills, consisting of limestone of various degrees of hardness, with general westerly dips, and holding characteristic Middle Cretaceous fossils (*Nerinea*, *Ammonites*, *Ostrea*, *Radio-lites*, etc.). These beds occupy the hills all the way to Jerusalem with moderate dips, or nearly flat; but cut by aqueous erosion into rugged terraced hills, in which the harder beds project, forming abrupt wall-like cliffs.

Our section here crosses the great interior ridge of Palestine, extending all the way from the plateau of the Tih, in Arabia, to the Lebanon mountains, where it culminates in ridges 10,000 feet in height,<sup>1</sup> with only a slight interruption in the Esdraelon plain, north of Carmel.

At Jerusalem we reach the summit of the broad anticlinal of the Judean hills, and the beds begin to turn over to the east. Between Jerusalem and Jericho the dips are to the eastward, though somewhat rolling and irregular, and the order is in the main ascending. Succeeding the limestones of Jerusalem we have others with flinty bands, often projecting from the weathered hill-sides, then red, white, and green marls and limestones, with veins or patches of gypsum; then black and grey bituminous beds with scales of fishes, then soft chalky limestones with *Baculites* and other fossils (Fig. 30), and finally harder limestones, which form the cliffs in the Wady Kelt and on the shores of the Dead Sea. Tristram and Hull represent a dyke of felspathic rock as occurring near Khan el

<sup>1</sup> Jebel Mukhmel is said to be the highest Lebanon peak, and about 10,200 feet high.

Ahmar, the reputed hotel of the Good Samaritan, on the Jericho road. This I did not see, but observed some altered ferruginous limestone, which may well have been in the vicinity of a dyke, and in which there were evidences of the exhalation of acid fumes in the presence of patches of impure gypsum. It has been stated that nummulitic limestones exist

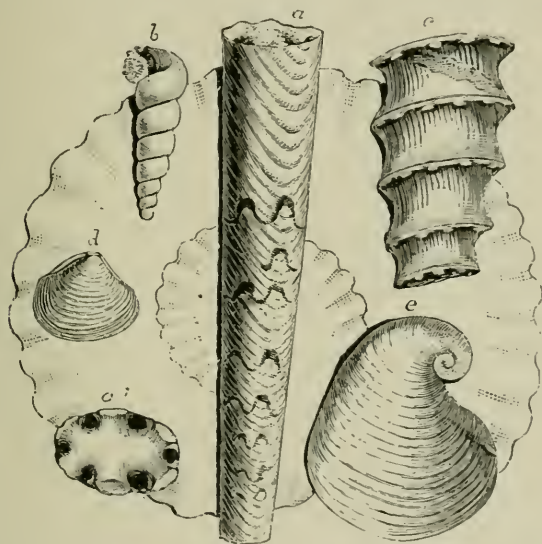


FIG. 30.—CRETACEOUS FOSSILS FROM JUDEA.—(a) *Baculites anceps*, Link; (a<sup>1</sup>) Cross Section; (b) *Turritella Adullam*, Fraas; (c) *Nerinea Mammilla*, Fraas; (d) *Crassatella Rothii*, Fr.; (e) *Ostraea Mermeti*, Coq. Outline of *Ammonites Mantelli*, Sowerby, as background.

on the eastern side of the Judean hills, but I did not observe any of these fossils.

The Jordan valley, at the head of the Dead Sea, is occupied by the modern marls and other deposits of the lake when higher than at present, and these constitute steep banks on the sides of the river, and rise in places to heights of six

hundred and seven hundred feet on the hills. They are often fantastically cut by the weather, owing to the unequal hardness of the beds of marl and imperfect limestones. (Fig. 32, p. 339.)

On the east of the Dead Sea rise cliffs of red, brown, and grey sandstone, the Lower Cretaceous Nubian sandstone, brought up here by the enormous fault previously mentioned, displacing the beds nearly 5,000 feet vertically; and on this, at a high level, rests the continuation of the Cretaceous limestones similar to those of the hills of Judea, and in a few places overflowed by basalts of Pliocene and Pleistocene age. (See section, p. 340.)

All this may be seen more or less distinctly in the section facing the beginning of this chapter.

Let it be observed, before leaving this section, that all the features it exhibits extend lengthwise throughout the country from Arabia to Lebanon. The Judean hills are the southward extension of Lebanon, and flatten out into the elevated tableland of Northern Arabia. The valley of the Dead Sea extends all the way up the Jordan and down to the Gulf of Akaba; and the Moab hills run north through Bashan to Hermon, and south through the mountains of Edom. Thus the section gives in a general way the structure of the whole land. We may, however, illustrate this by comparison with the section from Beyrout to Damascus. (See section facing this chapter and maps.)

Beyrout, the ancient Berytus, is charmingly situated on the Mediterranean shore, on a projecting point forming the south side of the beautiful sweep of St. George's Bay, in full sight of the massive pile of Lebanon— in March, while we were there, white with snow, while all was semi-tropical summer in the gardens of the town. The site is a crag of upper cretaceous limestone, with flinty concretions,<sup>1</sup> separated from the base of

<sup>1</sup> Upper Cretaceous, or Senonian.



the hills by a plain a few miles in width, and which, in the time of Pleistocene subsidence, must have been an island. It was selected by the Phenicians as a defensible maritime post,

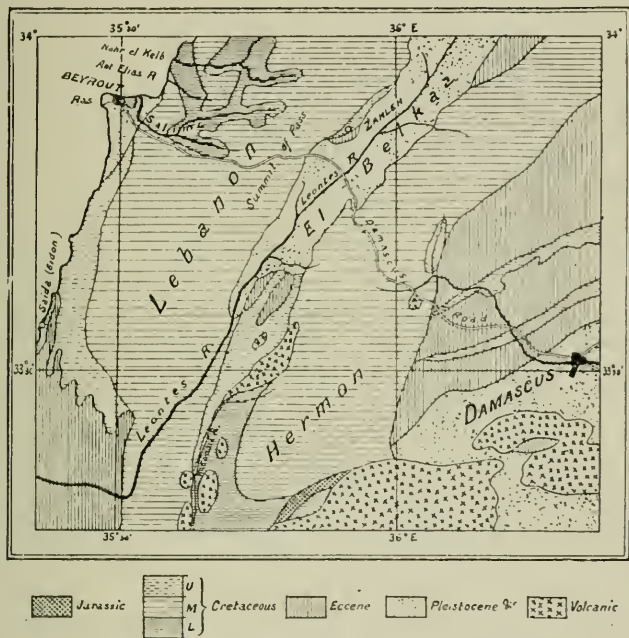


FIG. 31.—GEOLOGICAL MAP OF NORTHERN SYRIA.  
(In part after Diener.)

This map shows the structure of the country between Beyrouth and Damascus, with the relation of this structure to Lebanon, Hermon, the Bekáa, and the sources of the Leontes and Hasbani; also the position of the little Jurassic outcrop on Hermon, and part of the great volcanic district south of Damascus, as well as the disposition of the Eocene and the different members of the Cretaceous.

affording shelter for ships, and a practicable pass whereby to reach the great Cœle-Syrian plain and the fertile oases of

Damascus. The wisdom of their choice is vindicated by the persistent prosperity of the place. Everywhere, however, along this coast, we find the position of the principal Phœnician cities admirably selected for purposes of commerce and defence. Beyrout is, at this moment, the principal seat, not only of trade, but of the educational work carried on in Syria; and the American college under the presidency of Dr. Bliss, and with an able staff of professors, is an institution of priceless value to the young men of the whole eastern coast of the Mediterranean.

The cretaceous rocks around Beyrout are carved by the waves into fantastic cliffs and grottoes, and are backed by recent beds of a brown calcareous sandstone quarried for building purposes, but holding remains of marine animals still common on the coast. It is a Pleistocene deposit, similar to the recent beds found at Jaffa. Here there is a still higher bed of red sand without fossils, and derived apparently from the waste of a band of sandy rocks in the Lebanon. It is in the main newer than the grey beds, but in one place is seen to be interstratified with these, so that it really belongs to the same formation. Above the red beds lies modern drift sand, blown inward by the wind; and in and under this are the flint knives and arrows of the primitive dwellers on this coast, referred to in a previous chapter. These beds are here at an elevation of two hundred and fifty feet above the sea. They often show the diagonal bedding characteristic of such deposits. Inland on the Damascus road, at a place called the Bishop's Garden (*Lokandel el Mitram*), these beds are represented by conglomerate in two beds. The upper is red and has pebbles of dark red sandstone, with fragments of fossil plants. The lower, of a dark grey colour, has chiefly limestone pebbles and others of a trappean rock, which I did not see in place. These are evidently a littoral modification of the Pleistocene beds of the plain. At Ladekieh, off this

line of section, Dr. Post has described shell-beds at a level of two hundred and fifty feet above the sea.<sup>1</sup>

Passing eastward, we enter on the base of the mountains, which consist of grey limestones similar to those of the coast, but probably a little older, and associated with a ferruginous dolomitic limestone.<sup>2</sup>

Succeeding these, we reach the lignitiferous zone, or *Trigonia* sandstone of the Lebanon, which, farther south, includes veritable beds of coal or lignite. Here this zone consists of red sandstones with grey and reddish marls and clays holding carbonized fragments of wood, apparently coniferous, and a few remains of cones. In some beds there are numbers of small oysters (*O. alicula*, Hamlin);<sup>3</sup> and near these beds is a limestone holding *Gryphea*. Other beds have shells of the genus *Trigonia*. The dip seems to the south-westward, so that the series is a descending one, exactly as on the western side of the Judean hills, where, however, the lignitiferous zone has not yet been recognised. It is to be noticed, however, that in the Lebanon, as seen in the section, this belt is not only thick, but bent over and faulted in such a manner as to occupy a wide space. This zone is not to be confounded with the Nubian sandstone of the south, being at a somewhat higher horizon in the Cretaceous system. The beds of soft red sandstone and marl are probably the source of the red sand of the coast. The grey sandstone of the coast is a result of slow accumulation of water-borne sand and shells. The red sand is the result of a more rapid deposit of red detritus from the inland hills.

Eastward of this zone, in the valley of the river Salima, we find a lower and massive limestone, resembling that of the

<sup>1</sup> *Nature*, vol. xxx.

<sup>2</sup> The upper part, or Hippurite limestone, is regarded as Turonian, the lower part with *Ceratites*, etc., as Cenomanian.

<sup>3</sup> Probably the same with *O. succini*, of Fraas.

Judean Hills. These beds are said to contain the celebrated "Dead Sea olives," the spines of a fossil sea urchin, *Cidaris glandarius*; but I had no opportunity of collecting these fossils. Ascending beyond the valley, the Trigonia zone is repeated, but with more limestone beds and a great variety of marine fossils, as if the old Cretaceous land had lain at the west, and the deeper sea where the highest mountains now are; and as these beds lie flat at the summit of the pass, we return to the overlying Upper Cenomanian limestone. (See section.) My aneroid made the summit of the pass 5,300 feet above the sea; but the surrounding hills rose to a height of more than 6,000 feet, and were composed of perfectly flat limestone, often forming mural cliffs. At the time of my visit, however (March 7th to 10th), the snow lay deep on the upper parts of the mountain, and flurries of fresh snow were falling, so that the circumstances were not very favourable for studying the beds at the summit. Evidently, however, the mountain top is composed of flat beds of the upper limestone, just as in many places in Judea. Though less picturesque than peaks, these massive flat-topped hills, looking like gigantic ruined walls, have a very grand effect; and in winter, rising darkly out of the snow, or with the sun reddening their bald sides, they have a magnificence peculiarly their own.

So far, the Lebanon range is a great anticlinal like that of Judea, but on a grander scale; and from the summit the upper limestones dip generally to the eastward, and the rocks appear to be let down by north-and-south faults till they reach the level of the great Cœle-Syrian plain (El Bekáa), which, as seen from the summit of the Lebanon pass, looks like a vast flat, dotted here and there with groves of trees, and bounded by the distant range of Anti-Libanus, presenting first, a series of rounded foot-hills, and beyond, the great snow-clad ridge of Hermon. This corresponds to the Moabite hills farther to the south. It has, however, a new feature in the appearance in

one part of Hermon of beds of Jurassic age. (See map, p. 325.)

The plain here is the elevated continuation northward of the Jordan valley, but is in some parts 3,000 feet above the level of the sea. It is covered with modern deposits, including much superficial gravel, which shows that, high though this plain is, it has been submerged in the modern or Pleistocene period. At Zahleh, where we spent a pleasant evening as the guests of the late lamented Mr. Dale,—a noble example of a true Christian missionary,—and his amiable wife, we saw gravels resting on the flank of the limestone; and there are also at this place limited beds of Nummulitic limestone, of Eocene age,<sup>1</sup> so that we have here evidence that the Eocene, and probably the Miocene, sea covered this great and now elevated plain. The general section at the beginning of the chapter presents the succession above referred to, and may be compared with that from Jaffa to the Jordan.

We may now inquire as to the relation of the geological structure above described to antediluvian and post-diluvian man. We have already seen that the hunting tribes of the Second Continental period had found their way to the caves of Lebanon; and there is no reason why they may not also have colonized Palestine and North Africa, seeing that they were adventurous enough to extend their migrations to the West of Europe.<sup>2</sup> If their original home was in the Euphratean region, they would probably not tempt the dangers of the Syrian and Arabian deserts, but would make their way up the

<sup>1</sup> Farther to the east and north, in the range of Anti-Lebanon, and north of Damascus, the Eocene beds attain to a great development, according to Diener, constituting the formation which he names the Desert Limestone.

<sup>2</sup> Collequon has recently shown (*Matériaux pour l'histoire*, etc., for May), that Tunis was an early abode of palæocosmic man, who may have crossed to Africa by the Sicilian and Maltese isthmus referred to in Chapter II.

Euphrates, and thence westward to Damascus and the Lebanon, and down along the Syrian coast. They would find a belt of plain, probably well wooded, and with many edible fruits and numerous streams, and abounding in wild animals, including the hippopotamus, rhinoceros, and crocodile, along the coast, and the inland hills covered with dense forests, and abounding in smaller game, and also in excellent flints for implements. If they penetrated over the hills to the deep ghor of the Jordan and the Dead Sea, they would find an exuberant semi-tropical vegetation, including vast groves of date-palms, and a fauna akin to that of interior Africa. That a region so rich in the bounties of nature should have remained unoccupied in antediluvian times, when even the comparatively bleak coasts of Britain, France, and Spain were visited and settled, seems almost impossible. On the contrary, we may suppose that in the antediluvian centuries, Palestine may have been a well-peopled country. It is to be observed, however, that the population would be most dense in the low grounds now under the sea, and in the plains more or less covered with modern deposits; while, if there were cave men in the mountains, they would represent ruder tribes. Though flint implements are found on the surface in many parts of Palestine, I am not aware of the discovery of any undoubted remains of palæocosmic men farther south than the Phœnician coast. There are in the hills of Palestine, as is well known, abundance of caverns and rock shelters; but nearly all of these have been in use, and their deposits disturbed in more modern times. Still, I have no doubt that digging in the Palestinian caves will yet disclose remains of the old hunters of the rhinoceros, similar to those which have been found in the Lebanon.

Another curious question is connected with this. It has been suggested by Lenormant and others, that those ancient and apparently pre-Canaanite populations, the Anakim, etc., referred to by Moses, but without any intimation of their de-

scent, may have been remnants of the antediluvians. This idea belongs to hypotheses which have been long agitated, to the effect—First, that certain races, as the Turanians and the Negroes, may not belong to the race of Adam, but may be pre-Adamite peoples ;<sup>1</sup> and secondly, that the Deluge may not have effected an universal destruction of man ; but that beyond the ken of the survivors of the Deluge, who have recorded their experiences, there may have been isolated hill tribes which escaped the catastrophe, and afterwards came into contact with the neocosmic men in their migrations. In proof of this it is stated that certain races, for example the African negroes, have no traditions of the Deluge. In the case of these negroes, however, their linguistic and physical characters so blend into those of the Nubians and Egyptians, that their identity of origin seems indisputable.<sup>2</sup> As to the prehistoric men of Palestine, the question at present is insoluble. These populations may have been merely the descendants of early and obscure tribes, moving in advance of the more important migrations of men, and whose settlements had not been recorded in any written history. If any undoubted remains—say interments or caves of residence of these people—could be discovered, it might be possible to refer them either to the antediluvian or post-diluvian races, and so to settle this long-disputed question. It is much to be desired that a thorough exploration should be made of the floors of Palestinian caves. Old deposits in these may in many cases have been left undisturbed by their later occupants.

After the Deluge, the Bible history leaves no doubt that men almost at once made their way westward to Palestine and beyond its limits, guided perhaps by the tradition of the value of these lands in antediluvian times. Independently of the

<sup>1</sup> Winchell, "Pre-Adamites."

<sup>2</sup> Latham. Virchow, however, seems to doubt this in the case of the Negroes proper ; but his judgment is based on physical characters alone.

Ant Elias people, already referred to, who may, however, have been, as already hinted, merely unrecorded early adventurers moving in front of the general migration, the earliest inhabitants were the Canaanites, including the Phenicians and Hittites; and these populations seem to have been closely connected with, and in some sense subject to, the original centres of humanity on the east of the Syrian desert. This is a fair inference from the remarkable military expedition recorded in Genesis xiv., and in which kings from the Euphratean valley sought to re-conquer former but rebellious vassals in Palestine.

A careful study of the life of Abraham, as recorded in Genesis, shows, what we also learn from the Egyptian monuments, that before his time the Canaanites and Philistines had established themselves throughout the country, had built cities, and had become segregated into distinct communities, which seem, however, to have been merely small tribes, each centring itself around a fortified town, and sometimes forming confederacies for defence. The social and political condition of these communities was in fact very similar to that of the village Indians of North America, like the Iroquois and Hurons, except that they were more advanced in literature and in some of the arts. This was indeed, to some extent, their condition up to the time of Joshua, and after the great communities of Egypt and Assyria, as well as the Hittite empire in the North, had aggregated themselves into nations. The physical features of Palestine lent themselves to this state of things. The maritime plain, the rocky hills, and the rich and warm Jordan valley and the wild hill country east of this, presented features so dissimilar, and even climates so different, that the pursuits and habits of their peoples were necessarily unlike; and the difficulties of movement of large bodies of men, and the facilities for defence, gave opportunity to isolation. On the other hand, the position of Palestine relatively to the Asiatic and



African countries nearest to it made it a meeting-place of various races of people, nomadic and agricultural, and having little affinity with one another. This disintegrating influence of the nature of the country and its relations to other regions, made itself strongly felt, even in the time of the Hebrew monarchy. On the other hand, the plains of Egypt and of Mesopotamia, and the great plain of Cœle-Syria, afforded facilities for the aggregation of men into powerful nations.

When, therefore, we consider the low level and maritime character of the plains of Esdraelon, Sharon, and Philistia, the rugged terraced rocky hills of Judea and Samaria, rising to heights of more than three thousand feet, the rich warm plain of the Jordan, and the breezy pastoral heights of Bashan, we need not wonder that the people of the different parts of the country differed very much in their industries, and in their requirements for clothing and shelter, or that Palestine is, more perhaps than any other district of equal size, a region rich in varied species of animals and plants; possessing, in fact, a fauna and flora which epitomize those of Europe, Asia, and Africa. Such characteristics have undoubtedly fitted it for producing a literature and a race the most cosmopolitan in the world.

A curious illustration of this is furnished by the classification of the cities of Judah in the book of Joshua, as defined by the work of the Palestine Survey.<sup>1</sup> One group is on the frontiers of Edom, in the Nijeb, or South country, bordering on the Arabian desert, and a country of pasturage and Arab ways. A second group is in "the valley," possibly the Shephelah or foot-hills of the Judean range, composed of Eocene and upper Cretaceous beds dipping west, and so having their steepest side to the east, and distinct from the Philistine plains on the one hand and the Judean hills on the

<sup>1</sup> Trelawny Saunders. "Trans. Victoria Inst.," 1882.

other. A third group occupies the Sharon and Philistian plain, rich in its broad wheat fields. A fourth includes cities of "the mountains," the terraced limestone hills of Judea, the home of the vine, the olive, and the fig. A fifth is in the "wilderness," that of Judea proper, extending along the east side of the Dead Sea, and in some places rich in grassy hill pastures; in others, degenerating into the "craggs of the wild goats" and the partridges.

What a wealth of various habitat, resource, privilege, and difficulty is here, in this one district, the home of the greatest of the southern Hebrew tribes; and that of Ephraim, the companion tribe in the north, rivals it in variety—perhaps, in some respects exceeds it. The following remarks, taken in substance from a little book by the writer, relate to the country between Jaffa and Jerusalem,<sup>1</sup> and illustrate these points.

The Judean hills, rugged though they are, have not been produced by any violent fractures of the earth's crust. The beds of Cretaceous limestone, of which they are composed, constitute a great flat arch or anticlinal, sloping gently to the Mediterranean on the west, and to the Jordan valley on the east, and the hills have been cut by the sea and the torrents out of the nearly horizontal limestone beds, as a cameo is cut out of the layers of an agate or of a shell. Thus they present the appearance of successive terraces, meandering along the sides of the valleys, and rising one above another into rounded eminences. The aspect thus given to the hill-sides is of most peculiar character, and suggests the idea that this natural terracing must have given to the early inhabitants of the country the hint of that system of culture in terraces which prevailed in ancient times, when these now bare and desolate hills were clad with vines and olives. In some places, as near Kolonieh on this road, and at Bethlehem, where olive culture

<sup>1</sup> "Egypt and Syria," Religious Tract Society.

still exists in perfection, one can realize the appearance which the country must have presented in the old Hebrew times, and, in connection with the value of the produce of the olive tree and vine, the large population it may have supported.

The description of the hills on this road given by Dr. Fraas is so graphic that it deserves quotation: <sup>1</sup> "Chalk marls, hard white limestone, and beds of dolomite alternate with each other, and form great steps on the mountain sides, such as I have nowhere else seen in equal beauty. The edges of the beds, three to ten feet thick, stand out like artificial walls, enclosing the hills. Olive trees and shrubbery overhang these natural ramparts, while the softer layers form slopes covered with green herbage, which is still richer in the moist hollows." It will be observed that this rugged Judean country presents a much more attractive appearance to the German geologist than to the ordinary traveller, to whom the hills seem mere irregular masses of stone.

It is also to be observed, that though on these hills there may be little soil, and that of a stony quality, this soil is of the most fertile character, and especially adapted for fruit trees and vines. The manner in which the German colony at Jerusalem is improving the apparently hopeless stony country between that place and Bethlehem, and rendering it productive, is a remarkable indication of this. It seems to have been customary in ancient times to store part of the produce of these hills on the ground, as there are everywhere in the ledges and cliffs small caverns excavated or enlarged by art, and which, while too small to have been occupied for residence, may have served as places of storage, or possibly, in troublous times, of concealment of the crops. A curious example of this practice occurs in the case of the ten men mentioned by Jeremiah, who said they had wheat, barley, oil,

<sup>1</sup> "*Aus dem Orient.*"

and honey "hid in the field," and were spared by the tyrant Ishmael on account of these treasures.

We ascend these hills through narrow valleys, on the sides of which, here and there, are beds filled with characteristic Cretaceous fossils.<sup>1</sup> The villages and ruins of old towns are perched on heights, and often at points suited to command the road through the valleys, indicating the fact that defence was and is of more importance than convenience, and reminding us of the wars and raids that have raged along the borders of the hill country of Judea from the times of the old Philistines till the present day. Even now, under the happy union of oppressiveness and imbecility which characterizes the Turkish Government, the heavily-taxed villager or farmer is obliged to be his own guard and policeman. Every person that one meets on the road is armed with a rifle, musket, pair of pistols or scimeter, or with some combination of these ; or, failing any of them, with the round-headed club which, since the days of David, seems to have been the shepherd's weapon in this country.<sup>2</sup> One is at first a little alarmed by the approach of these armed travellers ; but we soon find that they are by no means aggressive, and that their arms only express their own fears of attack.

The hills of the Shephelah rise somewhat suddenly from the plain to heights of about 400 or 500 feet, and then gradually ascend, ridge after ridge, to the summit of the Mount of Olives, 2,693 feet above the level of the sea ; but this is by no means the maximum height of this great flat-

<sup>1</sup> More especially there are white limestones with *Radiolites* and large *Ostræa* and other bivalves. Other beds are filled with shells of the genus *Nerinaea*. These beds seem to correspond with the so-called Radiolarian zone of Fraas in the Lebanon, and are well seen half-way between Ramleh and Jerusalem.

<sup>2</sup> The Shaivet, "rod" or "sceptre" of our version—literally a club. See Psalm xxiii., where the word is translated "rod."

backed ridge, which forms the backbone of Western Palestine.<sup>1</sup> To the south of our line of section it attains near Hebron a height of 3,300 feet; and northward it rises to a still greater elevation in the mountains of Samaria, before it gives off the oblique spur of Mount Carmel to the northwest. Beyond this it sinks into the plain of Esdraelon, to rise again in the hills of Galilee, and farther north to culminate in the great ridge of Mount Lebanon, which ascends to a height of 10,000 feet. Throughout all this extent the hills consist of Cretaceous limestone, ridged up in the centre, and cut by valleys and ravines at the sides, so that it may be compared to the backbone of an animal, with its ribs spread out at either side. The later Eocene limestones, which are so grandly developed in Egypt, are represented in Palestine only by small patches; and from a comparison of these formations in the Nile valley, in the Red Sea, in Judea, and the Lebanon, I am of opinion that there was an original difference, thicker deposits having taken place in the Cretaceous period in Syria than in Egypt, and precisely the reverse in the Eocene age.<sup>1</sup> Much of the physical difference between the two countries depends on this circumstance.

It is interesting to observe that this hill country, with the valleys descending from it, and the great Jordan valley to the east, was specially the land of the Israelites in their settlement in Palestine. The empire of David and Solomon was, of course, much more extensive, but it included peoples of other races. The Philistines seem always to have retained their hold of the maritime plain as far north as Jaffa, and the Phœnician territory included the greater part of the seaboard north of Carmel, while the Esdraelon plain was a thoroughfare of nations. On the east of the Jordan the possessions of the Hebrews were somewhat precarious, and were limited by Moab

<sup>1</sup> Measurements by the Palestine Exploration Survey.

<sup>2</sup> See notes in the *Geological Magazine*, 1884.

and Ammon on the south, and Syria on the north. It is also to be observed that the chief seats of the dominant tribes of Judah and Ephraim were on this great ridge of Western Palestine. Another feature of the occupation of Palestine by the Hebrews, indicated by modern facts as well as by the statements in the book of Joshua, is, that while the Israelites were the landed proprietors and the leading people of the cities, many of the original Canaanites remained as serfs and labouring people, especially in the more secluded districts. The fellaheen of the southern districts still resemble Egyptians, and may be descendants of the Old Philistines, who, according to Moses, came out of Lower Egypt.<sup>1</sup> Those of Judea have the features of the Canaanites, as represented on Egyptian monuments, and are probably, in part at least, of the old pre-historic stock.

I shall devote the remainder of this chapter to two subjects of special interest,—the questions relating to the Dead Sea, and those which arise out of the site and surroundings of Jerusalem.

Lartet has called his last great work on Palestine “*La Mer Morte*,” the Dead Sea, as if on that strange sheet of water the structure of the whole country hung. In a certain sense this is the case, since, as we have already seen, the great valley of depression in which this mysterious sea lies, is one of the most remarkable features not only of Palestine but of the world. This will appear more distinctly when we notice that a traveller from Jaffa to Jerusalem ascends from the sea to the summit of the Mount of Olives, 2,665 feet in a space of twenty-five miles, and descending from Jerusalem to the Dead Sea, in a distance of fifteen miles he finds himself 1,250 feet below the level of the Mediterranean, or has, so to speak, plunged into a deep pit 4,000 feet below the summits of the Judean hills; besides

<sup>1</sup> Gen. x. 14.

which the sea is in its deepest parts more than 1,200 feet deep, so that its bottom is nearly 2,500 feet below the surface of the Mediterranean. Fronting him on the east of the depression, is the abrupt and rugged face of the mountains of Moab, rising to 3,000 feet above the sea. To these marvellous differences of level, the physical causes of which we have already considered, we have to add the hot springs, the salt, sulphur, and bitumen deposits, and the extraordinary erosion and terracing of the country on the sides of this great depression.

To a few of these points it may be well here to devote some attention, as the most varied opinions have been held respecting them.

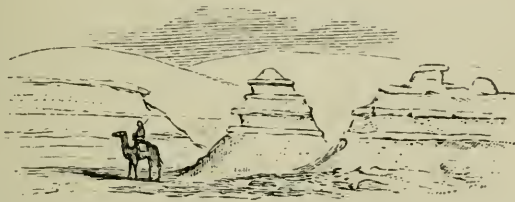


FIG. 32.—Ancient Dead Sea Deposits, eroded by the action of the weather.

The hills on the west side of the Dead Sea consist of the Cretaceous limestones, including some beds extremely rich in bituminous matter, which lie low in the series at this point. The hills on the east consist at their base of the Nubian sandstone, on which rest the Cretaceous limestones, and in places beds of basalt. In the valley itself, are a series of terraces of marl, limestone, and gravel, with gypsum and rock salt, recent deposits of the lake itself, and which mark its former great extent by rising to a height of 1,400 feet above its present surface. The diagram in Fig. 33 shows the general relations of these beds.

As to the saltness of the sea, this arises from its want of an

outlet, and the consequent necessity of parting with its water by evaporation alone. Hence all the saline matter washed by rains out of the Jordan valley, accumulates in this depression, and beyond what is dissolved in the water, has been deposited in beds of gypsum and rock salt, of which the beds now raised above the level of the sea at Jebel Usdum, are the best examples.<sup>1</sup> The density of the water of the Dead Sea is thus that of a saturated solution of soluble saline substances, and amounts to about one and a quarter times that of ordinary water (1'255 to 1'162); hence its remarkable power of floating

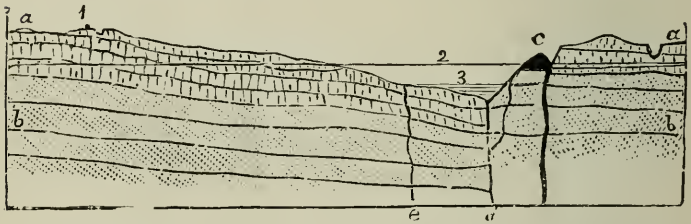


FIG. 33.—SECTION FROM JERUSALEM TO MOAB across the Dead Sea (after Lartet).—(1) Jerusalem, (2) Level of Mediterranean, (3) Level, of Dead Sea. (a) Cretaceous Limestones, (b) Sandstone, (c) Volcanic rock, (d) Line of Great Fault, (e) Fissures giving origin to saline springs.

up the body of a swimmer. As to the nature of the saline matter, this is rather that of the mother-liquor of a salt-work than that of the sea.<sup>2</sup> The water of the Jordan contains most of the substances found in the Dead Sea water, and the others are probably due to the springs and smaller streams which enter its sides, and many of which are strongly mineral, as well

<sup>1</sup> Lartet regards these beds as Cretaceous; but Hull, and I think justly, considers them modern.

<sup>2</sup> Chloride, bromide and sulphate of magnesium, sodium, calcium, and potassium, the proportions apparently varying much in different places and seasons.



as to the saline matter remaining from the great Pleistocene subsidence.<sup>1</sup>

The sulphur which is found in concretions in the marls of the Dead Sea deposits is not a direct product of volcanic action, as some have supposed. Sulphur, in the form of sulphuretted hydrogen, is evolved from many of the springs which enter the Dead Sea, and is produced either by the decay of organic matter in the presence of water and sulphates in the underlying rocks, or is a residual product of the old volcanic forces of the region. This gas, when it comes in contact with water, is oxidized, and a deposit of sulphur in a fine state of division results, which aggregates itself by molecular action into balls or concretions. I saw some of these in the marls at the north end of the sea; and better specimens were given to me by Dr. Paulus of Jerusalem. The association of native sulphur with gypsum, as in these marls, is by no means unusual.

As to the bitumen, I have no doubt that its source is in the bituminous limestones of the Cretaceous series. In marine limestones and shales of all geological ages, where any considerable quantity of vegetable or animal matter, either of terrestrial or aquatic origin, has been mixed with sediment, bituminization takes place, and thus are formed bituminous limestones and shales. These are undoubtedly the sources of bitumen and petroleum springs in all countries where they exist, and the bituminous matter may be forced from them either by heat, pressure, or the percolation of water. In this way, along the shores of the Dead Sea there are springs which produce petroleum; and this, when hardened, becomes asphalt. Similar springs in the bottom of the sea produce the masses

<sup>1</sup> In the Pleistocene the Dead Sea and Jordan valley must have been an inland sea 200 miles in length, which, on the elevation of the land after the Pleistocene submergence, must have parted with its water by evaporation.

of asphalt which occasionally float up, especially after earthquakes ; as has been observed from the time of Strabo to the present day.

Another point which has given great trouble to geological theorists on this region, has relation to the question of a possible former outlet to the Dead Sea, and of the cause of the terracing of its valley, and of the erosion of the neighbouring hills, in connection with the possibility of getting rid of all the *débris* produced by this erosion. Two possible means of outlet to the Dead Sea exist,—one to the south, by the Arabah valley into the Gulf of Akaba, one to the north, by the valley of the Kishon, that “ancient river,” as Deborah calls it, perhaps in allusion to some tradition of its former importance in this way.<sup>1</sup> As to the first of these : according to Hull, the summit of the Arabah valley, south of the Red Sea, is no less than 3,270 feet above the level of the bottom of the Dead Sea, or in round numbers, 2,000 feet above its surface. Unless, therefore, very great changes of level by transverse faulting or warping<sup>2</sup> of the beds have occurred, any outflow in this direction would seem impossible. On the north, on the other hand, the plain of Jezreel and the Kishon valley appear to be 375 feet lower, so that if the water in the Dead Sea were raised, without any relative change of level in the north and south ends, it might flow up the Jordan valley and run out into the Mediterranean to the north of Mount Carmel. Whether it ever did so we do not certainly know, but old Dead Sea deposits extend north beyond this line, and are said in places to reach to 1,400 feet above the level of the sea.<sup>3</sup> According to

<sup>1</sup> Huddleston, “Geology of Palestine,”—a very excellent and judicious memoir.

<sup>2</sup> Such warping in Pleistocene and modern times is now being established over great regions in America ; and so is a cause deserving of consideration.

<sup>3</sup> Hull’s Report on Southern Judæa (Pal. Exp. Fund).

Huddleston, an elevation of about 180 feet above this limit, or of 1,577 feet above the level of the Dead Sea, would enable the lake to effect an outlet in this direction, which it may very possibly have done in the time of Pleistocene depression. It is through this low district that it has been proposed to flood the Jordan valley, or produce a "Jordan river canal."

The factors of time and changes of relative level enter however into these discussions. If the great fracture which lets down the Nubian sandstone and overlying beds to a depth estimated at 5,000 feet in the Dead Sea basin, began in Miocene times, it may not have been completed at first in its full effects. Thus, if we go back far enough, say to Miocene or Pliocene times, there is no difficulty in supposing a river to have run out into the Gulf of Akaba, and the further depression forming the Dead Sea basin to have occurred later, while the greatest extension of the lake did not take place till late in the Pleistocene. I should be inclined to attribute much of the erosion and ravine cutting of the hills of Moab and Judea to this Pliocene age, when we know that the more important operations of this kind were completed, before the glacial period, in Europe and America. In the Pliocene continental period, the whole of Palestine was probably higher than at present, and the levels along the Jordan valley and Arabah may have been different from those now existing there, so as to permit an outflow. Besides, it is very probable that at the extreme crisis of the great Pleistocene submergence, Palestine was so far under water that the Judean hills may have been an island, and that the sea coursed freely along what is now the valley of the Jordan; and the same may have occurred in the great post-glacial deluge, though this has certainly not cleaned out the lacustrine marls, which must be of older date. If, however, we admit that the greater part of the erosion of the hills may have taken place before the close of the Pliocene age, there

will be no difficulty in disposing of the *débris* of denudation ; always bearing in mind that the depression of the valley is not a phenomenon of erosion, but of subsidence, and that no small quantity of matter swept into the sunk area now exists in the lacustrine deposits themselves.

As some very recent discussions on this subject<sup>1</sup> show a remarkable confounding of geological events and dates, it may be useful to sum up in a few words the history of this remarkable valley. (1) The great depression produced by the Jordan (fault) belongs to the Middle Tertiary period ; (2) In the Pliocene age the whole country was more elevated than at present, and the valley probably had an outlet to the sea. At this time deep lateral valleys were cut. (3) In the Pleistocene subsidence (glacial age) the sea overflowed the valley, and the Judean hills may have been an island. (4) The post-glacial elevation raised the land again above its present level, and the valley became a great salt-water lake without outlet, and which the rapid evaporation of this continental period reduced to its present size, or perhaps less. At this time man appeared on the scene. (5) The post-glacial submergence inundated the whole region, and on its withdrawal left the valley again full of sea-water, to be removed by evaporation in the early modern period, during which the water attained to its present state of equilibrium between evaporation and supply. These successive events, the evidence of which is stamped on the features of the region, explain its relations to early human history.

In descending from Jerusalem to Jericho, or from the watershed of the Judean hills into the great depression of the Jordan valley and Salt Sea, we pass over the upper Cretaceous beds already referred to in this chapter, on the whole dipping to the eastward ; and which are cut by the atmospheric

<sup>1</sup> *Nineteenth Century*, June, 1891, etc.

agencies into bold hills and deep ravines, forming the rugged and abrupt western edge of the Jordan valley. Facing us on the east are the still bolder hills east of the Jordan, representing the long line of up-thrust beyond the great fault.

Of the beds observed, those that most concern our present subject are the black bituminous limestones, better seen at



FIG. 34.—SECTION OF BITUMINOUS LIMESTONE of Neby Mousa, magnified, showing, *Globigerina*, *Textularia*, etc., with the cavities of some of them filled with bitumen, which also saturates the intervening matrix, composed of Coccoliths and fragments of Foraminifera.

Neby Mousa, north of our line of road from Jerusalem to Jericho. These are chalky beds, originally marine sediments, composed largely of microscopic shells of Foraminifera, but now saturated with bitumen to such an extent as to have become perfectly black, and, in the case of some of the richer beds, to burn like cannel coal.<sup>1</sup> These bituminous beds are

<sup>1</sup> This is the stone used for the black ornaments, etc., sold at Jerusalem

in all probability the source of the asphalt and petroleum of the Dead Sea. The origin of the bituminous matter is no doubt, like that of other bituminous limestones, from the decomposition of vegetable and animal matter in these beds.

Placing these facts in connection with what we have already seen of the geological history of this great depression, we are now prepared intelligently to discuss the questions relating to the Cities of the Plain and their tragical end, as recorded in the 19th and 20th chapters of Genesis.

From a geological point of view we are scarcely warranted in agreeing with a recent writer, in saying that the researches of my friend Professor Hull, or those of Lartet, and other previous observers, have "disposed for ever" of the theory that the doomed cities or their sites, in whole or in part, have been submerged under the waters of the Salt Sea; and I feel confident that Professor Hull would not assert that they have necessarily had this effect, though his own opinion in the matter may favour that view. What they have effectually disposed of, is the theory that the Dead Sea originated at the time of the destruction of those cities, which is quite a different matter. There is indeed the best evidence that this salt lake has existed from early Tertiary times, and that in the ages preceding human history it was much more extensive than it now is. But this does not settle the question whether, at the time of the destruction of the cities, it may not have been a little larger or smaller than at present, or whether there may not have been some local subsidence in connection with the tragic event. The answer to these questions would depend on other considerations, distinct from the geological history of the sea.

As to the size of the lake, this would be regulated by the as Dead Sea stone. When polished, it resembles a black marble, and is believed to be the black stone with which Solomon is said to have paved certain roads leading from Jerusalem.

relative amount of precipitation and evaporation in the Jordan valley and the basin of the sea at the time referred to. As to local subsidence, nothing could be more likely than this in connection with the disturbances recorded in Genesis. Such evidence as we have, however, gives no reason to believe that the climate of Palestine was less humid than at present in the time of Abraham. On the contrary, the probably greater amount of forest surface would justify the belief that it was at least less arid than in modern times. Further, if the country was better wooded, the floods of the Jordan would probably be less violent than they are now, and the level of the Dead Sea would be more constant. As to local subsidence, there are facts noted in a previous narrative in Genesis xiv., and which Tomkins, in his "Studies on the Times of Abraham," very properly characterises as one of the most curious "restitutions of decayed intelligence" ever known in the world of literature, when taken in connection with the Chaldean records, which give some reason to believe that this may have occurred. I take it for granted that, as Canon Tristram and Dr. Selah Merrill have so ably argued, the cities were at the north end of the sea, and that the vale of Siddim, in which their kings met the Eastern invaders, was also there. Now, these invaders are said to have marched up the western side of the sea, by way of Engedi, and to have been met by their opponents in a vale or plain full of bitumen pits. At present it would be difficult, if not impossible, for an army encumbered with plunder to move along the coast of the Dead Sea northward of Engedi, and it does seem probable that the host of Chedorlaomer and his confederates went up the Engedi Pass to the westward and round to the plain of Jordan through the hills of the Amorites.<sup>1</sup> It is possible, therefore, that they may have passed along a fringe of low

<sup>1</sup> Tristram and others suppose that they did; but only on account of the supposed impracticable character of the coast route.

country now submerged, and in which were the petroleum wells. Tristram notes in this vicinity a band of bituminous rock in the cliffs and exudations of mineral pitch, but there seem to be no indications of the numerous petroleum pits referred to in Genesis, though possibly these may be now submerged. Nor would it be wonderful if the locality in question should now be occupied with deep water, since such local subsidence, occasioned by removal of material from below, might be of considerable vertical amount. It is proper to add, however, that the disappearance of the bitumen pits may be accounted for in another way, to be noticed in the sequel.

It may be urged as an argument against the occurrence of any subsidence, that the notice of the locality in Deuteronomy xxix. 23 would imply that in the time of Moses the site of the destroyed cities was believed to be a land characterized by salt and sulphur and dryness, or in other words, a plain covered with deposits similar to those which occur in various places around the sea ; yet there is no contradiction between this and the supposition that a portion of the original plain had been submerged. What remained of it might present the characters of aridity and barrenness referred to.

With reference to the causes of the destruction of the cities, these are so clearly stated in a perfectly unconscious and incidental manner in Genesis xix., that I think no geologist, on comparing the narrative with the structure of the district, can hesitate as to the nature of the phenomena which were presented to the observation of the narrator. Nor is there any reason to suppose that the history is compounded of two narratives giving different views as to the cause of the catastrophe. On the contrary, the story has all the internal evidence of being a record of the observations of intelligent eye-witnesses, who reported the appearances observed, without concerning themselves as to their proximate causes or natural probability.



We learn from the narrative that the destruction was sudden and unexpected, that it was caused by "brimstone and fire," that these were rained down from the sky, that a dense column of smoke ascended to a great height, like the smoke of a furnace or lime-kiln, and that along with, or immediately after the fire, there was an emission of brine or saline mud, capable of encrusting bodies (as that of Lot's wife), so that they appeared as mounds (not pillars) of salt. The only point in the statements in regard to which there can be doubt, is the substance intended by the Hebrew word translated "brimstone." It may mean sulphur, of which there is abundance in some of the Dead Sea deposits; but there is reason to suspect that, as used here, it may rather denote pitch, since it is derived from the same root with *Gopher*, the Hebrew name, apparently, of the cypress and other resinous woods. If, however, this were the intention of the writer, the question arises, Why did he use this word *Gaphrith* (גפריית), when the Hebrew possesses other words suitable to designate different forms of petroleum and asphalt? In this language *Zepheth* is the proper term for petroleum or rock oil in its liquid state, while *Chemar* denotes asphalt or mineral pitch, the more solid form of the mineral, and *Copher* is asphaltic or resinous varnish, used for covering and protecting wood and other materials. As examples of the use of these words in the Pentateuch Noah is said to have used *copher* for the ark, the builders of Babel used *chemar* or asphalt as a cement, and the careful mother of Moses used both *chemar* and *zepheth* to make the cradle of her child water-tight. These distinctions are not kept up by the translators, but a comparison of passages shows that they were well understood by the original writer of the Pentateuch, who had not studied the chemistry of the Egyptian schools to no purpose.<sup>1</sup> Why then does he in this place use this quite unde-

<sup>1</sup> I do not know if it is necessary to apologize for assuming that Genesis is a book of Moses. It is at least quite evident that its editor was trained

cided term gaphrith? The most likely reason would seem to be, that he did not wish to commit himself to any particular kind of inflammable mineral, but preferred a term which his readers would understand as including any kind of mineral pitch or oil, and possibly sulphur as well. It would have been well if later writers, who have undertaken to describe the fires of Gehenna in terms taken from the destruction of the Cities of the Plain, had been equally cautious. It is interesting to observe in connection with this, that in the notice of the pits in the vale of Siddim, the specific word chemar, asphalt, is used; and it is in this particular form that the bituminous exudations of the region of the Dead Sea usually appear.

It is scarcely necessary to say that the circumstances above referred to are not those of a volcanic eruption; and there is no mention of any earthquake, which, if it occurred, must in the judgment of the narrator have been altogether a subordinate feature. Nor is an earthquake necessarily implied in the expression "overthrown," used in Deuteronomy xxix. Still, as we shall see, more or less tremor of the ground very probably occurred, and might, though it is not mentioned in the original narrative, have impressed itself on the traditions of the event, especially as the district is subject to earthquakes.

The description is that of a bitumen or petroleum eruption, similar to those which, on a small scale, have been so destructive in the oil regions of Canada and the United States of America. They arise from the existence of reservoirs of compressed inflammable gas along with petroleum and water, existing at considerable depths below the surface. When these are penetrated, as by a well or bore-hole, the gas escapes with explosive force, carrying petroleum with it, and when both have been ignited, the petroleum rains down in burning showers, in the schools of Egypt, and was better qualified to describe natural phenomena than the greater number of his critics and commentators in later times.

and floats in flames over the ejected water, while a dense smoke towers high into the air, and the intruding draught may produce a vortex, carrying upward to a still greater height and distributing still more widely the burning material, which is almost inextinguishable, and most destructive to life and to buildings.

In the valley of the Euphrates, according to Layard, the Arabs can produce miniature eruptions of this kind, by breaking with stones the crust of hardened asphalt that has formed on the surface of the bitumen springs, and igniting the vapours and liquid petroleum.

Now the valley of the Dead Sea is an "oil district," and from the incidental mention of its slime pits, or literally asphalt pits, in Genesis xiv., was apparently more productive in mineral pitch in ancient times. It is interesting in connection with this to notice that Conder found layers of asphalt in the mound which marks the site of ancient Jericho, showing that the substance was used in primitive times for roofs and floors, or as a cement to protect brick structures from damp; and it is well known that petroleum exudes from the rocks both on the sides and in the bottom of the Dead Sea, and, being hardened by evaporation and oxidation, forms the asphaltum referred to by so many travellers.

The source of the bituminous matter is, as already stated, in the great beds of bituminous limestone of Upper Cretaceous age which appear at Neby Mousa, on the Jericho road, and at many other places in the vicinity of the sea, and no doubt underlie its bed and the lower part of the Jordan plain. From these beds bituminous and gaseous matter must have been at all times exuding. Further, the Jordan valley and the Dead Sea basin are on the line of the great fault or fracture traversing these beds, and affording means of escape to their products, especially when the district is shaken by earthquakes. We have thus only to suppose that at the time in question reservoirs

of condensed gas and petroleum existed under the plain of Siddim, and that these were suddenly discharged, either by their own accumulated pressure, or by an earthquake shock fracturing the overlying beds, when the phenomena described by the writer in Genesis would occur; and after the eruption the site would be covered with a saline and sulphurous deposit, while many of the sources of petroleum previously existing might be permanently dried up. In connection with this there might be subsidence of the ground over the now exhausted reservoirs, and this might give rise to the idea of the submergence of the cities. It is to be observed, however, that the parenthetic statement in Genesis xiv., "which is the Salt Sea," does not certainly mean under the sea, and that it relates not to the cities themselves, but to the plain where the battle recorded in the chapter was fought at a time previous to the eruption. It is also to be noted that this particular locality is precisely the one which, as previously stated, may on other grounds be supposed to have subsided, and that this subsidence having occurred subsequently may have rendered less intelligible the march of the invading army to later readers; so that the explanation, "which is the Salt Sea," may imply that, in the opinion of the writer, the plain which enabled the invaders to attack the Sodomites and their allies in the manner recorded, did not exist in his time.<sup>1</sup>

It seems difficult to imagine that anything except the real occurrence of such an event could have given origin to the narrative. No one unacquainted with the structure of the district, and the probability of bitumen eruptions in connec-

<sup>1</sup> Lyell notices a subsidence as having occurred within the present century in Trinidad, which gave origin to a small lake of mineral pitch; and the well-known pitch lake of that island is supposed to have originated in a similar subsidence. The latter subsidence is said to have caused "great terror" among the inhabitants; and if the petroleum or its gaseous emanations had been ignited, serious consequences might have ensued.

tion with this structure, would be likely to imagine the raining of burning pitch from the sky, with the attendant phenomena stated so simply and without any appearance of exaggeration, and with the evident intention to dwell on the spiritual and moral significance of the event, while giving just as much of the physical features as was essential to this purpose. It may be added here, that in Isaiah xxxiv. 9 and 10, there is a graphic description of a bitumen eruption, which may possibly be based on the history now under consideration, though used figuratively to illustrate the doom of Idumea.

In thus directing attention to the physical phenomena attendant on the destruction of the Cities of the Plain, I do not desire to detract from the providential character of the catastrophe, or from the lessons which it teaches, and which have pervaded the religion and literature of the world ever since it occurred. I merely wish to show that there is nothing in the narrative comparable with the wild myths and fanciful conjectures sometimes associated with it; and that its author has described in an intelligent manner, appearances which he must have seen, or which were described to him by competent witnesses. I wish also to indicate that the statements made are in accordance with the structure and possibilities of the district as now understood, after its scientific exploration. From a scientific point of view, it is a description, unique in ancient literature, of a natural phenomenon of much interest and of very rare occurrence.

Nor do I desire to be understood as asserting that Sodom and its companion cities were different from others in the facilities for destruction afforded by their situation. They were no doubt so placed as to be specially subject to one particular kind of overthrow. But it may be safely said that there is no city in the world which is not equally, though perhaps by other agencies, within the reach of Divine power exercised through the energies of nature, should it be found

to be destitute of "ten righteous men." So that the conclusion holds—"except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish."

I may be permitted to add that, notwithstanding all that has been done in recent times, there is still much room for the application of natural science to the interpretation of the more ancient books of the Hebrew Scriptures, which are undoubtedly the productions of men of culture and of keen and accurate appreciation of nature, but which have come down to us through ages of comparative darkness in regard to physical phenomena—a darkness unhappily scarcely yet dispelled, even from the higher walks of biblical interpretation.

If we treat Jerusalem as we have treated Rome, and as a

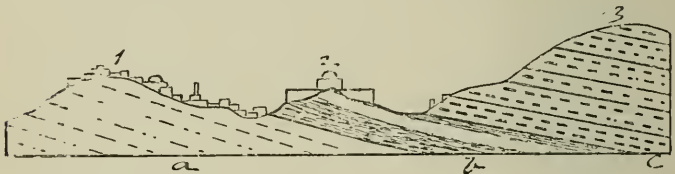


FIG. 35.—SECTION OF THE SITE OF JERUSALEM.—(1) Summit of Zion, (2) Summit of Moriah, (3) Mount of Olives. (a) Middle Cretaceous limestone, grey, red, and white. (b) Softer white limestones, including the bed of *Melkeh*, or Royal Stone. (c) Upper Cretaceous limestone and marl, with flint.

geological observer may deal with any ancient city, we shall find an original site of very different character, but giving equal evidence of suitability to the ends of its existence, though without the feature of being based on ancient volcanic ejectamenta. Jerusalem rests on the Cretaceous limestone of the Judean hills, and is near the summit of the anticlinal ridge, or slightly toward its eastern side. It is no less than 2,590 feet above the level of the sea, and occupies two little spurs of rock jutting out to the southward from the great limestone plateau to the north and west. The western and larger spur may be named that of Zion, the smaller, or eastern, that

of Moriah and Ophel, and the Tyropean valley forms a low part of the city intervening.

The rocks on which Jerusalem is based consist of limestones of various qualities, with a gentle easterly slope, as represented in the section (Fig. 35). The lower beds belonging to the Middle Cretaceous<sup>1</sup> are mostly of hard variegated limestone, seen near the Jaffa gate and elsewhere on the western ridge. This is what is usually called the *Missie*, or hard stone, and is used for building and for paving stones. It is often prettily coloured, and when polished forms a variegated marble. Softer beds probably underlie the Tyropean valley, and on these rests the *Melekeh*,<sup>2</sup> or royal stone, the fine white compact limestone quarried in Jeremiah's grotto and in the great quarries under the eastern ridge. On this rests a repetition of the hard grey limestone, softer beds again probably occupying the Kidron valley; and in the Mount of Olives we have a thin-bedded or laminated limestone of Upper Cretaceous age, locally called *Kakule*, or cake stone, because thin-bedded and full of bands and concretions of flint.<sup>3</sup> The best of all these limestones for building purposes is the *Melekeh*; and this fact seems to have been recognised at a very early period, as the ridge of this rock has been entirely quarried through between the city wall and Jeremiah's grotto, and in the latter, which is seemingly an old quarry; and it has then been followed under the city itself in those great underground quarries which are called the Royal quarries, and which probably supplied all the stones used in the construction of the Temple.

<sup>1</sup> Cenomanian.

<sup>2</sup> I find these names are differently given by some writers. I have taken them from specimens collected and prepared for me by Mr. C. Paulus, of Jerusalem, who, from his profession as a sculptor, knows them well.

<sup>3</sup> I suppose that the succession is regular, and without any considerable faults, of which I saw no evidence.

One meets with the most contradictory statements respecting the identification of the parts of Jerusalem and its vicinity, as noticed in the Bible; and on some of these points the topography and geology throw much light. No one seems to doubt the identity of the Mount of Olives and the Kidron valley; and it is not possible to entertain any uncertainty about the site of the Temple, since its vast substructures remain, 1,500 feet in length by 1,000 in breadth, and, according to Warren's measurements, rising at the south-east angle to the great height of one hundred and fifty-six feet above the side of the Kidron valley. They constitute one of the noblest substructures ever erected for any building. These points being fixed, we have next to look for the locality of Mount Zion and the city of David, and the old city of the Jebusites, which resisted the Israelites and retained a quasi-independence till the time of David. Beginning with the first of these—it could not have been on the temple or Moriah hill, for in the time of David this was outside the city, and its summit was used as a threshing-floor for winnowing grain.<sup>1</sup> It must therefore have been upon the western or higher ridge, now usually named Mount Zion. This accords with the indications of the site, for this ridge is the highest and most defensible part of the whole position, and upon it now stands the citadel of Jerusalem. The old Jebusite city therefore must have occupied the ridge extending southward from the Tower of David, as it is called, along the higher western ridge, a position very like to that which Bethlehem occupies on a similar spur. This city of the Jebusites was undoubtedly, when captured, the original city of David. Millo, afterwards known as Acra, was probably the northern continuation of this ridge, separated from it by a slight hollow, which lay on the northern side of the Jebusite fortress, and which now leads to the Jaffa gate. Millo was enclosed and fortified by David

<sup>1</sup> 1 Kings xxiv. 18.



and Solomon, probably as far as the present north-west angle of the city wall, where are the remains of a very old tower of ancient Jewish masonry, known as the Tower of Goliath. The city was then long and narrow, stretching along one ridge only, but occupying a very strong position, assailable only at its northern end, except with great difficulty. At a later date, when David had purchased the threshing-floor of Araunah, on the eastern or Moriah hill, and when Solomon had built the Temple on it, connecting walls were thrown across the Tyropean valley at its northern and southern ends; and then the southern end of the temple ridge, known as Ophel, and leading down to the Royal Gardens in the Siloam valley, may have been occupied by Solomon, and may thus have become a second city or house of David. It seems to be an opinion very generally held, that the new palace, erected by Solomon and occupied by subsequent kings, was not in the original city of David, but on or near the Templé area on the south part of the Moriah hill. In like manner, in the later biblical books, Zion, the name of the higher and more conspicuous hill, was applied to the whole city, and more especially to that part of it consecrated to the Temple worship.<sup>1</sup>

If we take this view of the topography, all the questions connected with the site of the Temple, the original extent of the city, and even the vexed question of the true position of the Holy Sepulchre, become comparatively plain. Perhaps the consideration of the two last-mentioned points may furnish us with the most useful illustrations, and may appropriately

<sup>1</sup> Ganneau has recorded a discovery (*Athenæum*, July, 1889) which may seem to confirm the reference of the Jebusite city and city of David to the western or Zion hill. It is that of a Roman milestone outside of the Damascus gate, and inscribed as the fifth milestone. Five miles measure from this stone would however reach as far as the so-called tomb of David on the Zion hill, and if the miles were reckoned from this point in the Roman period, this may have been the *milliarium aureum* of the city of David and of the old Jebusite city as well.

complete our survey of the topography of the Holy City in connection with its geological structure (Fig. 36).

The eastern of the two spurs of rock on which Jerusalem stands must thus, until the reign of David, have lain outside

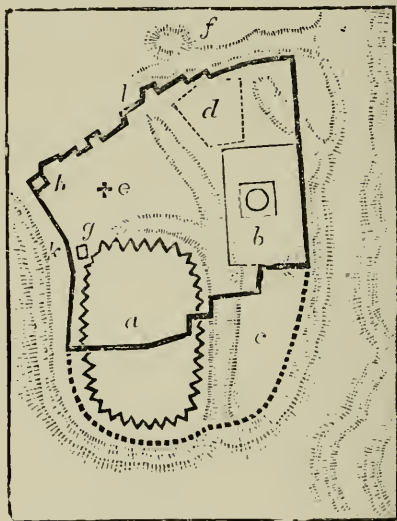


FIG. 36.—SKETCH PLAN OF JERUSALEM.—(a) Zion and old Jebusite city. (b) Temple area. (c) Ophel. (d) Subterranean quarries. (e) Church of the Holy Sepulchre. (f) Supposed Golgotha. (g) Tower of David. (h) Tower of Goliath. (k) Jaffa gate. (l) Damascus gate.

The present wall is indicated by a heavy black line, the old south wall by a dotted line, and the supposed position of the wall of the original Jebusite town by a zigzag line. The Tyropean valley is seen running up the middle of the city, and forking toward the Jaffa gate; and the Damascus gate is nearly opposite its north end. East of the city are the Kidron valley and the Mount of Olives.

the city. This we may fairly infer from the narrative of the plague which was arrested at the threshing-floor of Araunah the Jebusite, in connection with the erection of an altar by

David on this threshing-floor, and his selection of the place as the site of the temple to be erected by Solomon. The narrative of these events is found in the last chapter of the Second Book of Samuel, and in the 21st and 22nd chapters of the First Book of Chronicles. Let us look at the more important parts of these narratives. The prophet Gad, we are told, advised David to "go up and build an altar unto the Lord on the threshing-floor of Araunah the Jebusite." Araunah—called Ornan in Chronicles—was evidently a wealthy proprietor, having a threshing-floor on elevated ground near to the city; and he treats David with a princely liberality when he asks to purchase the ground. The narrative in Chronicles then proceeds thus:—"At that time, when David saw that the Lord had answered him in the threshing-floor of Ornan the Jebusite, then he sacrificed there. Then David said, This is the house of Jahveh Elohim, and this is the altar of burnt offering for Israel. And David commanded to gather together the strangers which were in the land of Israel; and he set masons to hew wrought stones to build the house of God." We are then told of other preparations, and that these were made for the Temple to be built by Solomon. Again, in 2 Chronicles iii. 1, we are told that Solomon built the Temple "in Moriah, in the place which David had appointed (or prepared) in the threshing-floor of Ornan the Jebusite." We learn from this that the threshing-floor of Araunah, in Mount Moriah, was the destined site of the Temple, and that the great quarries on the north end of and under the Temple ridge were already opened, and possibly some progress made in preparing foundations in the time of David, who must have selected the "melekeh" which forms the bed in which the quarries are excavated, as the most suitable stone for his purpose. The structure of the Moriah ridge and the excavations of Colonel Warren enable us to restore somewhat accurately the form of this ridge at the time when it was thus

selected, and when its sides were probably clad with olive trees, and its top a bare breezy threshing-floor. It was a somewhat narrow rocky ridge, with a steep side toward the Kidron valley on the east, and a cliff or crag toward the Tyropean valley and the city. The ridge itself rose slightly toward the middle, and then descended rapidly towards the present pool of Siloam. It possessed on the east side a peculiar intermitting spring, the present Virgin's fountain, and the pool of Bethesda of the Gospels, which in ancient times discharged its waters into the Kidron valley, but in the time of the Jewish kings, probably by Hezekiah, was carried into the city under the Temple ridge, along the now celebrated Siloam tunnel, more than 1,200 feet in length. The depression partly filled with rubbish near the north end of the Temple area, and now called the Pool of Bethesda, is certainly not that referred to by John. Gelich (in Quarterly Statement, Palestine Exploration Fund) records the discovery in this part of the city of an ancient pool with "five porches" or porticos, which is probably that of the Gospel, and must have been supplied with water from the neighbouring intermitting spring, which is still resorted to as a healing bath by diseased persons.

The whole of the central part of this ridge is now occupied by the flat rectangular area of the Mosque of Omar, part of which is solid rock and part filled in or supported on the great series of arches known as Solomon's stables, and the whole surrounded by the vertical wall of megalithic masonry, which constituted the substructure of the Temple.

In the middle of this area, and under the centre of the dome of the mosque, projects a great irregular mass of rock, the Sakhra or sacred rock, of which many absurd tales are narrated by the Moslems, but which is a portion of the natural surface of the highest part of the ridge, which must have been left in its original state when Solomon's Temple was built, and presumably for some important purpose in connection with that

Temple. It has in more recent times constituted the determining cause of the erection of the noble building which covers it, and which derives from it the name of "Kubbet es Sakhra," or

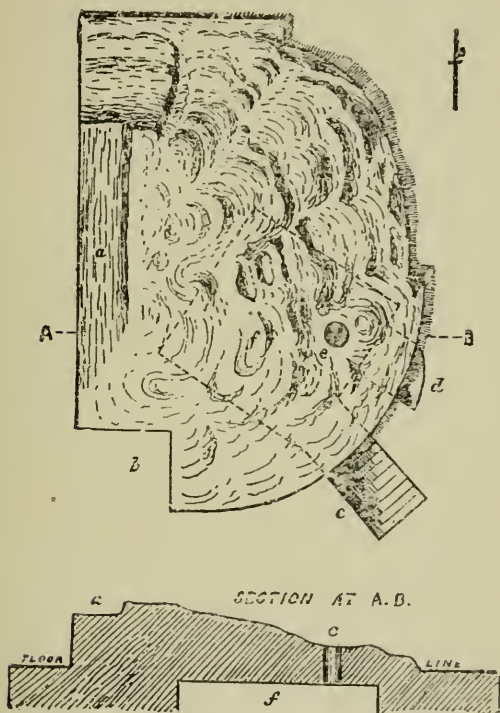


FIG. 37—THE SACRED ROCK IN THE MOSQUE OF OMAR, Plan and Section. Reduced (from a model by Paulus of Jerusalem). (a) Step on west side. (b) Notch in south-west angle. (c) Entrance to cave. (d) Smaller opening to the same. (e) Round aperture in roof of cave. (f) Section of cave, but not showing the irregularities of the roof and sides.

"Dome of the Rock."<sup>1</sup> The rock is simply a portion of one

<sup>1</sup> Its proper name. It is not really the Mosque of Omar, and it is even questionable if it is a Saracenic building.

of the harder grey beds of the natural summit of the hill, and consequently has been in its present place before the erection of any buildings, so that it must have been for some reason left intact at the time of the original levelling of the ground for the Temple of Solomon—a fact which gives to it great historical significance. It is approximately semicircular in outline, with the curved side, which slopes downward, on the east, and the straight side, which is higher and cut off square, to the west. This corresponds with the general dip of the rock of the ridge. It is about 60 feet in its extreme length, and 50 in its greatest breadth, and rises in its highest part a little more than four feet above the surrounding pavement.<sup>1</sup> Under the south-east portion there is a roughly-hewn chamber of square form excavated in the rock. With this three openings communicate; namely, a stairway leading down from the pavement, a small irregular opening near it, and a round hole on the top. This cavern is high enough to enable one to stand upright, and its paved floor sounds hollow, as if there were an additional cavity below. The direction of the western side of the rock is north-north-west, or parallel to the longest sides of the Temple area. The surface of the rock has evidently been prepared at the west and east sides for building stonework on and against it. The west side is cut down perpendicularly, and has a square notch cut out of the south angle; and above the perpendicular face the upper surface is cut into a decided shelf, sufficiently wide to receive a stone wall. The lower eastern side is less modified, but the semicircular edge is cut even, and has two slight rectangular breaks in its continuous curve; and on the surface flat spaces and step-like notches are cut into the stone. The entrance to the cave beneath is evidently modern, but the hole near it and the round opening in the top appear more ancient. On the whole, this sacred rock would seem to be an

<sup>1</sup> 4 feet 9½ inches.

original portion of the natural surface of the ledge, slightly modified by art, and having under a portion of it an old granary or cistern, which was probably excavated before the Temple was built. It would appear that at the north end there is one of those circular hollows for offerings which are seen in rocks on the summits of many hills in Palestine, and this would indicate that it may have been an ancient place of sacrifice among the Jebusites long before the time of David.<sup>1</sup>

It would seem that the only rational explanation of this preservation of a portion of natural rock must be, that it was the spot occupied by that altar which David had consecrated, and which constituted the reason for the selection of this site for the Temple. Further, as the altar of burnt-offering in the Temple must be of unhewn stone, and on the natural surface of the ground, it was necessary to leave some part of the surface untouched for this purpose; and what place so appropriate as the site of the altar on which David's great sacrifice was offered, and which he, apparently with the Divine sanction, through Gad the prophet, had consecrated as "the altar of burnt-offering for Israel"? Some have supposed that it was the Most Holy Place that stood on this spot; but there would be no special fitness in this; and the position of the great altar here would accord very well with the traditional site of the building erected by Solomon, and with its form, which was evidently that of an Egyptian temple, with an outer and inner court and a lofty propylon or porch in front of the Temple proper, or Holy Place, with its inner sanctuary. The propylon must in this case have been a little west of the centre of the present dome, and the Holy and Most Holy Places west of this on the side next to the city, so that the Temple faced the east, and had its inmost shrine on the side toward the city.

<sup>1</sup> W. Simpson, "Quarterly Statement, Palestine Exploration Fund," April, 1887. I did not observe this feature; but it is one which might easily escape notice, except in certain lights.

This would correspond very well with the Talmudic descriptions of the Temple and altar.<sup>1</sup>

If we are right in thus placing the altar of burnt-offering on the Sakhra, the Temple of Solomon must have stood nearly in the middle of the Haram area, on the same platform which now supports the Mosque of Omar. Its tower-like propylon must, like the present Dome of the Rock, have been the most conspicuous object in every view of the city. The courts in front of the Temple must have extended nearly to the west wall of the Temple area, while, as we learn from the Mishna, wider spaces lay to the south, north, and east, the whole of which were, however, probably surrounded with the long cloisters of Herod's Temple. We thus, I think, obtain, by starting from the sacred rock as representing the great central altar, a more definite idea of the Temple, and one more in accordance with the statements of ancient authorities than on any other view. We also obtain a most interesting identification of an old historic site, and can feel that we have here a spot which, if not the place of Abraham's sacrifice on Moriah, at least connects itself with the reign of David and the sacrifice on Araunah's threshing-floor.

The masonry of the retaining wall of the Temple area is a magnificent work of hewn stones, with marginal drafts, and beautifully fitted. This is at least the character of its older and lower portions. Every stone of the buildings that once crowned it has been thrown down, and their rubbish lies everywhere against its sides. The buildings now upon it are all of dates no older than the Christian era. Some of the entrances are probably as ancient at least as the Herodian time. The so-called double gate on the south side is one of the most interesting. It opens at the base of the great enclosing wall, and passes upward for 200 feet by two parallel arches, at the end

<sup>1</sup> As translated by Bishop Barclay and Dr. Chaplin.



of which were stairways leading to the surface of the area. In the porch at the entrance of these tunnels is a column strikingly Egyptian in appearance, and with a capital of palm leaves, or, as some interpret them, rows of acanthus. This double gate would present great facilities for the entrance and egress of processions or crowds of worshippers, and brings vividly before us that old time when the tens of thousands of Israel went up to worship here, singing perhaps those beautiful "Songs of Degrees" which still form the best expressions of many types of religious emotion.<sup>1</sup> There has been much discussion as to the age of the great Temple area; but the recent explorations seem to have established the Solomonic age of the lower part of the eastern wall; and, though there are some differences of structure on the south side, there seems no reason to doubt that the sub-structure actually prepared by Solomon included the whole, or nearly the whole, of the present Haram area, a work comparable in magnitude with the greatest of the Egyptian pyramids, and superior to them, when considered as the mere foundation of magnificent buildings which have wholly perished, and when taken in connection with the vast contrivances for water supply which exist beneath it, and which were connected originally with the high-level aqueduct conveying water from the springs in the Judean hills south of the great Pools of Solomon. These cisterns are said to be capable of containing ten millions of gallons of water. There is, however, no reason to doubt the statement of Josephus, that the great plan conceived by Solomon was completed by subsequent kings, and that large portions of the wall may have been repaired and rebuilt after the Captivity, or in the extensive restorations undertaken by Herod the Great. The Temple has disappeared, but its sub-structure remains intact, and the old sacred rock is still in its place, perhaps yet to witness other and greater developments in the history of the city of God.

<sup>1</sup> Psalms cxx. to cxxxiv.—Songs of ascent, or of going up.

The position of the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, as seen in the plan of the city, is so far within the walls, and on so central a part of the western ridge, that if in the time of Christ it was without the walls, the city must be very much limited in its northern extension. But we have reason to believe that the Jerusalem of the time of Pilate was much more populous than at present. Besides this, the old tower at the north-west angle of the city is undoubtedly a part of the ancient city wall, as is the Tower of David near the Jaffa gate, and Dr. Merrill has lately described an extension of the wall between these towers, uncovered in some recent excavations. Besides, there seem to be portions of old wall near the Damascus gate, and there is no defensible line for a city wall between this and the middle of the town. All these considerations militate against the claim of the present church to be on the site either of the crucifixion, or of the tomb of Jesus, while the points stated in the Gospels, though evidently not intended to fix the site as a holy place, are sufficient to indicate that the knoll (*f* in the plan of the city, p. 358) outside the Damascus gate, now used as a little Moslem cemetery, and at one time the public place of execution, is the real Golgotha, or "place of a skull," to which it also has a claim on account of its singular form, like that of a low-browed calvarium, with two sockets formed by old tombs excavated in its front. This strikes every one when it is seen in certain lights. I have advocated the claims of this site in my little book, "Egypt and Syria,"<sup>1</sup> for reasons which will be found in that work; but I shall here quote with some slight changes from a recent admirable summary of the facts in a paper by my friend Dr. Selah Merrill, and shall add some notes on the geology of this site of so great religious and historical interest.

"The theory that the present Holy Sepulchre marks the place of the crucifixion and burial of our Lord has never fully

<sup>1</sup> London, 1885.

satisfied the minds of those who have given the subject their careful attention. This site, supposing it to be the true one, must have been without the walls of Jerusalem, in order to meet the requirements of the New Testament; and hence the city, at a time of great prosperity, must have been confined within such narrow limits as to have been almost insignificant in size. This is a kind of common sense argument which has great force. Furthermore, by drawing, as some scholars have done, the line of the second wall, which ran from the gate Gennath to the Castle of Antonia, and encircled the northern quarter of the town in such a way as to leave the Holy Sepulchre outside the city, Calvary is placed thereby in an exterior angle of the wall, and less than a stone's throw distant from it. It need hardly be said that the spot would, in that case, have been obscure and inconspicuous. On the other hand, one gets the impression from the New Testament that the place of crucifixion was public and conspicuous, near a frequented road, and likewise that the place of burial was at some distance from the walls. It is difficult for a mind to rid itself of either of these impressions in reading the Gospels.

“For some years past there has been a growing conviction that the hill in which Jeremiah's grotto is shown, situated a little to the north-east of the Damascus gate, satisfied the conditions as to the site of Calvary better than any other spot in or around Jerusalem. From the Mount of Olives and Scopus, from the road leading north past the Russian buildings west of the city, from many points north of the town, and from many of the housetops within Jerusalem itself, this hill attracts the eye by its prominence, and in favourable lights suggests that resemblance to a skull from which it probably obtained its name.

“The south face is vertical, and has in it the so-called ‘Grotto of Jeremiah.’ Farther along in this southern face, which does not run in a straight line, great quantities of stone have been

quarried within the past few years. Towards the east the hill does not fall in a single slope, but as it were in two terraces. The hill may be said to be prolonged in this direction, the eastern knoll or second terrace being a little lower than the other. The entire summit of the hill is covered with Moslem graves. This fact has no doubt prevented the hill from being bought up and built on hitherto, and this alone still prevents the ground from passing into the hands of foreigners. This graveyard is an old one; and who can say that the hand of Providence is not specially visible in the preservation of this spot, in this strange manner, from the disgusting and degrading monkish traditions which would otherwise have sprung up about it? The level section of country north of the hill is pretty thickly covered with fine olive trees. To the east there is also flat land, or rather a broad valley, and beyond that a slight rise, covered with olive trees, and one great pine tree, a landmark in that quarter familiar to every traveller. Like all the country about Jerusalem, this hill has a barren aspect, except during the spring, when it is covered with grass and flowers.

“The view from this hill is fine and extensive, embracing all the northern and western portions of the city, the Mosque of Omar, the two great synagogues, and the castle, or so-called Tower of David. The high land towards Bethlehem and in the south-west is visible far beyond the city. The city and its suburbs lie spread out before us, and the hill itself is in full view from the Temple and all the upper part of Zion. In the north we have Shafat, and over the ridge of Scopus the top of Tell el Ful, or Gibeah, appears. Scopus and the Olivet range bound the view in the east, and in the south-east rises the grand wall of the mountains of Moab. Although there is such a wide view, the hill does not seem high, nor is it more than forty feet above the level of the country about it. It is scarcely too much to say, that if a person wholly ignorant of

any question in connection with the site of Calvary were asked to select a spot without the walls of the city for the public execution of criminals, the only two conditions being that the place should be a conspicuous one and convenient to the Castle of Antonia, he would not hesitate a moment in choosing this hill for that purpose."

Dr. Merrill adds: "One of the most certain identifications of modern times, is that of the Castle of Antonia as being located in the north-west corner of the present Haram area. Here soldiers were quartered to guard the Temple, and for other purposes; and here, also, criminals were confined, as, for example, the Apostle Paul, until final disposition could be made of them. As this was the most important castle of the city, and dominated the Temple, we can reasonably suppose that it would not be approached by narrow, winding, and intricate streets, but, on the contrary, that the road leading from it out of the town must have been direct, and one that was not ordinarily blocked by people or traffic. In a word, the Castle of Antonia must have been approached by a direct road, which, in a special sense, would be regarded as a military road. Furthermore, as criminals were confined in this castle, we may suppose that the place of the public execution of criminals would be on the line of this road, near it, or at the most convenient distance from it, and in a conspicuous place, so that the executions could be witnessed by people standing at a distance, or upon the city walls. Again, it is not likely that the place of execution was changeable, one month here and the next month there, but we may suppose it to have been always the same. The permanency of the locality is a matter that can be taken for granted. We may suppose, further, that the Romans, when they came into power, would naturally select as the place of the execution of criminals that one which had been used as such by the Jews before them.

"Under the Convent of the Sisters of Zion, which is near

the Castle of Antonia, but on the opposite side of 'Via Dolorosa,' there is, six or eight feet below the level of the street, some remarkably well-preserved ancient pavement, which hundreds of travellers have visited and admired. From certain indications we are led to believe that this pavement was connected with an ancient street that ran in nearly a direct line from Antonia northwards to the city wall. The most important military route of Palestine at the time of Christ was that which connected Cæsarea-on-the-Sea with Jerusalem, which it approached from the north. At the point where the line of the street first mentioned, supposing such a street to have existed, touched the city wall, we find an old gate, closed at present, but bearing the significant name of 'Herod's Gate.' If the line of this street be extended beyond this so-called 'Herod's Gate' to the north-west, we shall find along it definite traces of an old Roman road. This we find to be identical with the great military road which connected Jerusalem with Cæsarea. It is perfectly natural to suppose that the place of the public execution of criminals would be somewhere on the line of this road. Between the castle and the fatal spot soldiers who guarded the criminals could move to and fro unobstructed. A little after this road leaves the wall at the point marked as 'Herod's Gate,' we find on the left hand a hill remarkable in form, noticeable from its position, and with which are connected some traditions respecting the execution and burial of criminals.

"Again, we find the name of St. Stephen connected with the western slope of this hill; here is the traditional place of his martyrdom; here a church was erected to his memory, which existed for nearly eight hundred years, and of which remains have been unearthed during five years past. It is not unnatural to suppose that St. Stephen was executed at the place of the public execution of criminals. The theory that our Lord was executed at the same place has the most valid reasons in its support. There is current among the Jews in

Jerusalem a tradition that this hill was the place of stoning, the 'Beth Has-Sekilah' mentioned in the Mishna. Likewise another tradition, that this hill was the place, or was connected with the place, of burial of those who had been publicly executed. The origin of these traditions I do not know, nor do I pretend to estimate the value of them. That they exist at all is a curious and, I should say, a significant fact, whether they are worth little or much.

"If Joseph of Arimathea, who was a wealthy man, had a private garden near the city, we may suppose with reason that it was in this direction, that is, to the north of the city, where were many gardens and country houses. The statement in John xix. 41—'in the place where He was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new tomb, wherein was never yet man laid'—seems to be very explicit. If, on the one hand, we press these words literally, and on the other insist that our Lord was crucified in the place of the public execution of criminals, we make this place and the garden of Joseph of Arimathea to have been identical. The question arises, whether a man of position and wealth would have a private garden in such a place? But there is no real objection to supposing that the hill-top, which was easily accessible from the Roman military road, might have been devoted to the purposes of execution, and at the same time the ground about it, to the very foot of its slopes, to have been occupied by private gardens. Such gardens might have surrounded the hill on the south-western, western, and north-western sides, and joined the Roman road on the north.

"The Roman road, which we have described as leading from Antonia through or near 'Herod's Gate,' skirted this hill at the foot of its eastern and north-eastern slopes. Some miles farther north this road divided, one branch going north to Nablous or Shechem, and the other, past Beth Horon, to Anti-patris and Cæsarea-on-the-Sea. Along this road Paul,

strongly guarded, was taken a prisoner to Cæsarea. With what emotions would the prisoner, as he left the city and passed this Golgotha hill, look up to the spot where the Master had died upon the cross, and where Stephen had been stoned?"

Dr. Merrill then refers to a tomb which I had the pleasure of visiting in his company. It is on the western face of the hill, in a low cliff; and its entrance is now partly buried with earth. Within, it shows a single chamber and a slab, which, though now displaced, must have formed a shelf or bench at one side. The entrance is of different character from that mentioned in the Gospels, but in other respects it is precisely the style of tomb into which we may suppose the apostles stooped down and looked on the morning of the Resurrection. The existence of this tomb, whatever its age and origin, realizes the fact of such tombs being in this hill, close to the place of crucifixion; and there may have been many such, now buried, or removed by the operations of the quarrymen. It is also evident from the Gospel history, that the tomb of Joseph was of one chamber, with an open shelf to support the body of the dead, so that a person looking in could see the place where the body had lain, a fact which appears in the narratives of all the four Gospels, though in different connections. These points are of interest, as showing how precise the New Testament indications are, and how completely they have sometimes been overlooked by those who have compared large chambered tombs, or those with long oven-like receptacles for the dead (or *kokim*), with the tomb of Jesus.

The hill referred to in the above remarks, and which we may call the "Skull Hill" (Fig. 38), was originally a part of the Moriah ridge, extending northward from it, as a short and narrow spur, and, had the city reached so far in the earliest times, might have formed an outwork for its defence. It contained, however, a continuation of the fine white limestone which underlies the Moriah ridge, and was the most convenient



and accessible place for quarrying it. Hence a quarry was opened in it, we do not know at how early a date, but certainly, for a reason which will appear immediately, as early as the building of Solomon's Temple. The quarrying operations were finally extended quite through the hill, so as to separate the skull hill entirely from the remainder. This excavation was carried from the city wall on the one side to the interior of the so-called grotto of Jeremiah on the other, leaving only a round knoll to represent the former extremity of the ridge, and even this undermined extensively in the grotto of Jeremiah. Thereason for leaving this remainder of the hill may have been the result due to tombs

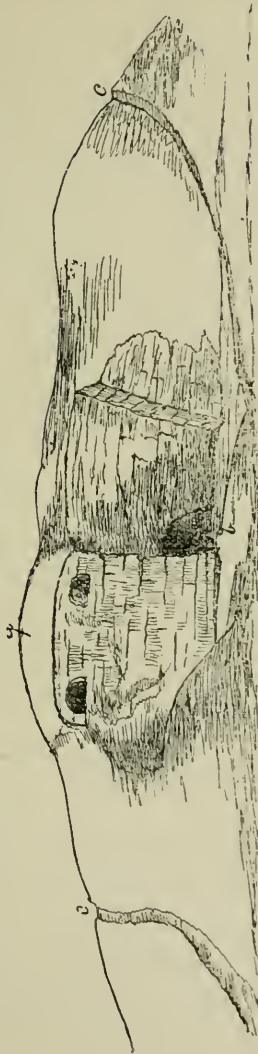


FIG. 38.—THE SKULL HILL, FROM THE MODEL OF GENERAL GORDON.

(*a*) Supposed place of the Crucifixion, on the brow of the Skull; (*b*) Jeremiah's grotto; (*c*, *e*) Roads leading around the hill from the Damascus gate. That on the right is near to the old Roman road leading from Herod's gate. For other views, showing the present state of the site, see "Egypt and Syria" (Religious Tract Society). The above is sketched from a model prepared for me, after that of General Gordon, by Mr. C. Paulus, of Jerusalem.

excavated in it, or buildings upon it; or merely because in this direction the best stone was giving out or coming too near the surface. In any case, the quarrying in this hill was abandoned, and the rock was followed underground in the great quarries under the Bezetha quarter of the town. In these quarries the bed of white limestone dips to the eastward at an angle of  $10^{\circ}$ ; and the rock has been cut and excavated in a manner similar to that employed in the great Egyptian quarries. The total amount of limestone extracted from this quarry must have been very great—more than sufficient, one would imagine, to build all the substructures of the Temple and the Temple itself. These facts show that the northern city wall, long before the time of Christ, must have occupied its present site. If so, since the Crucifixion was “without the gate,” it cannot have been where the Church of the Holy Sepulchre now stands; still less is it possible that the tomb of Joseph of Arimathea could have been in such a position.

Merrill gives a list of travellers who have held that this hill is the true Calvary. Perhaps the greatest credit is due in the first place to the German scholar, Otto Thenius, who in 1849 pointed out its claims as the true Golgotha. In 1871 Dr. Fisher Howe published a detailed description and plan, illustrating this view; and Lieutenant Conder, in “Tent Work,” 1878, advocates the same theory. The late General Gordon took much interest in the question, and had a contoured plan and model prepared to illustrate the topography, to which he referred in the Statement of the Palestine Exploration Fund for April, 1885, and in his little work, “Reflections in Jerusalem.” I have now before me a copy of General Gordon’s model, executed in the Melekeh stone, similar to that of the hill itself, and which very well shows its characteristic features and position relatively to the city walls, and also the structure of the hill as composed of white limestone dipping gently to the eastward in the same manner with that of the great quarries.

It also shows the ground as it would appear if denuded of Moslem buildings and enclosures, trees, etc. (Fig. 38). When I was in Jerusalem in 1884, I found Dr. Merrill, Dr. Chaplin, and other local authorities firmly convinced that the Skull Hill is the true Calvary of the Gospels. It is to be hoped that it may remain in its present desolate condition till the "times of the Gentiles" shall be fulfilled, and He who was crucified thereon shall return in His power to reign over a renovated world.

To return for a moment to the earlier history of Jerusalem, some facts stated in the Bible have recently been brought into prominence by the discovery of the epistolary tablets of Tel-el-Amarna, already referred to. It is evident that the site of Jerusalem must, from the earliest times, have commended itself as one eminently central and defensible. It is not improbable, therefore, that the Salem referred to in the time of Abraham occupied this site, and if so, we learn from the fourteenth chapter of Genesis that its ruler, Melchisedek, the just king,<sup>1</sup> was recognised by Abraham as a religious and, perhaps, political superior. In the Bible we hear nothing more of it until we find its king, then bearing a somewhat similar, though perhaps more lofty title, Adonizedek (just lord), placing himself at the head of a confederacy of petty kings, to make war against Joshua. The confederacy was defeated, and its chiefs slain; but it is significant that while Joshua was able immediately after the defeat to reduce the cities of the other kings, no mention is made of Jerusalem. He did not attack it; and in point of fact its citadel remained in the hands of a Jebusite chief, till the times of David. All this argues a strong and dominant position, which David recognised by making it his capital.

One of the Tel-el-Amarna tablets lifts for a moment the veil

<sup>1</sup> Or King of Justice.

which covers the history of the city from the time of Abraham to that of Joshua, and gives us a glimpse of its position in the time of Amen-hotep III. Sayce informs us that we can gather from the letter in question, that though subject or tributary to the Egyptian king, Jerusalem was then an important political and religious centre. Its king, as became a vassal of Egypt, bore a more humble title than those of his predecessors or successors in the Bible. His name is read as equivalent to Ebed-tob (the good servant); but the god worshipped in the city was known as the "mighty king," and was had in reverence by the neighbouring peoples, as in the time of Abraham.

But for these three glimpses, the Jerusalem before the exodus would have been to us a prehistoric town; but they are very instructive. In the time of Abraham it is independent and influential, and the site of worship recognised even by the Father of the Faithful. At a later date it has fallen under the dominant power of Egypt, and its ruler has assumed a more humble title, befitting this position. Still later the weakness which permitted the departure of Israel from Egypt, and still more the anarchy, which, according to the Harris papyrus, followed that event, had ruined the Egyptian influence in Palestine; and Jerusalem, like the other Canaanite towns, had become independent, and had resumed, to some extent, its previous importance, but would no longer, as before, depend on support from Egypt. We are thus enabled in a more satisfactory way than heretofore to connect the Bible history with that of Egypt; and possibly the clay tablets on which the Jebusites may have recorded their history in the intervening times may yet be recovered by some fortunate excavator in their old citadel.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Appendix 2.





EGYPTIAN WATER GIRLS OF THEBES.  
(From a photograph by Count Lynar.)

## CHAPTER IX.

### *RESOURCES AND PROSPECTS OF BIBLE LANDS.*

THE real magnitude of countries may depend, not so much on their number of square miles as on the greatness of the event that have occurred in them, and their influence on the affairs of the world. The cultivable land of Egypt is a strip along the Nile, not over 10,000 square miles in area—scarcely twice as large as the valley of the Thames, and not much larger than Yorkshire. Palestine, only about 120 miles in length, and shut in between deserts and the sea, and largely composed of rocky hills, has scarcely a larger amount of cultivable land, and this not equal in quality to the rich alluvium of Egypt. Yet these two countries are in many respects the most important in the ancient world. The science of Egypt and the religion of Palestine still, to a great extent, rule the destinies of men, low though these countries have themselves fallen. It is true that these little countries are exceptional in their productiveness and capacity for supporting a large population. This is well known with regard to Egypt, where the fertility of the land is proverbial, and where we can see fields that have been cultivated for 4,000 years still rejoicing in all the exuberance of virgin fertility. Of Palestine it is not so generally believed; for Palestine, to the ordinary traveller, appears, especially in the drought of summer, a bare and barren country. Yet the climate and rainfall of Palestine, with the chemical quality of its rocks and soils, rich in lime, alkalies, and phosphates, render it productive to a degree which can-

not be measured by our more northern lands.<sup>1</sup> Its plains, though limited in extent and often stony, have very fertile soil. The olive, the vine, and the fig-tree will grow and yield their valuable fruit in abundance on rocky hills, which at first sight appear barren and worthless. Whenever culture has been undertaken with skill and vigour, it has been well rewarded. A little study of the work done, for example, by the German colonists in the stony land near Jerusalem, suffices to show the great capabilities of the soil. In the olden times the Tirosh,<sup>2</sup> as the Hebrews called the fruit of their hill orchards and vineyards, was one of the main sources of wealth; and the vineyards, with the vines trailing over the warm rocks and clothing the ground with their leaves and fruit, realize the prophetic description of hills running with the grape juice, and of a land flowing with milk and honey, if by the latter we understand the "dibs" or syrup of the grape. In Palestine a few olive-trees on a rocky hill that in colder climates would be worthless, may maintain a family. There is also an abundance of nutritious pasturage, more especially for sheep and goats, all the year round, on the limestone hills. In the present political condition of the country, it is true, these advantages are neutralized by bad government, or by robbery under the name of government. The cultivator is plundered to an unlimited extent under the guise of taxation; and for this he

<sup>1</sup> According to Dr. Post, the mean annual rainfall at Beyrout is 35.66 inches. It diminishes to the southward, being 22.96 inches in Judea. The proportion of rain in the winter months is variable, and upon this largely depends the harvest. The "early rain" of September is very important, softening the ground and enabling the farmer to plough and sow. The "latter rain" of March to May keeps up the moisture in preparation for the drought of the summer months. The temperature ranges from 35° to 100°, the annual range being only about 65°, and the changes usually slow and gradual. This gives for practical purposes a very favourable climate, which is capable of improvement by planting.

<sup>2</sup> Often incorrectly translated "wine."



has no equivalent, either in protection to his life or property from other robbers, or in any material improvements in his country. Every improvement he may himself make, either in planting or otherwise, is only an excuse for more severe taxation. Hence there is little inducement to progress of any kind, except in the case of foreign settlers protected by their own consuls. Wherever protection of this kind can be obtained, the country begins to show signs of prosperity. Elsewhere the incubus of Turkish misgovernment kills all advancement. Palestine has been characterised by a recent traveller as a country above all things remarkable for *withoutness*. It is, except in the case of a few leading towns, without a middle class, without roads, without shops, without posts, without schools, without safety or justice, without window glass, without domestic comfort, a ruined and decaying country, and it must remain so, so long as it is under the misrule of the Ottoman Government. The little that is being done for it by missionaries and by the agents of a foreign civilization, is in spite of its worthless rulers.<sup>1</sup>

Palestine must originally have been a well-wooded country, and its forests are mentioned in the historical books of the Bible ; but they have for the most part perished, and this has tended to make the climate more arid. The wild hillsides are, however, often covered with an exuberant growth of bushes and young trees, which, if permitted to grow, or if replaced by cultivated trees, would soon clothe the land with verdure, and tend to produce a more abundant summer rainfall. With just laws, well administered, there is nothing to prevent Palestine from becoming as wealthy and populous as we learn from the Bible it was in the days of the Jewish kings, and as it seems to have been at a later time under the Roman government.

<sup>1</sup>Hodgkin, *Contemporary Review*, June, 1890.

In a geographical point of view, Egypt and Syria are the key of the East ; and one sees evidences on every hand of the anxiety of the leading European nations to gain a dominant influence in their affairs. England for the moment has the upper hand in Egypt ; but her influence there is hated with the utmost bitterness by other nations, and especially by France. In Syria, the agents of France, Germany, and Russia are watching each other, and each eagerly embracing every opportunity to gain a little in political or religious influence, or in territory and buildings. So important are these interests becoming, that they may at any time afford a pretext for interference or occupation ; and it is not impossible that the inevitable battle between the civilization of Europe and the lowering cloud of Russian ascendancy may yet have to be fought on the old battle-fields of Syria.

The time was when the political importance of Palestine was ostensibly based on the religious sentiment connected with certain holy places,—an influence no doubt still operative,—and when that of Egypt depended solely on financial questions in connection with its productive soil. Now the great international thoroughfare of the Suez Canal and the prospect of railway communication through Syria to India and China, have given an immense additional value to these countries in the eyes of the European nations. To Britain more especially the freedom of the Canal has become indispensable ; and the time is near when her possession of India will depend on land communication by railway from Egypt or Syria.

England makes little show of active work in Palestine ; but her possession of Cyprus and Egypt makes her influence great, and at this moment England and the United States have probably a greater moral power over the peoples of the East than any other nations ; and however separate these two great nations may be politically, the identity of their language, religion, literature, and free institutions, and their wide spread

commercial enterprise, make them one in the view of the Eastern people, who, under the now prevalent impression that the time of the Turk is approaching its end, watch eagerly every movement of their Western friends, whom they are just beginning to understand. In one of our excursions in Egypt, an intelligent native seemed to recognise some shade of difference in our party, as compared with other English-speaking people. At length he asked, "You English?" My wife, to whom the question was addressed, answered in the negative. "You Melican?" was the next inquiry; and the answer was the same. He was now puzzled. "What you?" he asked; and the reply was "Canadian." Here was food for thought to him, but his only remark was—"Ole man," meaning myself, "like Melican." I have no doubt that the Canadian and Australian contingents in the Egyptian campaign of 1885-6 were recognised by the people as new and additional members of the multitudinous English-speaking nationalities, which they begin to think encompass them on all sides, and occupy all the ends of the earth.

In a certain sense Egypt and Palestine are complementary countries—the one the land of palms and grain and cattle, the other the land of vines and fruit-trees and flocks. The traveller in Egypt sees vast fields of grain, sugar-cane, cotton, forage crops and beans, with groves of date-palms, and in the upper country, above Abydos, the beautiful doum palm, while the principal domestic animal is the great ungainly buffalo. The visitor is also struck with the absence of wild vegetation, every inch of fertile ground seeming to be under cultivation, and every weed collected and used for some useful purpose by the people. In Palestine, on the other hand, the country is gay with flowers, especially in early spring, and the conspicuous objects of culture are the vine and the olive. Even in the plains, cultivated fields are few, and much is merely wild pasture. The palm-tree is rare, though it still grows

in the plain of Jericho and the sheltered valleys throughout the country, yielding dates smaller than those of Egypt, but of very pleasant flavour. In their primitive state the two countries were perhaps more similar than at present. Both were wooded, and while the trees and plants of Africa must have spread along the Jordan valley and the maritime plain, many of the Asiatic plants no doubt found congenial habitats here and there in the north of Egypt. But all this has been changed under the *régime* of man; and the dissimilarity has become so great, that the two countries offer markets for the produce of each other,—a reciprocity which might be greatly extended, were Palestine better governed.

All over Northern Africa and Western Asia the Arabic has replaced the Greek as well as the older Semitic tongues, ever since the irruption of the followers of Mahomet from the abyss of the desert; and the Koran, the sacred book of the Arab, has replaced all other literature. The close affinity of the Arabic with the other Semitic languages, and the not very remote distance between it and the Coptic, have facilitated the change. But now that the Mohammedan influence is in a state of decay, and that the Arab power has given place to that of the Turk, whose language is Turanian rather than Semitic, and shows no power to replace the Arabic, the question arises whether the latter can be made the instrument of a higher culture, or whether it can be replaced by any European tongue. In the American College at Beyrout the Arabic takes a high place, though English is also taught. Some young men, graduates of the College, were in 1884 conducting an Arabic scientific journal, in which a popular lecture which I delivered in Beyrout, on the Geology of the Lebanon, was reported. The Arabic edition of the Scriptures issued from the Beyrout press, and the many useful books, not merely religious but scientific and literary, issued thence, are doing much to bring the Arabic into the circle of modern civilized

languages. On the other hand, there is a strong disposition on the part of the native population, and especially the Christians, to adopt the languages and culture of Europe. But what language shall they learn? In Egypt, several circumstances have given a temporary preference to the French; and the Jesuit missionaries, supported by the French Government, which, to use the caustic expression attributed to the late Paul Bert, keeps its religion, not for home consumption, but for exportation, are making strenuous efforts to secure predominance in Syria. On the other hand, the English occupation of Egypt and the educational work of the American and English missionaries, have given a wide diffusion to the English language. The lecture at Beyrout, already referred to, was in English, and the audience, I should think of three hundred persons, many of them natives, were quite capable of understanding it. At a Sunday evening meeting in the College, attended by perhaps 150 students, the hymns and addresses were indifferently in Arabic and English. Cypriote students come over to Beyrout expressly to learn English. English is taught in forty or more schools of the missionaries up and down the Nile, and in large Coptic schools in Cairo, and there are about 2,000 pupils in missionary schools in Syria. We found native boys, as far up as Luxor, able to read English and glad to get English books; and it was remarkable to see how many of the natives had picked up a smattering of the language.

Since the publication of the first edition of this work the ambitious designs of Russia and France in the East have developed themselves more actively, and these two powers seem preparing to unite for the division of the spoil of the Ottoman Empire. This seems to be the prelude to a great European conflict, and may delay for a time the renovation of Palestine. Possibly, however, events may be so shaped by the providence of God as to produce the neutralization of Syria,

or the placing of it under some joint civilized control, which may open it again as a home for the Jew, and may enable it to resume its place in the world of civilization.

The two Theban water-girls, whose portraits appear at the beginning of this chapter, from a photograph taken by one of our fellow-travellers, are representatives of Egyptian fellaheen children, descendants of people who were civilized when our ancestors were savages, and who are full of life, grace, energy, and womanly tact, ready to be developed under kindly Christian influence into something better than the dreary slavery of the Moslem women. These girls accompanied us over the flinty tracks of the Valley of the Kings, running all day with bare feet, and carrying their jars of Nile water to supply the thirsty traveller, for a pittance which one was ashamed to offer as the payment for so much toil, care, and intelligence. One of them, when her services were declined by my wife, expressed her disappointment in broken English, fairly well pronounced: "What for you no want Fatima? Good girl Fatima. You much rich lady." I have placed them at the beginning of the chapter, to plead for the women and children of Egypt and Syria with those Western Christians whom God has so greatly enriched, and to commend to their aid and sympathy the self-denying men and women who are labouring for the elevation of these poor people.

There can be no doubt that if France should gain the political predominance which it seeks in the Eastern Mediterranean, it will adopt the same policy which in the Polynesian Islands expels missionaries and teachers who will not teach exclusively in French; and that, while not over friendly to the Church at home, the Government will lend its countenance to Roman Catholic missions abroad, provided they teach in French and promote French ascendancy. The English Government employs no such means, and the United States extends to American missionaries only such protection as it is bound

to afford to any of its citizens abroad. But the Protestant missionaries have the great advantage of offering an education in harmony with the wants of the time, and of having the Bible to give to the people in their own languages. A religion without a sacred book is apt to be regarded with contempt, both by Mohammedans and Eastern Christians, and this has been the condition of the Roman Catholic missionaries until lately, when an edition of the Arabic Bible, with some explanatory notes, has been prepared by them in self-defence.

Perhaps the greatest disadvantage of the English arises from the character of its pronunciation and the imperfection of its alphabet. The Oriental languages are largely guttural, while English is very much a language of the lips and palate. Any one who has tried the experiment of teaching an Arab to say "Yes," and has found, after many attempts, such sounds as "aas," "aws," "yaas," the nearest approximation to it, can appreciate this difficulty. The imperfect character of the English alphabet is another drawback, and interposes great difficulties to the Eastern student. It would, I think, be well if the teachers of English in the East would adopt a phonetic alphabet, as a means at least of overcoming preliminary difficulties; and it would also be desirable to absorb as many native words as possible for native things, as has been done to some extent in India.

We met in Jerusalem an agent of the Bible Society, Mr. Lethaby, who has travelled through a large part of Syria, and concurs in the statement made by missionaries that there is a great desire for education among the native peoples, especially the native Christians. He has circulated, at the time of the great feasts at Jerusalem, as many as 2,500 copies of the Gospels, in nineteen languages, to pilgrims of many nationalities and sects. Thirty or more Bible women are now engaged in similar work in Syria, and medical missionaries, male and female, and medical doctors trained at Beyrout, are now being

established in many places. All this, and much more, is preparatory work for better things in these old lands; and in the meantime it promotes the spread of the English language and of Protestantism.<sup>1</sup>

On the whole, the most hopeful element in Syria and Egypt is that of the native Christians. There are supposed to be sixteen millions of these in the Turkish Empire, belonging mainly to the Coptic, Greek, Armenian, and Maronite Churches; and the Druses of the Lebanon, though not Christians, are favourable to Christian culture and influence. The Jews also are an important element, and I believe have by late events not only been induced to reside in greater numbers in Palestine, but to be more amenable to Christian influences. However debased politically, and however corrupt in regard to religious doctrine, the native Christian is altogether a superior style of man in comparison to the Moslem. He represents the independence and obstinacy which have clung to an idea through ages of persecution, and he has some respect for woman, and is not a fatalist; and now, when he is beginning to hope that his long slavery is approaching to its end, he looks to the more free and enlightened Christian nations as his natural friends and allies. We, on our part, should not forget our old obligations to the East, and should be ready to repay them with interest.

That the future of these old lands may be more important than their present, it requires little penetration to see; and the old Book, whose history of these lands in the past we have been considering, has something to say of their future as well. Whatever belief men may repose in prophecy, they cannot doubt that the word of God has committed itself to certain foreshadowings of the future; and though some of these are

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Lethaby and his devoted wife have now taken up their abode at Kerak, the ancient Kir of Moab, where they are carrying on a varied and excellent work.



shrouded in a symbolism to which varied interpretations have been given, others are sufficiently plain. I shall refer here only to two, which are however of great significance, especially when taken in connection with each other.

In that prophecy of Jesus (Luke xxi.) in which He warns His disciples of the approaching downfall of Jerusalem and the Jewish institutions, He remarks: "Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles till the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled." Those times of Gentile dominion to which our Lord referred had existed since the rise of the Babylonian empire, were still going on, but were destined to end at a fixed time, when they should be fulfilled. Daniel had indicated long before, this end of the times of the Gentiles at the close of the term allotted to his fourth empire, and the powers that should immediately succeed it, or arise out of its dissolution.<sup>1</sup> More than eighteen hundred years have passed away since these words were spoken. Jerusalem is still trodden down of the Gentiles; but is their dominion to last for ever? Are there not already manifest signs of the destruction of the powers, political and ecclesiastical, which now represent the Gentile domination? The time may be very near, or it may be further delayed; but when it comes, if the prophecy is true, Jerusalem, and that which Jerusalem represents, will rise on the ruins of those Gentile powers by which the old city of God is now trodden down.

Another topographical intimation, closely connected with that of our Saviour, is contained in the Apocalypse of St. John. It appears as a note in the prediction of the seven angels who were commissioned to pour out the vials of God's wrath on the followers of those powers succeeding that which in John's time reigned on the Palatine, and whom he designates as "the dragon, the beast, and the false prophet." These evil rulers are said, under the vision of the sixth vial,<sup>2</sup> to send out three

<sup>1</sup> Daniel ii. 40.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. xvi. 12-16.

emissaries whose function it is to gather the kings of the whole world (*oikoumene*, the inhabited world, which with John means the Roman empire and its dependencies) for apparently a great final struggle for existence. The note on this is—"they gathered them together into a place which is called in Hebrew Har-Magedon," that is, the mountain of Megiddo; and the purpose is, that they might fight the great battle of God Almighty. It is to be observed here that the name of God (equivalent to El-shaddai of the Old Testament) is that by which He is said to have been known to the patriarchs before the time of Moses,<sup>1</sup> so that this war or battle has nothing to do with Christianity as such, though in some sense no doubt a religious war. But the point which especially concerns us, is the locality of the struggle. That old pass across the neck of Carmel into the Esdraelon plain, which was the chosen route of all invading armies passing north and eastward from Egypt and the plain of Philistia and Judea, and in like manner the way of access of the Euphratean kings proceeding westward to Egypt, is the predestined locality of the great contest which is presumably to end the times of the Gentiles, and to prepare for the rescue of Jerusalem and Palestine. The prophet may mean that the Gentile powers are literally to meet each other in hostile array on this old battle-ground; and there can be no doubt that in any struggle for what is now Turkey in Asia, no locality is more likely to be selected to meet an invader, either from the North or from the South. But the locality may be merely symbolic, and may mean whatever place in the Roman world is relatively to it, like the pass of Megiddo relatively to Palestine. Whichever view we take, our mental vision is directed to the old Palestinian battle-field, if we wish to understand the meaning of the prophet; and, whatever his precise meaning, the prophecy certainly relates to a great contest pre-

<sup>1</sup> Exodus vi. 3.

ceding the fulfilment of the times of the Gentiles, and the rescue and restoration of Jerusalem and the old lands of the Bible. What the features of this struggle may be we can scarcely at present imagine. We know, however, that physically these lands are still young, and capable of greater things than those of the past, and we may content ourselves with repeating the inspired words of an older Jewish prophet :—

“ For the Lord will comfort Zion :  
He will comfort all her waste places,  
And will make her wilderness like Eden,  
And her desert like the garden of the Lord :  
Joy and gladness shall be found therein,  
Thanksgiving and the voice of melody.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Isaiah li. 3.

## APPENDIX.

### 1. *PRE-HISTORIC GREEKS IN EGYPT.*

(Ch. I. p. 6; Ch. IV. p. 154.)

PETRIE'S more recent explorations in Kahun appear to confirm his previous announcement, that in the foreign settlement at that place "letters of the Phœnician, Cypriote, Græco-Asiatic, and Etruscan alphabets" have been found on pottery. The people employed in working in these settlements were probably slaves taken in war, or cast on shore on the Egyptian coast. That any of them should know alphabetical writing at a date so long before the Trojan war and the Exodus as that of the 12th dynasty of Egypt, may surprise those who are accustomed to think of the Greeks of the heroic and pre-heroic ages as barbarians, but is in perfect harmony with the evidence as to the early civilization of Babylonia, Canaan, Southern Arabia, and Egypt. There is no biblical reason why the early Japhetites should have been more illiterate than their cousins of the races of Ham and Shem. It would also seem that the Greek populations were at a very early period, long before the Exodus, known to the Egyptians by a name—"Hanebu"—equivalent to the expression, "Isles or coasts of the Gentiles" in Genesis.

### 2. *JERUSALEM IN THE TEL-EL-AMARNA TABLETS.*

(Chap. VIII. p. 376.)

In an inaugural lecture delivered at the University of Halle by Dr. H. Zimmer, some new statements are made respecting the condition of Jerusalem before the Exodus, as evidenced by some of the tablets of the time of Amenophis III. and IV., found at Tel-el-Amarna, and which refer to the 14th or 15th century before Christ.<sup>1</sup>

It appears from tablets containing letters addressed by the then king of

<sup>1</sup> *Magazine Christian Literature*, Feb., 1892.

Jerusalem (the name of which is read "Urusalim") that he was a vassal of the king of Egypt, and was in fear of certain enemies whom he names *Chabiri*, one of whose allies bears the Semitic name Ili milki, equivalent to the Hebrew Elimelech. Some have supposed these *Chabiri* to have been the people of Hebron, but Zimmer suggests that they may have been Ibrim or Hebrews, supposing, however, that in that case they must have been Israelites. Since, however, at the time in question the Israelites were probably in Egypt, and since there were several other Hebrew nations in the east and south of Palestine who, as the Bible shows, were aggressive and warlike, it is much more likely that some of these are intended. It seems, curiously enough, to escape the attention of most historians that all the Abrahamidae, including Edomites, Moabites, Ammonites, Ishmaelites, and Midianites, were just as much Hebrews as the Israelites. Viewing the matter in this light, we learn that at this early time these Semitic and Hebrew peoples were giving trouble to the native tribes and to the representatives of Egyptian power in Palestine—a fact remarkably coincident with the notices of them in the second chapter of Deuteronomy, of which we thus have a contemporary confirmation. In that chapter Moses intimates to the Israelites that the Edomites and other Hebrew tribes are their brethren, and that they, like the Israelites, had dispossessed the aboriginal inhabitants, and occupied their territory, though before the Exodus the Amorites had begun to repel the Hebrew intruders. All this agrees perfectly with the evidence of the Tel-el-Amarna letters, and among other things shows how unlikely it is that Deuteronomy should have been written at the late date assigned to it by some critics—a date in which these early movements were forgot or had no significance, whereas in the time of Moses they were of the greatest practical importance in defining the relations of Israel with other Hebrew tribes, as contrasted with those to the Canaanites. We also learn from the old Jerusalem letters that the Egyptians were more intimately connected with the Philistine and Amorite tribes of Western Palestine than with the Hebrew peoples farther east. These last must have been regarded as aggressive and dangerous, and as likely to be aided in case of war by their kinsmen the Israelites. It is indeed likely, as stated in the text (p. 251), that the Egyptians may have been in the habit of uniting all the Hebrew peoples, including the Israelites, under the common name *Aperiu*, which explains the fact that such *Aperiu* existed in Egypt after the Exodus.

It is an amusing instance of the effect of some modern ideas as to dates, that the writer above referred to seems to think it strange that so long before the Exodus, Jerusalem should be called by that name and not Jebus. A non-critical reader of the Old Testament does not share his surprise, since Jerusalem is called Salem in Genesis, and when first noticed

in Joshua it is called Jerusalem (chap. x. 1), without any comment ; though a little later in the same book (xviii. 28) we read, "the Jebusite (the same is Jerusalem)," intimating that the people then holding the place were Jebusites, but not necessarily that Jerusalem was a new name.

The Tel-el-Amarna tablets are, however, so full of contradictions of the conclusions of modern critics, that it may be necessary for them to deny the antiquity of these documents, as well as of the Pentateuch.

### 3. *GEOLOGICAL APPENDIX.*

This, which contains details of structure on which many of the statements in the foregoing pages are based, has been omitted from the present edition, in order to diminish the cost of the work. It is hoped that it may be reprinted at some future time in an enlarged form and as a separate work.

### 4. *MISCELLANEOUS NEW FACTS.*

While the present edition was in the press, intelligence has arrived of the discovery of three additional skeletons in a cave at Mentone, all associated with flint implements, and, it is said, bones of extinct animals. They appear to be in type similar to that of the skeletons previously found, but one is of gigantic size, more than seven feet in height, the tibia being stated to measure  $22\frac{3}{4}$  inches.

A remarkable article by Hon. Mr. Plunkett has appeared in the Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archæology,<sup>1</sup> from which it would appear that the ancient Assyrian calendar may have originated as much as 6,000 years B.C., which if true would be a remarkable indication of ante-diluvian civilization. It would seem either that it may claim this great antiquity, or that its date has for some unknown purpose been calculated back to the origin of man.

Recent excavations at Medinet Abou<sup>2</sup> have enabled Sayce to ascertain more definitely the nature of the expedition of Rameses III. into Palestine, which must have occurred within the forty years after the exodus. We have already learned from the Harris papyrus that this event was followed by anarchy and disorder in Egypt, and not only by the rebellion of the Palestinian vassals of Egypt, but by invasions of that country from the north, followed by a raid or incursion of the Egyptian king into Syria to avenge these aggressions. It would now appear from the inscriptions of Rameses himself that he merely passed northward along the Palestine

<sup>1</sup> January, 1892.

<sup>2</sup> *Academy*, March, 1892.

coast to throw himself on the Hittites of the north, and that his expedition did not involve any reconquest of Palestine as a Province of Egypt, but left the Amorites and other tribes independent. This quite accords with the narrative of the conquest by Joshua, and with the report of the spies sent into the country by Moses, who did not find any Egyptian garrisons.

Thus the blanks in the history of Palestine between the time of Jacob and Moses and the absence of the Egyptian power in Palestine in the time of Joshua are being filled up and explained by the monuments of Egypt; and this in an exact accordance with the Bible history, which vindicates its early date and shows that it cannot have been produced at a late period, when no one except a student of Egyptian antiquities could have framed it in so perfect agreement with the records of that country.

A paper by Prestwich in the *Journal of the Anthropological Society* for February, 1892, describes some very rude implements, or supposed implements, of flint, from the Chalk Plateau of Kent, which he regards as older than those of the River Valleys, and much ruder in character. If really implements, they may belong to that early primitive state of man when he still subsisted on vegetable food and had not learned to be a hunter. Of this most primitive state, indicated in the Bible, but not yet distinctly ascertained by archaeology, we have probably few remains. It must have existed as a happy and guileless stage preceding that of the savage, but it must have been in a time of mild climate and favouring conditions, not a "glacial period."

## INDEX.

- Achulian Implements, 65.  
 Adonai, 258.  
 Ainsworth, on Euphratean Region,  
     118.  
 Alabaster, 190.  
 Alali, or Speechless Men, 146.  
 Alluvium of Egypt, 219.  
 Alphabetical Writing, 154.  
 Altar of Burnt Offering, 363.  
 Amarna, Tel el, 258; Ap. 393.  
 Amalekites, 298.  
 Amenemhat, 253.  
 Anakim, 330.  
 Anorthosite Gneiss, 179.  
 Ant-Elias, Cave of, 49.  
 Antediluvians, 124, 133.  
     — Arts of, 131.  
 Antiquity of Man, 86.  
     — in Egypt, 227.  
 Aperiu, or Hebrews, 251, 394.  
 Apocalypse, Symbolism in, 24.  
 Arabia, Discoveries in, 7.  
 Ararat, 136.  
 Araunah, The Threshing-floor of,  
     359.  
 Argyll, Duke of, on Loess, 94.  
 Arts, Antediluvian, 131.  
 Aten, Worship of, 259.  
 Ayun Mousa, 293.  
  
 Baal-Zephon, 273.  
 Basques, 92.  
     — Language of, 93.  
 Bedolach, 115.  
  
 Beaches raised, 216.  
 Belgium, Pre-historic Men in, 73.  
 Bené ha Elohim, 132.  
 Benoth ha Adam, 132.  
 Beyrout, 50, 324.  
     — College of, 326.  
 Bitumen, 349.  
 Bituminous Limestone, 345.  
 Black on Vesuvius, 29.  
 Bliss, Dr., 55.  
 Borings in Delta, 225.  
 Bronze Age, 92.  
 Brussels Museum, 73.  
  
 Cainites, 131.  
 Calcite, 192.  
 Calvary, 366.  
 Canstadt Men, 70.  
 Carmel, Mount, 337.  
 Catacombs, 23, 42.  
 Cave of Ant-Elias, 49.  
     — of Cresswell, 67.  
     — Cro Magnon, 79.  
     — of Goyet, 76, 80.  
     — of Mentone, 72.  
     — of Nahr el Kelb, 52.  
     — of Spy, 79.  
 Caves of Lebanon, 50.  
     — of the Lesse, 73.  
 Chedorlaomer, 347.  
 Cheops, Pyramid of, 231.  
 Chinook Jargon, 148.  
 Chlorite Schist, 182.  
 Cities of the Plain, 348.



- Civilization, Early, in Egypt, 230.  
 Clays, 193.  
 Conclusions as to Origin of Man,  
     124.  
 Concretions of Flint, 195.  
 Consanguinity, Ancient, 125.  
 Cornelius, 41.  
 Cretaceous of Egypt, 212.  
 Cro-Magnon Men, 79.  
 Crystalline Rocks of Egypt, 172.  
 Cush of Genesis, 120.  
  
 Damascus, 329.  
 Daoust, Abbé, 82.  
 Dawkins on Early Man, 86.  
     — on Pleistocene, 89.  
     — on Primitive Geography, 15.  
 Dead Sea, 338.  
 Deir el Bahari, 173.  
 Delta, Borings in, 225.  
     — Deposits of, 219.  
 Deluge, The, 102.  
 Diluvial Deposits, 94.  
 Diorite, 176.  
 Dolerite, 178.  
 Dordogne, Caves of, 67.  
 Drilling of Stone, 184.  
 Dupont on Caves, 73.  
  
 Earth, Diluvial, 94.  
 Earthenware of Egypt, 193.  
 Eden, Site of, 108.  
 Egypt, Antiquity of, 223, 229.  
     — Fertility of, 221.  
     — Geology of, 210.  
     — Stones of, 171.  
 Egyptians, Social Life of, 249.  
     — Type of, 240.  
 El Elyon, Name of God, 236.  
 Engis Man, 79.  
 Eocene of Egypt, 212.  
 Er Rahah, 304.  
 Eruptions of Vesuvius, 27.  
  
 Esdraelon, 337.  
 Etham, 269.  
 Etruscans, their Settlements, 18.  
 Evans, Dr. John, 83.  
 Exodus, Date of, 259.  
     — Topography of, 257.  
  
 Fall of Man, 129.  
 Fayoum, 233.  
 Feiran, Wady, 299.  
 Flint Implements from Nahr el  
     Kelb, 57.  
     — — from Sidon, 49.  
     — — of Egypt, 195.  
 Flood, Narrative of, 135.  
 Flowers in Egypt, 250.  
 Fraas on Judean Hills, 335.  
 Fraipont on Cave of Spy, 70.  
 France, Prehistoric Men in, 67.  
 Future of Bible Lands, 388.  
  
 Garlands on Mummies, 249.  
 Genesis on Creation, 108.  
     — on Early Man, 124.  
     — Two Accounts of Man in,  
         109.  
 Geology of Egypt, 210.  
     — of Palestine, 313.  
 Germains, Museum of St., 64.  
 Giants, Antediluvian, 133.  
 Gibborim, 132.  
 Gihon, River, 120.  
 Glaze for Pottery, 194.  
 Gneiss, 172, 175.  
 Gold of Havilah, 114.  
 Golgotha, 366.  
 Gordon, General, on Jerusalem,  
     374.  
 Goshen, Land of, 261.  
 Goyet, Cave of, 80.  
 Granite, Black, 175.  
     — of Syene, 172.

- Greeks, Early, Ap. 393.  
 Green Glaze, 194.  
 Guanches, 145.  
 Gypsum, 192.
- Haches, 65.  
 Haeckel on Origin of Man, 122, 164.  
 Hale on Language, 149.  
 Hatasu, Queen, 173.  
 Heliopolis, Obelisk of, 172.  
 Helouan, Flint Implements at, 196.  
 Herodotus on Egypt, 209.  
 Heroöpolis, 282.  
 Hommel on Eden, 169.  
 — on Horeb, 303.  
 Horner, Researches in Egypt, 224.  
 Horse at Soloutre, 82.  
 Howorth on Deluge, 96.  
 Huddleston, Mr., 343.  
 Hull, Prof., 320, 346.  
 Ilyksos, 241.
- Iberians, 92.  
 Isthmian Deposits, 218, 225, 278.  
 Isthmus of Suez, 280.
- Jacob's Migration to Egypt, 251.  
 Jade in Ancient and Recent Times, 117.  
 Jaffa, 319.  
 Javeh, Worship of, 135.  
 Jebel Ahmar, 213.  
 — Attaka, 212.  
 Jerusalem, 354.  
 — Earliest History of, Ap. 393.  
 — Topography of, 356.  
 Jesus Christ on Marriage, 126.  
 John, Apocalypse of, 24.  
 Joseph in Egypt, 252.  
 Joseph's Canal, 233.  
 Judah, Cities of, 333.  
 Judd, Prof., on Nile Deposits, 225.
- Karun River, 119.  
 Kephren, Statue of, 180.  
 Kherkhah, River, 220.
- Language, Origin of, 146, 149.  
 Lartet, on Palestine, 338.  
 Lavis, Dr. Johnston, 33.  
 Lebanon, Caves of, 50.  
 — Section of, 324.  
 Loess, 94, 96.  
 Loftus, 118.  
 Lyell on Niagara, 98.
- Magdalenian Implements, 68.  
 Mammoth Age in Belgium, 74.  
 Man, Antiquity of, 86.  
 — Origin and Early History of, 188.  
 Manetho's Chronology, 227.  
 Marah, Water of, 293.  
 Marriage, Primitive, 126.  
 "Matriarchy," 125.  
 Mediterranean, its History, 15.  
 — Volcanic Belt of, 14.  
 Meleké Stone, 355.  
 Menes, First King of Egypt, 224.  
 Mentone, Man of, 72.  
 Merrill, Dr. S., 347.  
 Migdol, 274.  
 Mills, Prof. W., 225.  
 Minæans, 8.  
 Modern Deposits of the Nile, 219.  
 Moeris, Lake of, 233.  
 — Statues of, 187.  
 Mokattam Hill, 212.  
 Moriah Hill, 357.  
 Mortillet, M., 69.  
 Moses, Wells of, 293.  
 Mount of the Law, 303.  
 Mourlon on Pleistocene Man, 103.  
 Mousterian Implements, 67.  
 Museum at St. Germain's, 64.

- Nahr el Kelb, 50.  
 Naville, Discovery of Pithon, 261, 281.  
 — on Exodus, 311.  
 Neanderthal Man, 74.  
 Neanthropic Age, 92.  
 Neocosmic Man, 92.  
 Nephelim, 182.  
 Niagara Gorge, 99.  
 Nicolia Sandstone, 183.  
 Nile Mud, 194.  
 — Valley, 225.  
 — Water, Purity of, 219, 220.  
 Noah, Flood of, 135.  
  
 Olivine Dolerite, 178.  
 Onomatopoeia, 147.  
 Oppression of Hebrews, 253.  
 Ordnance Survey of Sinai, 260.  
 Osiris, Worship of, 237.  
  
 Palæocosmic Men, 74.  
 Palanthropic Age, 75.  
 Palestine, Geology, 315.  
 — in Antediluvian Time, 331.  
 — Resources of, 333.  
 Palmer, Capt., 309.  
 Pentateuch, its Age, 7.  
 Petrie on Drilling, 184.  
 — on Lachish, 48.  
 — on Pyramids, 231.  
 Phenicia, 48.  
 Philistia, Plain of, 320.  
 Pi-hahiroth, 273.  
 Pison River, 113.  
 Pithom, Site of, 261.  
 Plagues of Egypt, 267.  
 Pleistocene Deposits, 89.  
 — Man, 103.  
 — of Egypt, 218.  
 Plinian Eruption, 35.  
 Pompeii, 49.  
  
 Poole, Mr. Stuart, 277.  
 Porphyry, 182.  
 Pottery of Egypt, 193.  
 Prestwich, Prof., on Glacial Age, 98.  
 Primitive Religion, 80.  
 Pthah, Worship of, 237.  
 Pyramids of Gizeh, 188, 231.  
 — Age of, 230.  
  
 Quarries at Jerusalem, 355.  
 Quatrefages, M., 66.  
 Quartzite, 183.  
  
 Ra, Sun-god, 237.  
 Rahah, Plain of, 304.  
 Rameses, City of, 267.  
 — II., Mummy of, 246.  
 Redeemer, Idea of, 156.  
 Red Sea, Former Extent of, 283.  
 — Reason of Name, 286.  
 — Passage of, 293.  
 Religion of Egypt, 236.  
 — Primitive, 89.  
 Rephidim, Battle of, 300.  
 Rhinoceros tichorhinus, 88.  
 River Gravel Men, 91.  
 Rocks of Egypt, 171.  
 Rome, Persecutions of, 23.  
 — Site of, 19.  
  
 Sakhra Rock, 361.  
 Salt Sea, 238, 352.  
 Sandstone, Nubian, 187, 343.  
 — Philistian, 320.  
 Sarcophagus of Seti I., 191.  
 Sea Margins, Raised, 216, 320, 326.  
 Sephar, Mount of, 114.  
 Sepulchre, Holy, 366.  
 Serpentine, 181.  
 Sethites, 311.

- Sharon, Plain of, 320.  
 Shephelah, 321.  
 Shinar, Land of, 122.  
 Shoham Stone, 116.  
 Shur, 275.  
 Sidon, Antiquities at, 48.  
 Sin, Wilderness of, 297.  
 Sinai, Route to, 288.  
 — Position of, 303.  
 Sippara, 114.  
 Skertchley on Gravels, 97.  
 Sodom, Destruction of, 348.  
 Soloutre, Station of, 82.  
 Soloutrian Implements, 67.  
 Soma Tree, 129.  
 Somma Mountain, 34.  
 Sons of God, 131.  
 Speechless Men, 146.  
 Sphinx, Age of, 254.  
 Spy, Grotto of, 79.  
 Stones of Egypt, 171.  
 Strike-Lights, 203.  
 Succoth, District of, 268.  
 Suez, Isthmus of, 280.  
 Sufsafeh, Mountain of, 305.  
 Sun-glows, 37.  
 Survey of Sinai, 288.  
 Syene, Granite of, 172.  
 Talcose Schist, 182.  
 Tanis, or Zoan, 265.  
 Tantah, Boring at, 226.  
 Tel-el-Amarna, 258.  
 Temple, Site of, 359.  
 Tertiary of Egypt, 212.  
 Tribal Relationship, 125.  
 Tristram, Canon, 57.  
 Tumilat, Wady, 261.  
 Turra, Quarries of, 189.  
 Type, Egyptian, 240.  
 Usdum, Jebel, 340.  
 Ushebti in Tombs, 193.  
 Vesuvius, History of, 27.  
 Volcanic Imagery, 24.  
 Volcanoes of Mediterranean, 16,  
 27.  
 Wady Feiran, 298.  
 — Tumilat, 261.  
 Wampum, 118, 144.  
 Warren, Prof., on Eden, 122.  
 Wilson, Capt., and Sinai Survey,  
 287.  
 Woman, Primitive, 125.  
 Yam Suph, 286.  
 Zahleh, 329.  
 Zion, 336.  
 Zoan, or Tanis, 265.





Bib.Lit

D

531843

Author Dawson, (Sir) John William

Title Modern science in Bible lands. [Ed. 2.]

NAME OF BORROWER.

**University of Toronto  
Library**

**DO NOT  
REMOVE  
THE  
CARD  
FROM  
THIS  
POCKET**

Acme Library Card Pocket  
LOWE-MARTIN CO. LIMITED

UTL AT DOWNSVIEW



D RANGE BAY SHLF POS ITEM C  
39 11 13 05 03 007 4